# HISTORY

O F

### NEW-ENGLAND,

Containing an

#### IMPARTIAL ACCOUNT

AMUELOFTHE

Civil and Ecclefiastical Affairs

Of the COUNTRY,

To the YEAR of our LORD, 1700.

To which is added,

The PRESENT STATE of New-England.

With a New and Accurate MAP of the Country.

AND AN

#### APPENDIX

Containing their

Present Charter, their Ecclesiastical Disci-

In Two Volumes.

With many ADDITIONS by the AUTHOR.

By DANIEL NEAL, A.M.

VOL. I.

#### LONDON:

Printed for A. WARD, in Little-Britain; T. LONGMAN and T. SHEWELL, in Paternoster-row; J. OSWALD, in the Poultry; A. MILLAR, in the Strand; and J. BRACKSTONE, in Cornhill. M DCC XLVII.

# HISTORY

## NEW-ENGLAND,

Containing an

### IMPARTIAL ACCOUNT

TERRITO

Civil and Ecclesiashical Affairs

H

Li

Of the Country,

To the YEAR of our LORD, 1700.

No which is added,

The Present State of New-England.

WHEN A New and A corole Mar of the Country.



Prefent Clymner, their Boolefiallical Differ. pline, and their Municipal Laws,

IN TWO VOLUMBEL

W. Skeans Entrick,

18th seen appraises by the AUTHOR.

By DANIER NEAL, A.M.

in Von I

KONDONE SAL

Printed for A. Wicken, in Lett's Briteins T. Londman and I. Shawkers, in Possicified fow; J. Oswiers. in the Follow A. Nattage, in the Sowell ; and Late to a vone, in Contall. Mi see alvest.



#### HIS EXCELLENCY

### SAMUEL SHUTE, Efq.

His Majesty's Captain-General, and Governour in Chief of the Provinces of the Massachuset-Bay, and New-Hampshire, and Vice-Admiral of the same;

And to the Honourable

#### WILLIAM DUMMER, Efq;

Lieutenant-Governour of the Province of the Massachuset-Bay; with the Council, and General Assembly.

May it please Your Excellency and Your Honours,

HE following History of NewEngland cannot have so natural and equitable a Claim to
any Protection as to Yours, to
whom this Province, by the Goodness of
A 2 GOD,

#### DEDICATION.

GOD, under His Majesty, owes the Peace, Religion, and Liberty it enjoys.

Whilst your Thoughts and Endeavours are employed how to make this Country flourishing and happy, I flatter myself you will not be displeased to look back to its Original, and observe by what Steps it has arrived to the Figure it now makes in America. A Reflection of this Nature will give Pleasure to all, who will be at the Trouble to make it; but I imagine must afford a particular Relief to You from the Care and Toils of Government, and at the fame Time, prove the noblest Encouragement to continue Your Vigilance for the Good of Your Country. Son to runner of the resulting

Oppression and Persecution here, the greatest Vices Men can be guilty of, gave Birth to New-England at first; and Liberty among you, the most publick Bleffing, has yielded Nourishment to it ever fince; and will always keep it vigorous and healthy, though Oppression and Persecution, by an unhappy Return among us, should make no

M. Michalon Bay ; with the Council, and



no bei

had the not ow Sar teft tho and pre

to

trea

of t

-5 T Luz don the adv tue

cert

fo ther

no Accession to your Wealth and Numbers. I show in an Universal laboration of the best of Kings in a becoming

LIS

try

ou

its

has

ne-

ive

ble

a

nd

me

to

of

the

ave

Li-

ng,

ce;

hy,

an

ake

no

It is but a little while fince feveral here had their Eyes towards You, and when they had Reason to apprehend, they should not be able to live much longer in their own Country, bless'd GOD they had a Sanctuary in yours! And though the Protestant Succession has deliver'd us from those Fears, yet it will be a Noble Design, and worthy of Men in Your Station, to preserve New-England a pleasant Habitation to its present Possessor, and a Blessed Retreat for Oppressed Protestants in all Parts of the World.

If Europe should encrease in Vice and Luxury, proportionably to what it has done of late; and You, who have now the Character of a Religious People, should advance proportionably in Piety and Virtue; as these Parts of the World will certainly decline in Wealth and Power, so You are the most likely to acquire them.

f vi to crown the Whe and Gentle Ad-

A 3

You

You now glory in an Universal Loyalty to the best of Kings, in a becoming Zeal for the Sacred Truths of the Reformation, and in an Universal Love, Charity, and Forbearence of each other in your differing Sentiments: As long as You can preferve this Boatting, New-England will be indeed the Glory of the Churches, and a Praise in the whole Earth. May You long maintain these Principles, which are not only effential to the Christian Religion, but the very Foundation of the Peace and Happines of Society London Instance at of

areas for Outroffed Protoffents in all Ports, This Happy State of Things feens referv'd to crown the Wife and Gentle Administration of His Excellency the Fre-Gent Governour, who is of a Family eminent for its Zeal for Civil Liberty; who has himself bravely used his Sword, as he does now his Power, in Defence of it; and who is diffinguish'd by a Brother, who has acquir'd more True Clory by his Succeleful Endeavours to preferve Your Liberties, and recover Ours, when they were in the most imminent Danger, than by the

in

flo

S

ni

10

P

tic

th

PI

pe

H

L

in

B

ta

A

#### DEDICATION.

the Adoption he has had from Two Gentlemen on the Account of this Part of his a Crown of Glory, which stall atthered?

away! I am,

May Your Excellency continue to fill the High Station the Divine Providence has advanced You to, Awith therealing Glory and Renown, to the Honour of His Majesty, and the Joy of all Good People in New-England! And may the Country flourish in Riches, Trade, Religion, and all Social Virtues under your prudent Administration!

mest Obedient and

**y-**

ng

II-

y,

ur

an

be

ng

ot

out

nd

(2)

6-

d-

re-

ni+

ho

he

nd

as

IC-

Ļi-

ore

by.

he

May You, Gentlemen Representatives, long enjoy to Valuable a Governour, and Patron of your Liberties! May all Parties and Divisions among you cease, and the only Emulation be, Who shall most promote the Publick Good! May you persevere in your Duty and Loyalty to His Majesty King George, in an unbyass'd Love and Affection to your Country, and in an unwearied Application to publick Business! And may you live long, to taste the Pleasures that will arise from the Acknowledgments of a Thankful People

and

#### DEDIGATION.

and be at last (but for the Good of your Country a great while hence) rewarded with a Crown of Glory, which shall never fade away! I am,

May Your Excellency continue to fill the High Station the Divine Providence has advanced Muz M Zul R Mc Dog Glon and Renown, to the Henout of His M. jefty, and signalisted fuot Good People in New England And may the Country Rourish in Rushoff was Inches when your prident Admi-Social Virtues where your prident Admi-Social Virtues where your prident Admi-

most Obedient and

May Som Homen References, insured the song engaged of some Liberties! May all Parties and the only of Dightons among you cease, and the only Employen be, Who shall most preparate the Publick Good! May you prepare the Publick Good! May you prepare the Publick Good! May you His Majesty for Grongs, in an unbyes? I have and Assession to your Codumy, and in an nonvenied Application to public in an nonvenied Application to public the Business! And may you live long, to see the Picalites that will shife from the Assessor of a Themself Pages and

THE A

the I Time produ Age Poste N nish rich tities Year there successed

Cent. furni

fica:

feen
Purp
fion
fuppi
Chur

other

religi

findi

Chrij and again K. Ja



ur

th

ge

H

ba

Ch

M

ni.

A.

So

ia

t,

A

ít.

q

\*

G.

### PREFACE lands bad fift been an uninsolited Wilderness ; but

BENNING HE Beginnings of Kingdows and Nations. The bave seldom been transmitted down to Postemit) with any Degree of Certainty, by rea-Son of the flow Progress of their Affairs , a Century of Years in those early Ages of the World not furnishing Materials for a few Pages in History; but the English Plantations in America happening at a Time when Europe was fill'd with Inhabitants, have produced such entraordinary Events in the very first Age of their Settlement, as are worthy the Notice of Posterity and has according to the half restriction

No Body wonders at the vast Increase of the Spanish Power in South America, who has beard of the rich Mines of Potosi, and of the prodigious Quantities of Silven brought from thence into Spain every Year; but New-England bad no fuch Advantages. there were no Silver and Gold Mines, nor any Profped of Riches or Pleasure; the Motives which induced the Planters to settle there, were therefore of another Nature , they were driven from Home for their religious Diffent from the Church of England, and finding themselves unable to fix their Principles in any Part of Europe, they resolved to plant them in America replies the Liberty to confur ward

The Wisdom of Divine Providence is very often feen in over-ruling the Designs of Men to contrary Purposes, when they make use of Violence and Oppression for the propagating their own Opinions, or the suppressing those of others; thus the Persecution of the Church at Jerusalem occasioned the spreading the Christian Religion throughout the Regions of Judea and Samaria; and the Severity of some of the Bishops against the Puritans in the Reigns of Q. Elizabeth, K. James and K. Charles the First, instead of crush-

ing them, did but fend them into America, where their Principles are now the Established Religion of a flourishing Commonwealth: Had the Puritans been made easy at Home by a Toleration, or an Abatement of some of the Ceremonies of the Church, New-England bad still been an uninbabited Wilderness ; but Archbifbop Land, by preffing Conformity with fo much Rigour, and depriving so many popular Preachers in all Parts of the Country for not complying with the Canons, fent more Families into New-England in the Twelve Years of his Administration, than would otherwise have gone over in an Age . No, so from was the Tide of the People's Affections thrule its Aime rica at that Time, that it was found nectfary to prohibit their leaving the Kingdom without Licence from the King and Council, tobich beighten d the People's Discontents against the Archbishop, and bastened these Galamities, which in a few Years, like a freelling Flood, overflow'd their Banks, and drown'd both Church rich Mines of Poton, and of Malbaumonmood bins

The Reader now sees the Reason of my inserting in the second Chapter of this History, a short deceunt of the Sufferings of the Paritans bere in England, without which he could form no just Idea of the Rise of the New-English Settlements: I have collected in from the most unenceptionable Authorities, and writ is with Freedom and Impartiality, the Total's help declaring myself sometimes on the Side of Liberty, and an Enemy to Oppression in all its Forms and Colours: Accordingly, I have taken the Liberty to censure such a Conduct in all Parties of Christians, where ever I have found it.

The History itself contains a Variety of Materials for the Reader's Instruction and Entertainment; its the Conjectures of learned Men concerning the first Peopling of America, the Customs and Manners of the Indians, their Wars with the English, and the Attempts that have been made by the Elicos and Mayhows for their Gonversion, which have succeeded for beyond the Efforts of greater Names,

who

who

276

wit

first

ties.

all.

wbi

with

as t

*sulp* 

Offi

to T

publ

othe

I ba

Chai

and

latin

dras

lear

Nan

Plac

collei

most

it m

Rep

Mat

first

of th

Acco

ings

Tear

Good

all th

tor !

the 2

1

A

bere

of a been

ment

ing-

but

nuch

rs in

b thi

d in

donald

FOR

me

pre

fron

ples

those

elling

out in

rich

复体

ent of

and

Rik

ted it

rit #

p de

dit

ours.

e facto

voer 1

erials

the re

first

ers of

ed the

May-

d for

ames,

who

who have employed more Hands, and given them greater Encouragement. He'll be no less entertained with observing a little Commonwealth rising out of its first Principles, struggling with a Thousand Difficulties in its Infant state, and at last triumphing over them I have mention'd with Freedom the Mistakes which the Government of New-England fell into, with relation to the Quakers and Anabaptists, as well as their late Severities towards those who suffered for fulpelled Witchcrafts and Sorceries; it being the Office of an Historian to fet Affairs in a true Light, and to record the Political Virtues and Vices of Men of a publick Character, the one for our Imitation, and the other as a Mark to avoid the Rock on which they folit. I bave inserted in their proper Places, the Deaths and Characters of the most Considerable Persons in Church and State; and annex'd to the Whole, a Chapter relating to the Present State of the Country, in the drawing up of which, I have had the Affiftance of some learned and ingenious Persons in both Englands, whose Names would do Honour to this History, were I allowed to mention them.

Tis not necessary to acquaint the Reader in this Place, with the several Authors from whom I have collected the following Narrative, because he will find most of them cited in the Margin as he goes along; but it may not be improper to inform him of the Credit and Reputation of those on whose Authority the principal

Matters of Fast depend.

Mr. Edward Winslow, who went over with the first Colony in the Year 1620, and was at the Head of their Affairs for several Years, published a short Account of the Country, and a Journal of the Proceedings of the Infant Colony for the first three or four Years; he was a Gentleman of known Probity and Goodness, and his Work has been copied universally by all that have come after him.

Mr. Nathaniel Morton, Secretary to the Court for the Jurisdiction of New-Plymouth, published in the Year 1669, New-England's Memorial, 4to.

He

He was one of the first Planters of New-Plymouth, and confines his Narrative chiefly to that Colony; the Rev. Mr. Higginson of Salem, and Mr. Thacher of Boston have prefix'd a Testimonial to his Work, wherein they declare, That 'tis composed with Modesty of Spirit, and Truth of Matter. Mr. Morton had certainly all the Advantages an Historian could desire, for besides his being at the Head of Affairs himself, he tells us, he had the Benefit of Governour Bradford's M. S. Journal, from the Year 1620, to the Tear 1646.

Mr. Wood and Mr. Josselyn bave publish'd a sort of natural History of New-England, the former in the Year 1639, the latter about the Year 1671. Wood's Design was to give his Reader a Prospect of the Country; but Josselyn, besides a Description of the several Yowns, as they stood in the Year 1671, has given us a turious Description of the Birds, Beasts, Plants, and Insects of the Country, which he dedicates to the Royal Society: But this may be observed of them both, that when they speak of the Natives, they affect rather to make their Readers merry, than tell them the Truth: Mr. Josselyn's Account of the present Inhabitants is perfectly ludicrous, but the other Parts of his Book contain several Rare and Valuable Materials.

Dr. Increase Mather, in the Year 1677, published an Exact Relation of the Pequot War, and of the several Quarrels between the Indians and English to

that Time.

The same Year, the Reverend Mr. Hubbard, Minister of Ipswich in New-England, published a Large Account of the War with Philip King of the Wompanoags, in 4to; to which is annexed a Supplement, concerning the Pequot War, and a Post-script, relating to the War with the Eastern Indians; the Honourable Simon Bradstreet, Daniel Denison, and Joseph Dudley, Esqrs, being deputed by the Governour and Council of the Massachuset-Colony to peruse, and license it, declared, That the Author had faithfully and truly persorm'd his Work, as

tha

the

with

riet

Circ

far

Chi of I 169 gini

gred of A capa any little

thod Par and T

have read made the from hew, gatin were

Justi ings of Affait both them

In which

make

far as the best Information could be obtained, and that he deserved publick Thanks for the same.

But the most famous Historian of New-England is the Reverend and Learned Dr. Cotton Mather, who with great Diligence and Industry bas collected a Varicty of useful Materials, for the Ecclesiastical and Civil History of bis Country, and publish'd them to the World in Folio, under the Title of, Magnalia Christi Americana, or, The Ecclesiastical History of New-England, from the Year 1620, to the Year 1698, with the Attestation of the Reverend Mr. Higginfon, one of the Oldest Ministers of the Country, prefix'd to it. The Doctor is certainly a Gentleman of great Probity and Virtue, and baving been at the Head of Affairs in his Country for a great many Years, is as capable of knowing the Truth of the Fasts be relates as any Man living: Had the Doctor put his Materials a little closer together, and disposed them in another Method, his Work would have been more acceptable to this Part of the World; but as it is, his great Integrity and Diligence deserve the publick Thanks of his Country.

y de ses son bes ma and al

fo b

b'd

se-

to

1i-

the

up-

oft-

ns;

on,

to

hor

29 far

These are the Authors of Greatest Name, whom I have consulted on this Occasion, besides which, I have read over a great Number of smaller Pamphlets, and made the best Use of them I could. The Chapter Of the Conversion of the Indians, was drawn up from the Memoirs and Letters of Mr. Eliot, Mayhew, and other Missionaries, to the Society for propagating the Gospel in New-England, and where these were deficient, I have bad the kind Assistance of the Society it elf.

Where Fasts have been differently related, or the Justice of the Government arraign'd, as in the Sufferings of the Anabaptists and Quakers, and in the late Affair of Witchcraft, I have consulted the Writers on both Sides, and by comparing them together, have fet them in the best Light I could, leaving the Reader to make what Reflections on them be pleases.

In the Map of the Country prefix'd to this Work, which is perfectly new, and done from the latest Surweys, I have divided the several Provinces, or Governments from each other, by double prick'd Lines, and the several Counties in each Province, by single prick'd Lines, and because the Scale would not admit the taking in of Canada River and Quebec, nor a distinct View of the Town and Harbour of Boston; I have thererefore added a Plan of each; the one to show the Situation of New France, with Regard to New-England; the other to show the several stands, Rocks, and Sands in the Massachuset Bay, with the Soundings, and the Ship-Channel to the Town of Boston.

tinens Arinci them.

Laws

ap. I

Reign. Brown

sbemfe

dation wards

ap. II

New 1

lbips 1)

Indian

Massac tises of

Revere

to begin

Dutch

of the 1

ap. IV

tion of chuser's

incorpor

Foundat

Gardine dians.

ning of (

the Puri License

ment.

pendents

ts Inbab

mians. Nature a

The Abridgement of the Laws and Ordinances of New-England, published in the Appendix, is disposed into an Alphabetical Method; but it must be observed, that some of the more Ancient Ones, relating to Fashions, Dreis, &c. are obsolete; and others which require Ecclesiastical Qualifications for Cevil Preserments, are repealed by the New Charter, and yet it was not proper to omit them, because they discover the Genius of the first Planters, as well as give

Light to several Parts of the History.

Upon the whole, I have got together the best Collection of Materials I could, and endeavoured to dispose them in the most proper Order; and as I have not wilfully committed any Mistakes, so when I am convinced of any such, I shall willingly retrast them, having no Interests of my own to serve separate from Truth: I have sometimes spoken freely of Mens Actions, but never reproached any Man for his Principles, nor entailed the Judgments of Almighty GOD on Families, as some of our late Historians have done; but after all, whether I have done any Service to the Publick, or been able to support the Gravity and Impartiality of an Phistorian in the following Performance, I now submit to the Judgment of the Reader.

Appendix, Numb. IV.

bor 14-1 200 sales and sales

5630

## SECRECAL DESIGNATION OF THE PARTY OF THE PAR

#### THE

nd

d be if-I

to

ls, be

of

es is be

NE ers

vit ind lifs

ive

ec-

00/8

not

011-

m,

ms,

nor

mi-

fter

or

an

ub-

. 0

# ONTENTS Of the FIRST VOLUME.

If the first peopling of America. The Discovery of it by Columbin. A Relation of the soveral unsuccessful Attempts to make a Settlement on the Northern Continent. A Survey of New-England, with a Character of the principal Nations who inhabited it before the English dispossessed them. A Description of the Natives, their Customs, Manners, them. A Description of the Ranguage. pag. 1.
Lows, Religion, Government, and Language. pag. 1.
ap. II. A foort Account of the Sufferings of the Puritans in the Reigns of 2. Elizabeth and K. James I. Of the Original of the Brownists. Their Principles. Their Sufferings. Their removing Brownists. Their Principles. Their Sufferings. Their removing themselves into Holland; where Mr. Robinson laid the Foundation of the Independent Church Discipline, as it was afterwards prastifed in New-England.

p. 50p. 111. The Rife of the first English Colony. Their Voyage to
New England. Their Settlement at Plymouth, and the Hardhips they suffer'd. Treaty of Alliance with Massasoiet, and other Indian Princes. The ill Success of Mr. Weston's Settlement in the Massachuset's Bay; and of Capt. Gorge's. The seditions Practices of Lysord and Oldham. The Death and Character of the Reverend Mr. John Robinson. Of Capt. Wollasson's Attempt to the Massachusets, and the Misery to to begin a Settlement in the Massachusets, and the Misery to which his Men were reduced. Of the opening a Trade with the Dutch on Hudson's River. A General Account of the Religion of the Planters. P. 79ap. IV. The State of Religion in England, under the Administrachuser's Bay: Their Settlement at Salem. The Manner of their incorporating into a Church. The Hardships they Suffer'd. Foundation of the Town of Boston. The Story of Sir Christopher Gardiner. Capt. Stone and Capt. Norton murder'd by the In-Of Mr. Roger Williams, and his Opinions. The Beginning of Connecticut Settlement. The Council of England probibit the Puritans transporting themselves into America, without License from the King. The Beginning of Newhaven Seutle-License from the King. ment. ap. V. The Pequot War. Disturbances occasioned by the Antinomians. The first Synod of New-England, with an Account of the Nature and Use of Synods, according to the Principles of the Independents. The Story of Mrs. Hutchinson. Of Rhode-Island, and is Inhabitanty. The Foundation of Harvard-Callege, and of the publick

#### The CONTENTS

publick Library. The Method of Education, and of taking grees. Of the New-English Version of the Plalms. A put to the further increase of the Colonies from England, he Eclipse of the Episcopal Power. A Computation of the Num of Planters that settled in New-England before the Year 16 with an Estimate of the Charges of the section Settlements. List of the silenced Ministers who left their native Country, settled in New-England. The Union of the Four Grand Sements of New-England. The Death and Character of Mr. Butter. The Commotions at Hingham.

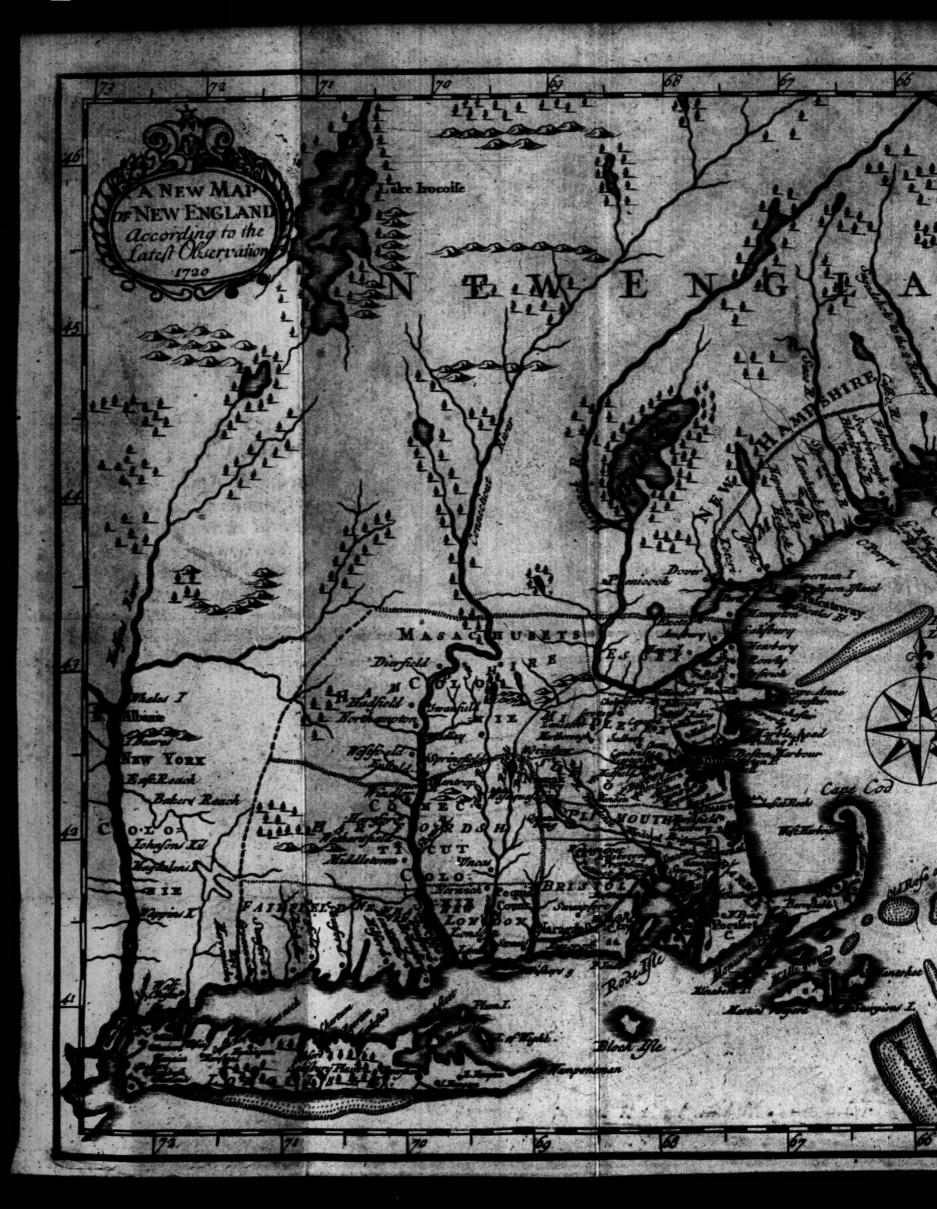
Chap VI. Of the Conversion of the Indians. Several Confers
of the Reverend Mr. Eliot with them. A Body of Addans age
enter into Civil Society, and make Laws by Mr. Eliot's Direct
for their Government. The Confession of Faith of Ponampan
Indian Convert. Two Exhortations or Sermons of Indian Pre
ers on a Fast-Day. Of the Conversion of the Indians of Mari
Vineyard, under the Condust of Mr. Mayhew. Hiaccoon
Boldness and Constancy in the Christian Faith's the Revo Mr. Mayhew's Death and Character. Mr. Increase Mat
Letter to Prosessor Leusden as Utrecht, giving an Account
the Number of the Indian Churches, their Manner of Wor
and Form of Church Discipline. The Continuation of their His
Of the Society for propagating the Gospel in New-England, p.

Chap. VII. The Death and Character of the Reverend Mr.
mas Hooker. The second Synod of New-England. Of their form of Church-Discipline. The Separation of the Anabay and their Sufferings. The Death and Character of the Reve Mr. John Cotton, and of Thomas Dudley, and Edward flow, Esqui. A large Account of the Sufferings of the Qual Of the several Laws that were made against them, and of Persons who suffered by the Execution of those Laws. An Appearance of the Gowernment of New-England, with relation to their verities against the Quakers.

Chap. VIII. The Colonies address Kirg Charles the Second of Restoration. The Submission of Alexander King of the Wonnoags. Determinations of a Synod about Baptism of Infants. List of silenced Ministers that settled in New-England after Act of Uniformity in 1662. The Deaths and Characters of Reverend Mr. John Norton, and Samuel Newman. The Edition of the English Fleets against the Dutch Settlements on Hon's River. The Deaths and Characters of John Endicott, and of the Reverend Mr. John Wilson, and Mr. Jonathan Michaelments of the Non-Conformiss Ministers in England upon that Head. Complaints of the Quakers, with the New-England Ministers of the Rever Mr. Richard Mather, John Davenport, and Mr. Charles Charles Charles of President of the College. Harvard College enlarged.



a vous







### NEW-ENGLAND.

#### CHAP. L

Of the first peopling of America. The Discofeveral unsuccessful Attempts to make a Settlement on the Northern Continent. A Survey of New-England, with a Charocter of the Principal Nations who inhabited it before the English dispossessed them. A Description of the Natives, their Customs, Manners, Laws, Religion, Government, and Language.



HERE have been two different Opinions advanced by Learned Men concerning the first peopling of America. Some have thought that the Natives of that Country were Aborigines, and not de-

cended from the Sons of Noah, as the rest of Mankind are: The Reasons they offer for the Support of their Opinion are; the great Distance of

America,

N

th

"

66

66

66

66

.66

of

the

the

an

N

an

the

the

7126

pro

ma

Ille

for

and

un

a (

can

America, which is separated from Europe, Asia, and Africa by such vast Seas, or inaccessible Tracts of Ice, as its impossible to suppose any of our Inhabitants should pass over; the Disagreement that is between the Americans and the rest of Mankind in their Persons, Manners, Customs, and Language; and the many Species of Animals found amongst them, which are common to no other Part of the World. But if it appear probable that the Inhabitants of Europe have pass d from thence into America, this Opinion ought to be abandoned as contrary to the Account the Scriptures give of the Original of Mankind, and advanced only on the Account of some Difficulties in the other Scheme, which the Patrons of this, could not tell how to

THEY who think America was peopled from Europe, Afia, or Africa, differamong themselves as to the Time, Place, and Manner, in which it was done; 'tis pretty certain, that the Inhabitants of those Parts are not the Posterity of Jews, Christians, or Mahometans; because there were none of the Footsteps of those Religions found among them, nor had they ever heard of the Names of Moses, Christ, or Mahomet, till they were acquainted with the Europeans. The Learned Hornius, who has taken a great deal of Pains in this Enquisy, concludes, that America received its Inhabitants at different Times from these three Nations; the Pha-

nicians, the Scythians, and the Chinese volla von

Tris possible that the Phanicians might pass very early into America, for when the Canaanites were expelled their Country by the Israelites under the Command of Joshua, they fied to the most distant Parts of the World. Procepius says there were two Marble Pillars at Fingri, or Tangiera, with this Infeription in the Phanician Language; "We fly from the Face of the Robber Joshua the Son of Nun." And being skilful in Shipping, tis not unlikely, that they

they failed as far as the Canaries, agreeably to what Hornius suggests, that those Islands derived their Names, not à Canibus, for there were no Dogs in the Islands when they were first discovered; but à Chananais. " Diodorus Siculus \* fays, that the Phasi nicians did very anciently fail out beyond Hercu-" les's Pillars, along the African Coast, and meet-" ing with Storms and Tempests, were carried to " the remotest Parts of the Ocean, and at length " came to a vast Island many Days Sail from Libya, " lying very far West." And in another Place he fays, "that the Carthaginians being oppress'd by " the Tyrians and Mauritanians, took Shipping, and " passing by Cades, failed to this new Region in " the Atlantick Ocean, where they planted a Co-" lony."

BESIDES; some of the Indian Words seem to be of a Punick or Phanician Original, as Ben-Ommian, the Son of Ommia; Aben-Amagos the Son of Mago: the one an Eminent Carthaginian Family, the other an Arabian one; and its very remarkable, that the Natives of New-England call the Septentriones, Mosk and Pankunaw, which in their Language fignifies a Bear; now there being no Resemblance between the Figure of the Constellation and that Animal, they must have learn'd that Name from the Pha-

nicians, who called it fo.

f

IS

n

lt

e

-

\*

1-

i-

¢-

٠,

O

n

as

15 )£

5,

C

1,

5,

h

15

1-

f.

-

y

re

10

nt

10

nm

"

at

ey

Bur after all, these Arguments are far from proving that the Phanicians failed into America; we may allow they went to the Canary, or Fortunate Mands, which was a very bold Adventure too, before the Use of the Needle was found out; for the ancient Sailors always kept within Sight of Land, unless they were driven out to Sea by a Storm; but to imagine from hence, that they corresponded with a Country almost a thousand Leagues Westward of

B 2

: Panapapao J

Lib. V. p. 299. Ed. Han. 1604.

Co

W

Mo

wh

Ri

pul

of

am

as t

it r

hur

mil

wh

tha

awa

the

Fat

ove

No

tha

Sea

Op

rica

Ph

the

im

whe

fou

Def

tars

abo

Cor

No

Bea

Non

the Canaries, is altogether groundless; besides the Reason which Harmus offers to account for their Posterity's Ignorance of America, if it be good for any Thing, may serve as well for the Canaries; his Words are these. But the it be thus probable that the Phanicians were acquainted with America, yet they kept it as a very great Secret; the Carthaginians sorbid all manner of Navigation that Way, under the severest Penalties; and by a publick Edict excluded even their own People from sailing into the Atlantick Ocean; which may help us to the Reason why America, the known to these ancient Phanicians, should be lost

" to the Memory of their Posterity."

'Trs with greater Probability, that he derives the Inhabitants of America from the Scythians, who inhabited all that Tract of Land, now known by the Name of Tartary, which lies to the West, North, and Halt of the Calpian and Euxine Seas, and were Subdivided into the Hunni, the Kitha, the Sina, and feveral other leffer Nations. The barbarous Inhabisants of this mighty Extent of Ground, after they had filled all the Northern Afia, might ramble into America, either by the East or the West, and that either by Land, the Continents there being fupposed to join; or else over narrow Straits of the Sea. They who went Westward might go first to the Banks of the River Oby, from thence to the Shore of the Frozen Sea towards Nova Zembla, and from Nova Zembla and Lapland 'tis but about four Days Sail to Graenland, which according to Hornius is Part of the Continent of America; and to render this Voyage the more practicable he observes, that there are many Islands interspers d in the Way which may be reach'd in Canoos in the Summer Time. and may probably be approach'd in the Winter by the Ice.

FATHER Averil in his Travels into Muscowy has a remarkable Passage which seems to confirm this Conjecture;

Conjecture; he tells us, that \* Mouchim Pouchim. Wayword of Smolenko, affored him, that at the Mouth of the River Cawvina lying beyond the Oby, which after it has increased its Waters from the River Leka falls into the Frozen Sea, there is a populous and spacious Island, the Inhabitants whereof were the first that discovered it; that there is an amphibious Animal in those Parts called Behemoth. as big, and no less dangerous than a Crocodile: that it requires a great deal of Labour and Affiduity to hunt this Animal, and therefore they carry their Families along with them; and that it often happens. when they are advanced a great Way on the Ice, that they are furprized with a Thaw, and carry'd away by huge Pieces of Ice, nobody knows whi-The Wayword was of Opinion, that whole Families of these Bebemoth Hunters had been wasted over, upon these floating Pieces of Ice, to the most Northern Parts of America, which lie very near that Part of Asa, which jets out into the Tartarian Sea; and one Thing which confirm d him in his Opinion was, that the Inhabitants of North America, especially those by the Sea-Side, had the same Physiognomy with these Islanders.

on

/- a

de

oh

o'

C6

10

y

re id i- y

0

it.

S

i h

THE Ancients called these Northern Islands by the Name of Cronion, and the one would think it impossible for Men to live in so cold a Climate, yet when the Norwegians sirst discovered them, they found them inhabited by a People exactly like the Descriptions we have of the ancient Scytbians, Tartars, and Laplanders. Martin Frobisher sound Men, about the Straits that bear his Name, of an Olive Complexion, with broad Faces, slat Noses, large Nostrils; and others ay they had very thin, or no Beards at all; which is an exact Description of the Northern Americans. They had no fixed Place of

<sup>\*</sup> Harris's Voy. Vol. II p. 206.

Abode, but changed their Camps, as the Season of the Year, Game, Water, or Woods invited them; they were mighty Hunters of Wild Beasts, and tis possible the Flight of these Beasts over the Ice might draw them into America; for the Animals in Lapland and North America are very much alike, especially their White Bears that seed upon Fish, and travel a great many Leagues on the Ice, as our Voyagers to those Parts of the World as-

fure us.

Bur if some of the Northern Nations got into America by the West, 'tis probable that a far greater Number of People went thither by the East, where the Passage is shorter, and the Regions fuller of Inhabitants, but what the Names of those Nations are, is hard to determine; we find in America the Names of several European Nations both Ancient and Modern: In the old Geography we read of the Apalai and Massageta, from whence are descended (as Hornius conjectures) the Apalatai of Florida, and the Massacheseta or Massachusets of New-England. In Vincentinus's Speculum Historiarum, Mention is made of the Huyrones, a Nation adjoining to the Mogols, from whom are descended the Hurons, an Indian Nation near Canada. The Ungæ were a famous Nation in America, whose Name may be derived from the Ungæ among the Tartars. The ancient Tursæ called by Herodotus Jyrcæ might be the Ancestors of the Iroquois; and about Rio de la Plata there is a People called exprelly Mogoles or Moguls; from these, and other Examples of the like Nature, tis more than probable that several of the Indian Nations are the Descendants of the ancient Scy-thians, Hunns, Turks, Tartars, and Moguls.

Besides, if we compare the Manners and

Besides, if we compare the Manners and Customs of these Northern Nations, with those of the Indian Savages, we shall find such an Agreement between them, as will incline us to suspect them to be of one Original. Tacitus gives this

Account

44 .

..

4

66

46

giv

"

"

fcr

the

ric

Pu

An

Inc

wh

the

tan

Ca

wh

flai

Pie

cit

mi

Fa

D

Flo

fir

pai

wil

alr

OI

its

fon

m;

tis

Ice

als

a-

on

ce,

af-

ito

cr

re

of

ns

ne

nt

10

d

2,

d.

is

ie

n

**!**-

e

a

3

>

7

1

Account of the ancient Fenni, " that they were a "wild People, and miferably poor, whose Cloathing was the Skins of Beafts; their Arms nothing but a Bow and Arrow, which for want of Iron "they sharpen'd with Bones; that they lived by " Hunting, fed upon Human Flesh, but had no " Horses among them. " Ammianus Marcellinus gives much the same Account of the ancient "Hunns, adding that they have no Beards even in "Old Age; that they are a thick, strong, short " People, and very deformed." Both which Defcriptions agree to exactly with feveral Nations in the North, and the Brafilians in the South of America, that one would think they were deligned on Purpose for them. Among the Scytbians there were Anthropophagi or Man-Eaters, asthere are among the Indians of America. The Scythians used to kill those, whose Distempers were thought incurable, to put them out of their Pain; and so do the wild Inhabitants of Canada. The Tartars used to eat their Captives in the fame manner as the Brafilians do: who call the Neighbourhood together, and having flain their Prisoners, boil or roast them, and give Pieces of their Flesh to all who are present, to excite their Hatred and Revenge against their Ene-The Scythians in Cangigu used to paint their Faces and Bodies, with the Images of Birds, Beafts, Dragons, &c. which the Inhabitants of Virginia. Florida, and New-England did, when America was 'Twere endless to mention all the first discovered. particular Customs in which the Americans agree with the ancient Scythians, but these which I have already enumerated are sufficient to render their Original from these Nations very probable.

THE Animals which were found in America at its first Discovery, seem to have gone over this Way:

ment between them

<sup>\*</sup> De Mor. Ger. ad finem.

The Northern Parts of that Country abounded with Deer, Lions, and Typers, none of which are to be found in Greenland or Nova Zembla; but in the Tartarian Defaits there are valt Multitudes of them : befides a great Variety of Birds and Animals of a very ftrange Species, not to be met with in other Parts of the World; these might easily get into America, the Continents joining in those Parts, or being divided but by a very narrow Strait.

Hornius ventures to guess at the Time when these Northern Nations went into America : he suppoles it was much later than the Voyages of the Phanicians, because the Northern Parts of America were much thinner of Inhabitants than the Southern; but this Reason is of little Force, because it may be supposed that Persons who lived by Hunting, and had no fix'd Habitation, tho' they came in by the North, yet might travel forward to the warm Southerly Regions, before they made a Settlement, Indeed, nothing but Necessity, or the Fate of War, could be supposed to make Mon travel so high into the North, as to get over the Ice into America; and fuch a Necessity befel the Northern Nations about the Year of Christ 400, when their Affairs were in the utmost Confusion, and the Country was fo over-stock'd with Inhabitants, that they rambled all possible Ways for Subsistence, and then (according to our Author) great Numbers of them got into America.

A THIRD Part of the World from whence America might receive its Inhabitants, is Japan and China. China contains all that Tract of Land which lies to the South of Cathay, in the valt Region of Mangi; the Inhabitants of these Parts, the descended Originally from the Scythians and Indians, got an early Acquaintance with the Use of Shipping, and other Arts and Sciences, from the Phanicians and Egyptians, who made frequent Expeditions into these Parts. Gonsalo Mendoza in his Annals, tells us, that

Man King o A or u iard th ca re

he C

ne f

th Chro or fo they Bu of th

bited State Caul verni Berti from dred thro' the j thefe Trav tainii thro' and o Stream ale I the fi Coun prove may

of Sa dards

racte

th

to he

of

ni-

th

et

is,

n

**P-**

4

ار او

X.

y

0

a

0

) 1

linuoty.

he Chineze being driven out of their Country by he Tartars about the Year 1268, fled into remote flands with a thousand Ships provided by their King Facsur; Hornius and others suppose they sail'd o America, and settled in the Kingdom of Mexico, or upon the Discovery of this Country by the Spaniards, Montexuma their King told Cortex, "that they themselves were originally Strangers, and came from the East in the Fleet of a great Foreign Prince, so long ago that the Memory of the Time was lost." And foralmuch as their Chronicles were of no ancienter a Date than three or four hundred Years, we may fairly conclude they came into the Country about that Time.

Bur it must be allowed that the greatest Part of the Southern Continent of America was inhabited long before this, from the Number of People, stately Towns, noble Structures, great Roads and Cauleys, as well as the well-fettled Form of Government, that the Spaniards found among them. Bertius says, that there were two famous Roads from Quito in Peru, to the City of Cufco, of five hundred Miles in Length, one of which was carried thro' Mountains and Rocks, and the other thro' the plain Country; that at certain Distances on these Roads, there were large and pleasant Inns for Travellers, some of which were capable of entertaining Kings and their Retinue; that the Road thro' the plain Country was twenty-five Foot broad, and defended with Walls, within which there were Streams with Trees planted on their Banks; which the People could never be at leifure to do within the first two hundred Years of their inhabiting the Country. However, these magnificent Structures prove their Descent from the Chineze; to which we may add, their Ceremonies of Burying the Dead; of Saluting their Princes; their Enligns and Standards; their Way of Writing by Pictures or Characters of Things; all which are of an Eastern Loove to soil a business, took of Piece of Viceal.

vrou

must

nim-

Faval

Wind

and t

he V

much

leem

and u

fome

his A

Europ

first

and t

with

himfe

Perfu

Quee

three

" C

ce fh

es fh

" Se

es th

" vi

bus fe

Title

Cana

they

follo

call'd

950

with

in the

and J

to the

Crea

BE

Original. Dr. Harris, and almost all the Author who have writ about America, take Notice, that about California, the People spoke almost the same Language, and observed the same Laws and Customs with the Mexicans; and the Customs of the Mexicans, as we have already observed, are derived from the Chineze. Upon the whole, as itis highly probable that the Northern Parts of America received their Inhabitants from Scythia and Tartary, fo I think it amounts almost to a Demonstration. that the Southern Parts were peopled from China and Japan; and that either by Sea, the Chineze being early acquainted with the Use of Shipping, or by Land, it being yet uncertain whether Japan be an Island, or part of the Continent of America: But as to the Time when they went thither, and the Motives that put them upon fo long and dangerous an Expedition, 'tis impossible to pronounce with any degree of Certainty concerning them.

Bur whenever this Country was peopled, it was certainly unknown for many Ages; for though fome of our Inhabitants got over thither, none of theirs came back to us, nor did the Europeans dream of fuch a new World, till Christopher Columbus between two and three Hundred Years ago happily discovered it. Golumbus was a Genoeze by Birth, but fettled with his Wife and Family in Portugal; he was a fober, temperate, grave Man, of competent Learning, and very studious in the Mathematicks. He was a good Sailor, and took Pleafore in making Charts for Sea Service; but what the particular Motives were, which induced him to look out after this new World, is not certainly known : Some think his Skill in Geometry and the Nature of the Globe, made him conclude the Poffibility of finding Inhabitants on the other Side of it; others fay, that Vincent Martin, a Pilot belonging to the King of Portugal, told him, that he being driven by Stress of Weather 450 Leagues West of Cape Vincent, took up a Piece of Wood wrought

wrought by a Man's Hand, which he fancied must come from some Western Island; others told him that certain Pines had been cast ashoar at Faval and Graciofa, by strong W. and N. W. Winds; and others, that they had feen two Canoos, and the like Number of dead Men, driving before the Wind on the Coast of Floras, who by their much larger Faces and different Complexions feem to have been Inhabitants of some remote, and unknown Region.

thon

that

fame

Cuf-

f the

riv'd

ghly

ceiv-

tary,

tion,

bina

neze

ing,

*zpan* 

ica:

and

lan-

ince

.

, 1t

ugh

e of

eam

be-

oily

but

ral;

pe-

na-

ea-

hat

im

nly

the

of-

of

g-

e-

es

bd

ht

Being thus persuaded, that a new World lay some where or other out of Sight, he made. his Application to feveral Kings and Princes of Europe, to fend him out upon Discoveries. He first offer'd his Service to the King of Portugal, and then to the King of England; but meeting with a Repulse at both these Courts, he apply'd himself at last to the King of Spain, who, by the Persuasion of John Perez, Father Confessor of his Queen, was prevail'd with to fit him out three small Vessels with about 120 Men, "upon "Condition, that if he made no Discoveries, he " should have no Reward; but if he did, that he " should be Vice-Roy by Land, and Admiral by " Sea, and have the Tenths of the Profits of all " the Countries discovered by him, and these Pri-" vileges to be Hereditary to his Family." Columbus fet out from Palos, August 2, 1492, with the Title of Admiral; the 11th they arriv'd at the Canaries, and staid at Gomera till Sept. 6th, when they put to Sea again, and on the 11th of Ottober following discovered the Island of San Salvador, call'd by the Inhabitants Gavebani, being about 950 Leagues W. of the Canaries : Here he landed with the Royal Standard, and took Possession of it in the Name of their Catholick Majesties Ferdinand and Isabella; the Natives filled with Wonder ran to the Shoar, taking the Ships and Boats for living Creatures, and fo ignorant were they, that they put their

their Hands to the Edges of the Spaniards Swords. not knowing they were tharp. On the 15th of Officher the Admiral weighed Anchor, and fail'd to another Island about feven Leagues distant, which he called St. Maria de la Conception; on the 17th he failed to Fernandina, from thence to Ifabella, and Cuba, and last of all to Hispaniola, where he built a Fort with the Wrecks of one of his Ships which stranded on the Coast, and left a Garrison of 38 Men in it to maintain the Spanish Pretentions to the Country: The Natives treated him with great Civility and Respect, and exchanged the most valuable Effects of their Country for Glass Beads, and other Trifles, but the Admiral having been now almost three Months in the Country, failed back for Spain, Jan. 4th, 1493, and arrived there in March, with the joyful Tidings of a new World, richer in Gold and Silver, than all the Kingdoms of Europe put together.

Thus was the Communication open'd between Europe and America, in a lucky Juncture for the Spaniards, whose Treasury was so low at this Time, that the Queen was forc'd to pawn her very Jewels to raise Money for Columbus's Expedition; but in a few Years they brought home such vast Treasures of Gold and Silver from the West-Indies, as made them the Richest Nation in the World, and advanced their Power to such a Degree, as not only put them at the Head of Europe; but gave them a Prospect of Establishing an universal Monarchy upon the Ruin of their Neighbours.

ALL Europe was struck with Astonishment at the good Fortune of the Spaniards; and the Courts of England and Portugal, repented heartily their slighting Columbus's Offers: They saw with infinite Regret, the immense Treasures which had slipt throtheir Fingers; and began now to fit out Ships for Expeditions into those Parts, in hopes of sharing some of the Treasures of the new discover'd World,

which

hich

pania

et an

penin

orth

TH

be'l

COM

ook I

ne Ye

anada

nance

his is

wn :

he Nic

ong d He w

497. ilcov

evera hree

ing.

orm**e**c o thi

rivate Money

Queen ears o

Wa

En

No

cov

Na

hants

wo fn

Amida

er's

ail'd

#### NEW-BNGLAND.

hich tho? it did not succeed in the South, the paniards having been before them in those Parts, at answered their Ends in some Measure, by pening the Way to their suture Settlements on the orthern Continent of America.

ds.

6

l to

ich

he

and

lt a

rich

38

to

reat

va-

ids.

een

iled

ere

rld,

oms

cen

the

ne,

vels

t in

ea-

as

Id.

not

ave

rfal

Male

the

s of

tht-

Re-

iro'

for

ing

rld,

The French, who will never allow any Nation be before them, pretend this Country was first iscovered by John Verazzan a Florentine, who ok Possession of it in the Name of Francis I. in ne Year 1524? That he called it Mocofa, and with anada, to which he gave the Name of New nance, added it to the French Dominions; but his is a Fiction exploded by all Authors but their wn : Sebastian Cabot, was the first that discover'd e Northern Continent of America, and fail'd aing the Coast, as high as 67 or 68 Degrees N.L. le was fent out by King Henry VII. in the Year 497, the very fame Year that Americus Vefpucius iscover'd the Southern Continent: He landed at everal Places on the Coaft, and brought home hree of the Savages, whom he prefented to the ing. But Sir Walter Raleigh was the first who ormed the Project of a Settlement in these Parts this End he procured feveral Merchants and rivate Gentlemen, to advance large Sums of Money, and used his Interest with his Mistress. Ducen Elizabeth, to obtain a Patent, the Patent ears date March 25th, 1584, " and grants to Sir Walter Ruleigh free Liberty to Possess, Plant, and Enjoy for himfelf, and fuch Perfons as he should Nominate, themselves, and their Successors, all fuch Lands, Territories, &c. as they should difcover, not then in the Possession of any Christian Nation." In April, the Gentlemen and Merhants, by Sir Watter Raleigh's Direction, fitted out wo small Ships under the Command of Capt Philip Amidas, and Capt. Arthur Barlow, two of Sir Waler's Servants, who knowing no better Courfe, ail'd away for the Camaries, from thence to the Caribbee

Caribbee Mands, and croffing the Gulph of Mexico made the Coast of Florida: Which by Comput tion of able Seamen is above a Thouland League out of the Way. They anchor'd at the In let h Roenoke, at present under the Government of North Carolina, and landed on certain Islands on the Coast between Cape Fear and the great Bay of Chefapeac: They afterwards went ashore on the Continent, in a Country call'd Wingandacoa, over which there reign'd a King whose Name was Win gina; and traded with the Indians for Furs, Soffafras Cedar, Tobacco, &c. which they purchas'd for Toys and Things of little Value. They brought hom with them likewise some Pearl, which was taken for an evident Sign of the great Riches of the Country, and gave such an advantageous Account of the Climate and Soil, that Queen Elizabeth was he felf pleas'd to honour it with the Name of Virgi mia; tho' others fay that Sir Walter, Raleigh gave it that Name in honour of his Virgin Mistress Under this Name was comprehended all that Trad of Land, which reaches from Novemberua to Florida and contains the Countries now known to the English by the Names of New England, New York New-Jersey, Pensilvania, Maryland, Virginia, and Carolina. The Astronomy of the Astronomy Comment

THE Success of this first Voyage encourage the Adventurers to attempt a fecond. Sir Walter Raleigh himself intended to command this Expedition, and carry with him a fufficient Number of Forces to compleat his Defign of making a Set tlement; but being at that Time jealous that his Absence might be prejudicial no his Interests a Court, which the farl of Leicester foughtall Occasi ons to lessen, he committed the Conduct of it to his Lieutenant Sir Richard Greenville; who on the 9th of April 1585, set Sail from Plymouth with seven fore h Sail of Ships fitted out by the Company, of which stand himself, and several other Gentlemen were Mem-

bers.

iled oko lace A land egr n the nd ( b En elves ured uppl oace leet. Plant airs v

rs.

lemei Suppl ind t of Sir ne left ons, p ffectu Comp al oth owar

Aı

miscar IN fitted Sailors one of ther. that th Ameri

ventur

Vexice

puta

ague

let b

Nort

n the

no th Ove

Win

afras

**Foys** 

hom

en'for

Doun

of the as he

Virgi

gave

treis

Trad

orida bithe

York, and

1714 rag

alter pedi

per of

Setat his

As at

ccafi it to

bers.

ers. Sir Richard, for want of better Information, iled round by the Caribbee Mands, and arrived at Tokokon on the 26th of May, being the same lace where the English had been the Year before; August following he began to plant at Roenoke land, about 5 Leagues from the Continent, in 36 begrees of Northern Latitude. He left 108 Men n the Island under the Command of Mr. Ralph Lane nd Captain Philip Amidas, and returned himself England; but after they had maintained themelves about a Twelve-month on the Island, and enured inexpressible Hardships for want of fresh upplies from England, the poor Remains were glad o accept of a Passage home in Sir Francis Drake's fleet, who was order'd by the Queen to visit the Plantation, and fee in what Condition their Afairs were.

A FEW Days after the breaking up of the Setlement, Sir Richard Greenville arriv'd with a fresh Supply of Men and Provisions; he was amaz'd to and the Island deferted, not knowing any Thing of Sir Francis Drake's having been there; however, he left behind him 50 Men, and two Years Provisions, promising faithfully to bring them speedy and ffectual Supplies; but before he returned, this little Company was murder'd by the Natives. Seveal other Attempts were made in the Queen's Time lowards a Settlement in these Parts, but they all miscarried a binamino or

In the Year 1602, Captain Bartholomew Gosnold fitted out a small Vessel at Dartmouth, with 32 Sailors, and Passengers for Virginia: He had been one of the Adventurers in a former Voyage thither, was an excellent Mariner, and conceived that there must be a shorter Cut to that Part of n the America than had hitherto been attempted; wherefever fore he steer'd a more direct Course, and did not which stand so far to the Southward, as the former Ad-dem venturers had done, by which Means he fell in

with

with the Land, in the Latitude of 42 Degrees and a few Minutes Northward, among the Island that now form the North Side of the Maffactule Bay in New-England; but not liking the Place he steer'd to the Southward, all Night; and nex Morning, when he thought himself clear of the Coaft, found himself enclosed within a might Promontory or Head of Land. Here he flak some Time trading with the Indians on the Coast for Furs, Skins, Saffafras, &c. and fifthing in the Bay, where he caught valt Quantities of Cod, from whence he gave it the Name of Cape Cod. Cap Cod is the most remarkable Point of New English Land: It makes a large and commodious Bay, capable of receiving rood Sail of Ships; the Entrance is about 4 Miles wide, and was then encompass'd all round, even to the very Sea, with Oaks, Pines, Juniper, Saffafras, and other Iweet Woods, Here was the greatest Plenty of Fowls that ever they faw, and had they had Tackling for the Whale Fishery, they might have made a rich Return from thence, for they faw those monstrous Fishes playing hard by them every Day.

At length the Captain went ashoar upon a small uninhabited Island, which he called Elizabeth Island, about 4 Leagues from the Main in the Latitude of 4r Degrees 10 Minutes, and built a little Fort, from whence he traffick'd with the

Natives along the Coaft.

THE W

The first Body of Savages he met with, after Signs of Peace made on both Sides, came boldly aboard him: Their Commander was dress d with Waistcoat, Breeches, Shoes, Stockings, Har, and all the Accourrements of an European; but the rest of the Company had only Deer-Skins about their Shoulders, and Seal Skins tied about their Waist; their Hair was very long, and tied up with a Knot behind, and they were Painted all over,

tho'

tho

to t

fine

per of t

broa

ther

were

tain

he i

retur

of ch with

once

and

with

men

Com

April felves

tweer

other

had I

the C

to pla

last P

New-

vided

try w

wife c

the N

TE

ginia.

Year

Ships

with v

ther to

Capt.

- Vo

tho' their natural fwarthy Colour was eafy enough to be discerned.

s and land

bu fet ace

nex

f the

ght

flaid

Coall

1 the

from Cap

ngli

Bay, En-

com-

Jaks.

ods, ever

hale

turn

ishes

n 2

abeth

La-

ilc a

the

after

idly with

and

the

oout

heir

with. ver,

tho

THE next Company that came to him were finer than the former, having all of them Copper Pendants in their Ears. One had a Breaft-Plate of the same Metal a Foot long, and half a Foot broad; another had his Head stuck full of Feathers, that rendred him a frightful Figure; they were a fly theevish Sort of People, but the Captain knew well enough how to deal with them s he made a very fuccelsful Voyage, and upon his return home, gave such an advantageous Account of the Country, and of the civil Treatment he met with from the Natives, that the Merchants began once more to think of a Settlement in those Parts, and the Captain folicited the Matter fo effectually with the Court of King James, that several Gentlemen engaged in it, and the King incorporated two Companies in one Patent, bearing Date the 10th of April 1606. The first were allowed to settle themfelves at any Place on the Coast of Virginia between the Degrees of 34 and 41. N. L. The other between the Degrees of 38 and 45. Each had Liberty to stretch themselves 100 Miles along the Coasts, and too Miles within Land, but not to plant within 100 Miles of each other. In this last Patent was included New-England, New-York, New-ferfey, Penfilvania, as they are now divided into feveral Provinces, but the whole Country was then called Virginia, and was no otherwife diftinguish'd for some Time after, than by the Names of North and South Virginia.

THE Proprietors of the Patent for South Virginia, began their Settlement, the very fame Year with the Date of it. They fitted out two Ships under the Command of Captain Newport, with whom went the honourable Mr. Percy, Brother to the Earl of Northumberland, Capt, Gosnoll, Capt. Smith, Capt. Ratliffe, Capt. Martin, Mr. Wing-- Vol. I.

field a Minister, and abundance of Handicrast Tradesmen; they sell in with the Coast near Cape Henry the Southermost Point of the Bay Chesapeac, and rais'd a Fort at the Mouth of the River Powhalan, now James River; here they left 100 Men with Provisions, Arms, Ammunition, and other Necessaries for a Settlement, who made a Shift to maintain themselves on the Place, and the next Year built James Town, about 50 Miles up the River: From these small Beginnings, the Plantation of Virginia has risen to that Figure in

has fince made in the British Commerce.

SIR John Ropham Lord Chief Justice of England, Sir Ferdinando Gorges Governor of Plymouth Fort. and feveral other West-Country Gentlemen and Merchants, Proprietors of the Patent for Nonth-Virginia, ficted out a Ship the fame Year with 30 Men under the Command of Henry Challens, to make a Discovery of that Country, they set out in August, but being got as far as the Spanish West-Indian Islands, they fell in with a Fleet of Spanish Ships who took them Prisoners, and after a great deal of ill Usage carried them into Spain, where they were treated after a very cruel and inhumane Manner. This Misfortune damp'd the Courage of the first Adventurers, but the Lord Chief Justice Popbam quickly after fent out another Ship at his own Charge, under the Command of Capt. Hanam, who brought back fuch an encouraging Account of the Country, that the Proprietors who were fallen off, resolved to make a second Adventure; they fitted out two Ships with 100 Men, Ordnance. Stores, and all Negellaries for a Plantation, under the Command of Capt. Popbam and Capt. Gilbert, in the Year 1608, who began a Settlement upon the Banks of the River Sagadabock in Novemberua; but before the Return of the Ships, the Lord Chief Justice, who was the Life of the Enterprize, died; the Planters however built a Fort which they call'd

re abou rd fee i m, more pt Capt ent Place

> first his V

call

per ban

foli

an

Eld

awa

I

by .

tics

tinu

tive. Roy

ficte

Well

fide

man

Cap

Mar

thof

the t

only

prefe

of i

Capi

mof

fachu

bour

felf |

Agga

call'd by the Name of St. George, but could not be persuaded to stay in the Country after Capt. Popam was dead, and Capt. Gilbert declared his Refolution to return to England to take Possession of an Estate, which fell to him by the Death of his Elder Brother; so they all broke up, and came

away for England.

craft

Cape beac,

Pow-

Men

ther

Shife

the

s. up

the

re u

and.

ort,

and

onth-

1 30

, to

it in

Keft-

milh

reat

hey

Ian-

the

Pop.

UWD

ann,

unt

vere

ire;

)rd-

ion,

apt.

ent

em-

ord

ze, hey

lPd

Bur the Trade turn'd to fo good an Account. by reason of the Fish, Furrs, and other Commodities of the Country, that the Merchants were continually fitting out Ships to traffick with the Natives. In the Year 1614, four Gentlemen, Capt. Roydon, Capt. Langbam, Mr. Bully, and Mr. Skelton, fitted out two Ships at their own Charges for the West-Indies; Capt. John Smith, who had been Prefident of the Colony of South Virginia, was Commander of the one; and Tho, Hunt of the other. Capt. Smith falling in with the Land about the Island Monabigan, traded with the Inhabitants of those Parts; and while his Men were fishing upon the Coasts, he travelled up into the Country, with only eight Men, and drew a Plan of it, which he presented to Prince Charles, who gave it the Name of NEW-ENGLAND, and was pleas'd at the Captain's Request to give English Names to the most remarkable Places in the Country; the Maffachusets River he called Charles River; the Harbour of Cape Cod, Milford-Haven; and the Cape it self Cape James; Accominticus, he called Boston; Aggawom, Southampton; and so to the Number of about 30 Places, a List of which the Reader may see in Smith's Voyages, Lib. VI. p. 205; but 'tis more probable, that most of the Towns which the Captain mentions, received their Names from those Places in OLD-ENGLAND, from whence the The Captain made first Planters of them came. his Voyage out and home in about fix Months, and got about 1500 Pounds for his Principals, by the

<sup>·</sup> Cast. Smith's Pogages, Book VI. p. 204.

the Sale of his Otter, Beaver-Skins, Salt-Fift, Train

Oil, and other Commodities.

BUT when Capt. Smith was gone, Hunt, the Commander of the other Vessel, which was bound for Spain in her. Way home, entired between 20 and go of the Natives aboard him, and contrary to the Law of Nations, and the Publick Faith, clapp'd them under Hatches, and fold them to the Spaniards at Malaga on his own Account; his Owners censured this Part of his Conduct severely, and upon his Arrival in England discharged him their Service; but the Indians resented this Piece of Treachery fo highly, that they refulved to be revenged on the next English that came upon the Coast. Capt. Hobson was the unhappy Man who was dispatch'd the next Spring with Men, Arms, Ammunition, and other Necessaries for a Settlement; upon the Ship's Arrival, many of the Indians came aboard, and were kindly entertain'd by the Captain; at their Departure they promifed to return next Day with some Trade; they came accordingly with 20 Canoes, but refused to come aboard. Epenow, an Indian that the Captain had brought with him as an Interpreter, beckoned to them to come near, and immediately leap'd into the Water and swam to them; upon which the English fired upon him, and the Indians from their Canoes let fly their Arrows at the Ship, and carried off their Countryman, notwithstanding all the Attempts of the English to recover him; several of the Indians were kill'd in the Skirmish, and the Master of the English Vessel, and some of his Company were wounded; which discouraged them so much, that they return'd to England, bringing back nothing with them, but the fad News of a War with the Indians \*.

\* Gart, Smith's Foreger, Land Wife a con

In

feci

in

wit

Ina

alo

to i

was

con

giv

Do

esca

Pir,

no.

poi

fent

mac

ther

whe

to a

Indi

thou

liam

the

of t

low

in tl

now

Rea

1

fom

Civi

Cuft

amo

T

an I

Land

Increase Mather's Trouble; of New-England, Boston 1677,

Train

the the

ound

en 20

LTY to

app'd

pani-

and

their

e of

e re-

1 the

who

rms,

ttle-

Indi-

by

d to

ome

had

ned

nto

En-

neir

ar-

the of

the

m-

fo

ck

ar

7,

N

In the Year 1619, Mr. Dormer was fent to prosecure the Delign of planting and settling a Trade in New-England, and to endeavour to make Peace with the Indians, he brought Squanto, one of the Indians that Hunt had carried away from Paturet along with him; but the' Squanto did what he could to pacify his Countrymen, telling them that Hunt was a Villain, and that his Treachery had been condemn'd by the English, yet they could not for give it, but watched their Opportunity, and gave Dormer 14 Wounds, so that he had much ado to escape with his Life: Hereupon he fail'd away for Virginia, but left Squanto behind him.

THE Patentees having met with fo many Difappointments, laid afide all farther Thoughts of fending Colonies into these Parts, and therefore made Grants of small Parcels of Land on the Northern Parts of New England to private Adventurers, who fettled small Factories in the Summer-Time to affif their Merchant Men in trading with the Indians; but a Settlement was not so much as thought of, till Mr. John Robinson, and Mr. William Brewster, the former an Independent Minister, the latter a Ruling Elder in the fame Church, both of them, with leveral of their Disciples and Followers, driven out of England for their Religion. in the Reign of King James the First, and living now at Leyden, bravely accomplish'd it; as the Reader will see in the next Chapter.

In the mean time, it will be proper to give fome Account of the Country, and observe the Civil and Religious Policy of the Natives, with their Customs and Manners before the English settled among 'em.

THE Natives apprehended New-England to be an Island, and went so far as to tell the very Name of that Inlet of the Sea that parts it from the Main Land of Virginia; this Inlet they call'd Mobeggon, and constantly affirm'd that the English and Dutch pass'd

pass'd that Way between the two Countries, and drove a great Trade 1 for the Confirmation of this Opinion of the Natives, 'tis alledged that they had no Knowledge of the neighbouring Country of Virginia, tho' it be not above 150 Leagues from them; that they never heard of Powbaian, the great Prince of those Parts, nor of the English Plantation there, till they were inform'd of it by the English themselves, but later Discoveries have sufficiently consuted this Opinion.

New-England was inhabited by 20 or 30 different Nations, the most considerable of which we shall meet with in the following History, the the Names of many of them are not so much as men-

tion'd by the Modern Historians.

THE Massachusets were the most populous of all the Indian Nations, and the most civilized, which was owing chiefly to their dwelling upon the Coasts, and trading with the several Nations of Europe; but the Plague and Small-Pox had thinn'd 'em very much a little before the English took Possession of their Country; they inhabited those Parts which now make the Counties of Susfolk and Middlesex, and have the Honour to give Name to the chief Colony of New England.

THE Neumkeaks inhabited the adjacent Country, which now makes the Country of Effew. Here the Massachuset Colony made their first Settlement,

and built the Town of Salem.

THE Narrhagansets were a very formidable People, and maintain'd themselves against the growing Power of the English longer than any of their Neighbours; they inhabited the Parts about New-London County.

THE Pocassets inhabited the Parts to the Southward of the Massachusets along the Coast; it was within the Territories of this Nation, that the first Colony of New-Plymouth seated themselves, but

the of

the

their gliff

the in t

Mo

was bid land defi wer wit

the befi vid bly

of

Yes

nea this

who Pho a so he

ply

the Country had been some time before in a manner

depopulated by the Plague.

and

this

had

of

om

reat

ion

lifb

nely

dif.

WC

the

en-

all

ich

the

of

n'd

ol-

ofe

and

to.

un-

ere

nt,

eo-

W-

eir

w-

th-

V25

irft

put

he

THE Pequots were a fierce and cruel People, they made a noble Stand against the united Force of New England in the Year 1637, and would certainly have defended their Country against the Encroachments of the English, if the Narrhagansets, their inveterate Enemies, had not assisted the English to destroy them. They were seated on a navigable River 12 Miles Eastward of the Mouth of the great River Connessicut; and did whatever lay in their Power to prevent the English from settling on the Banks of it.

Mount Hope in New-Bristol County; Old Massaich was a faithful Friend and Ally of the English; he bid them welcome into the Country upon their first landing, and did them all the kind Offices they desired; but his Successors Alexander and Philip were the most daring Enemies that ever they met with; the latter had Policy enough to engage all the Indian Nations in a War, which exhausted the best Blood and Treasure of the English, and if Providence had not strangely interposed, would probably have driven them out of the Country, above 50 Years after they had taken Possession of it.

THE Moratiggons were feated to the Westward

of the Massassiets.

THE Patuxets between the Counties of New-

London and New-Bristol.

THE Maguas Westward of Connecticut River, near New-Albany. The seasonable Interposition of this powerful Nation retriev'd the English Affairs, when they were come to a Criss in the War with Philip King of the Wompanoags. Dr. Mather gives a surprising Relation of their Courage and Valour; he says, that they were Man-Eaters, and being supply'd with Fire-Arms before their Neighbours, they had destroy'd above two Millions of Natives C.

inhabiting the Country between them, and the River Missippi. These Maquas are commonly known by the Name of Mobegins or Mobawks; for the River, now known by the Name of Hudson's River, was formerly call'd the Mobegin River.

THE Manimors inhabited Barnstable County; the Nianticks, Mattachiests, Namaskets, possess of the Inland Country between Providence and Merrimack River; the Marebicans and Sequems were in Hampshire, about 20 Miles from the Coast; the Navasii and Horakasi lay farther within Land, about Connecticut River.

Thus the Country was canton'd into a great many little Kingdoms and Governments, for every Sachem or Sagamore, who was Lord of a Territory about 8 or 10 Miles in Length, erected his Lands into a Kingdom, and gave a Name to his Nation.

THE Indians of New-England are of an Olive

Complexion, and flat Nofed, their

Description of the Hair is black, which they cut short before, but suffer to grow very long behind, and sometimes dress up in a

very Antick Fashion with Feathers, they have no Beards, but are generally tall, proper, from Men, they go naked in the Summer, except about their Waift, which they cover with a Piece of Leather; but in Winter, they cloath themselves with Deer-Skins, which they throw about them like a Mantle. Since their trafficking with the Europeans, their Cloathing is usually a Yard and Half of coarse broad Cloth, which they hang on their Shoulders, and half a Yard of the fame Cloth, which being put betwixt their Legs, and brought up before and behind, and tied with a Girdle, above the Middle, hangs with a Flap on each fide. Some of them have Breeches, Stockings, and Shoes, all in one Piece made of the same Materials; in Winter, when the Snow will bear, they put on Snow-Shoes, which are made like a large Tennis Racket, and lace them

heir elve leep ngly Fello apon no H

hem

of R Scarl Orna of the or Be

T

all the who identified in the Value of faith and the Value of faith and Fish are a mon, Bags

dong, with fer c towa fays, ner, Blue-

made

the

only for

fon's

Mr.

ty; the

nack

mp-

pafii out

: 他 以

reat ery

ory

nds

on.

ive

en

ort

ng na

no

iey A,

in

is, le.

ir

ad

nd

ut

nd

e,

m

10

n

s,

e

n

hem to their Feet with Deers Guts. They greafe heir Bodies and Hair very often, and paint themelves all over; their Faces and Shoulders with a leep Red, and their Bodies with a Variety of gly, mishapen Figures; and he is the brayest Fellow that has the most frightful Forms drawn pon him, and looks most terrible. They have no Hats, but commonly wear about their Heads. Snake-Skin, or a Belt of their Money, or a kind of Ruff made with Deers Hair, and dyed of a Scarlet Colonr, which they esteem very rich. The Ornaments of their Women, belides the Painting of their Bodies, are a fort of Ear-rings of Copper br Beads Bracelets about their Arms, and Chains about their begs bern and I to alem I add to ano

THE Men are of a flothful Temper, putting

all the Slavery upon their Wiveston of the who not only take Care of their Chil. Their Diffestion

dren, but manageall Domestick Af- and Way of Living.

fairs, they plant, reap, house and on the large thresh all their Corn; they build their Houses. and attend their Husbands as their Lords; the only Employment of the Men is Hunting and Fishing; when Prevision is low, they go out into the Wood, 50 or 100 in a Company, with their Bows and Arrows, and bring in a fresh Supply. or fail down the Rivers in their Canoes to catch Fish. In the Spring they catch Lobsters, Clams, &c. and afterwards Bass, Cod, Rock, Blue-Fish, Salmon, and Lampus. The Lobsters they take in large Bags at low Water, with a Staff 2 or 3 Yards long, made small and sharpen'd at one End, with Notches to take hold; when they fee the Lobfer crawling in two Fathom Water, they stick him towards the Head, and bring him up; Mr. Joselyn fays, he has known 30 Lobsters taken after this manner, by an Indian Lad, in an Hour and half. Bas, Blue-Fish, and Sturgeon, they strike with a fort of Dart made of Wood, and sharpen'd with a Fish-bone,

to the End of which they tie a String, with which they drag the Fifth to Shoar. At all other Time, except when they are at War, they indulge them felves in Idleness and Sloth. One would wonder that in fo many Ages as must have run our fine their first inhabiting the Country, no active Spirit thould rife up to encourage Arts and Industry among them; they live in a Country full of Copper and Iron Mines, and yet were never Owners of a much as a Knife till the English came among lem their Name for an Englishman is a Knife-Man their Country is stock'd with the best Timber for Shipping in the World, yet they never made an Improvement of it, beyond their Canoes wrong out of the Trunks of Trees made hollow by Fin or made of the Bark of the Birch-Tree, frengthen with little Circles of Wood like Hoops, and pitch with a Mixture of Turpentine and Rofin, which are fo very light, that they can eafily carry the over Land from one River to another. They a labout 8 or 9 Paces long, and half fo broad in the Middle, but growing narrower towards the End They never faw a Ship or Sail, till forme came the ther from Europe. Nay, such is the Slothfulne of these barbarous Savages, that when they have burnt up all the Wood, in the Neighbourhood the Place where they have pitch'd their Tents, n ther than be at the Pains to fetch it in from a litt farther Distance, they pluck up their Stakes and follow the Wood.

THEIR chief Diversions are their Dancing Matches, which are a fort of Festivals, to which the whole Country almost comes in, and are freely enter tained: As soon as the Dancers enter the Ring all the Spectators, having each a short Stick in his Hand, knock them on the Ground, and at the same time sing all together in a loud and barbarous manner: If the Dancers or Astors, are to show was like Postures, then they come in painted for Was

fom

Eyes
hey
Drde
erin
gain
they
und o
wift
heir
fomet
their

ome dack

In the rous ( to the invented t

fley

after in Ten forry young like a Top with Ruthe abouts

South, up one Mat b Holes

\* 70F

y hid

imes.

hem.

nder

fine

non

rand

of h

em:

Lan

r fd

an

ug

Fin

hen'

tch

whid

then

y all

n ti

End

e thi

nel

have

od o

lich

and

ncin

heh

nter

**Smg** 

in di

fac

man

war War

fom

ome with their Faces red, and some black; some lack and red with Streaks of white under their Eyes, as they imagine will appear most terrible a hey then jump and hop up and down without any Order, shewing many Feats of Activity, and unering many Expressions of their intended Valour gainst their Ememies. As for their other Dances, hey are made up chiefly of certain antick Tricks, and odd Poltures of their own Invention: They wift their Bodies into strange Shapes, and Wring their Faces, fo as to raise Mirth in the Spectators; ometimes they will jump into the Fire, and catchng up a Firebrand, will bite off a live Coal with heir Teeth; and a thousand Pranks of this kind mey play for the Entertainment of the Company. in these Revels, they sometimes exercise a barbarous Cruelty towards their Captives, putting them to the most cruel Torments their favage Nature can invent; fuch as roafting them lalive by a flow Fire, and cotting off Pieces of their Flesh to cut, and the Company in the mean Time dancing round about them, and drowning their Shrieks with their Singing, and the rathing of their Sticks. The Reader will find Examples of this kind hereafter in their Wars with the English.

THE Indian Houses, or Wigwams, are very

forry Buildings, they are made of

young and tender Trees bent down Their Houses.

like an Arbour, covered on the

Top with the Bark of Trees, and on the Sides with thick and well wrought. Mats made of Ruthes, the Doors are but a Yard high, orthereabouts, one opens to the North, the other to the South, and according as the Wind fets they close up one Door with Bark, and hang a Deer-Skin or Mat before the other. The Chimneys are wide Holes in the Top of the Building, which they

<sup>&</sup>quot;Josselyn's Voyages to New-England, Ed, Lond. 1674-p. 126.

cover with Mats in cold Weather. All is wanted and close in the Winter, for the Houses are matted both without and within; in the midst of then are four little Stakes knock'd into the Ground, with Sticks laid a-cross, upon which they hang the Pots; their Beds are so many Mats spread round about the Fire-place; for as the Fire keeps then warm in the Day, so they keep that warm in the Night. They have no Towns or Villages, but considerable Bodies of 'em clan together in a Place till they have burnt up all the Wood thereabour and then they change their Quarters.

THEIR ordinary Food is plain and fimple for when Fishing and Hunting

Their Food. fail, they live upon nothing but M kebick, that is a Spoonful of Parch's Meal with a Spoonful of Water, in the Strength which they'll travel a whole Day together; the delight in the Flesh of Deers, Bears, Rackoons, bu of all their Animals, the Moofe is the greatest Ra rity, this Beaft is as big as an Ox, has a Hea and Neck like a red Deer, but his Hair is long like an Elk, land he has a short Mane that run down his Back a confiderable Way; the Legs at very long, but it has only a short Bob for the Tail, the Reet are as large every Way as an Ox's; the Flesh is excellent good Meat, and the Native dry it, and keep it all the Year round, for they were not acquainted with the Use of Salt till the English brought it among them; the Skin makes very substantial Buff, and serves for a Garment of extraordinary Warmth and Defence. But then Feafts are the Bane and Ruin of their Stomachs, at which they value themselves upon leaving nothing; their Victuals are either boil'd or roafted, and they Jap great Quantities of the Broth both of Flesh and Fish; their Flesh is little more than half dress'd, but their Fish as always over boil'd. They are very fond of strong Liquors, and if they can get enough, will never leave of till

till they who Nur bein has Qua will

ufe n ry uf War a grefuch Grave most

Rem

fweep due C IN rent, Noftra tain ' Reme Powar of abo hot. for ab and p this do or Pr withou waits ions h ow V haked

berforr

Thou

till they are dead drunk; Mr. Denton fays, if they have not a fufficient Quantity to make the whole Company drunk, they will felect a certain Number in Proportion to their Liquor, the rest being Spectators; and if any is drunk before he has finish'd his Proportion (which is usually a Quart of Brandy, Rum, or strong Water) they will pour the Remainder down his Throat.

war

atte

then wit

the

OUD

then n the

: bu

Place

oun

nple

nting t Na

rch'd

the

chey but Ra-

Head

long

s an

; 1k

they Lehe

kesa

nt of their

achs,

ving

oalt-

Broth

more

over

e off

THEIR Health is firm, notwithstanding they use no Caution to preserve it; but on the contrary use violent Exercise in Hunting, and in their Warlike Expeditions; they are unacquainted with a great many Diseases that afflict the Europeans, such as the Palsy, Dropsy, Gout, Phthisic, Asthma, Gravel and Stone; but the Diseases which prove most fatal to them, are the Pleurisse, which all their Remedies can't conquer, and the Small-Pox, which sweeps away vast Multitudes of them, for want of due Care and Attendance.

INDEED their Skill in Phylick is very indifferent, for excepting two or three Methodof Caring the Sick.

tain Cases, they have but two
Remedies for the Sick, the Hot-house, or the
Powaw, or Priest; their Hot-house is a little Cave
of about eight Foot over, which they heat very
hot, and then go into it, and sweat and smoke
for about an Hour, after which they come out,
and purge themselves in an adjacent River; if
this does not cure them, they send for the Powaw,
or Priest, who sitting down by the sick Person,
without the least Enquiry after the Distemper,
waits for a Gift, according to which he proportions his Works, first calling upon his Gods with a
ow Voice, and then raising it higher, he beats his
haked Breasts and Sides till the Sweat runs down,
performing several magical Ceremonies, and playing
Thousand Antick Tricks over the diseas'd Person,

<sup>\*</sup> Le Hontan in Harris's Voyages, p. 9254

who, all the while the Invocation lasts shews hi Confent to it, by some few Words dropp'd every nor and then, and fometimes by breaking our into Strain of Musick along with the Perusual who length, when his Breath is almost gone, make use of that little that remains, in breathing three o four Times on the Face of the lick Person, and takes his Leave. If there be a Wound in the Cale after the Noises, Screechings, and Jabberings an over, he licks it, and at the same time gives the Patient ghoftly Advice; if the Poware finds hi Case hopeful, he tells him that Hobbamoko sent hi Diftemper upon him, for some Offence or other who if he calls upon him in his Diffress will sen him Relief: But if the Case be desperate, he the says that Kitchtan is angry, and all Diseases inflict ed by him are incumable.

WHEN they have any dead People to dispose of out of the Way, they take, inflest

Their Funerals, of Shovels and Pickaxes, great Stakes made tharp at one End and dig a Hole in the Ground, in which the lav a Parcel of Sticks a-cross, then wrapping w the Corps in Skins and Mats, they lay it upon the Sticks, and all the dead Person's Treasure with him; they then raise a Mount of Earth over all and while this is doing the Friends of the Decease express their Concern by hideous Screeks and How ings. When the first English Colony were looking out a Place for a Settlement, they found severa Indian Graves, one of which they open'd; the outfide Covering was Boards, under which was a Mat; next to that were Bowls, Trays, Dishes and then another Mat, under which was a Board about three quarters long, finely painted and carv'd; to this succeeded another Mat, under which were two Bundles that promis'd fomething more curious: the greater of these Bundles be ing open'd, discovered a large Quantity of a very

ı the WOO o in Cloth me Chi ere ! Was ith 1 MR hich hat th tting ach G e fur eive t ng th he ne aces wice e

ne a

o of

kull

ello

onfu

THI or feve ng, in Decease

nentat

ff the

irave

nay n

kith a

Vome:

ws hi

y no

vho

make

ree o

and f

gs an

es th

nt h

other

fend e the

nflia

[po

actea

grea End

the

ng w

n th

wid

r all ceást

Low

oking

vera the

. wa i∩es

Board

and

thing be

very

fine

31

ne and perfectly red Powder, of a strong, but a offensive Smell, and in this were the Bones and kull of a Man, the latter of which had fine ellow Hair upon it, and some of the Flesh unonsumed; together with these Relicks there was a the same Bundle a Knife, a Pack-Needle, and wo or three old Iron Things; all which were pack'd p in a Sailor's Canvass Cassock, and a Pair of Cloth Breeches; in the less Bundle there was the ame fort of Powder, and the Head and Bones of Child, about the Legs and other Parts of which, were Strings and Chains of white Beads, and by was laid a Bow of about three Quarters long, with some other odd Nicknacks.

MR. Denton, in his Description of Long-Mand. hich lies upon the Coast of New-England, says, hat the Indians there, bury their Dead upright, tring on a Seat, with their Gun, Money, and ch Goods as they had with them, that they may e furnish'd in the other World, which they coneive to lie Westward, with Materials for followng their Pleasure and Game. At the Burial, he nearest Relations attend the Corpse with their aces painted black, and visit the Grave once or wice every Day with bitter Howlings and Lanentations, till Time has wore the black Paint If their Faces, and afterwards, they visit the rave once a Year, trimming it up, that the Grass. nay not grow on it. They fence their Graves ith a Hedge, and cover the Top with Mats, to cure them from the Rain \*.

THEIR Mournings for the Dead continue or several Days, Night and Morning, in which all the Friends of the Mournings for Deceased bear a Part. In the the Dead. outhern Parts of the Country, the Vomen black over their Faces with a Mixture

of

Denton's Description of New-York, &c. p. g.

of Coal and Oil: When the Body is laid in the Ground they make a wretched doleful Noile fomething like that which is made by Can when any Number of them get together. It a fick Person happens to recover, there is mighty Joy; and because Sickness is always chargeable, when his Friends come to congramlate him upon his Recovery, they bring Gifts in

their Hands to help repair his Loss.

An Indian being dead, his Name dies with him no body prefuming so much as to mention it, it being reckon'd a great piece of Rudeness to the Friends and Relations, as if done on Purpose to renew their Grief! Nay, if any of their Acquaint ance bear the same Name with the Deceas'd, they immediately change it. Their Names are no proper Names, as among the Europeans, but every one assumes such a Name to himself as he likes, as Rattle Snake, Buck's born, &c. which lay them under very great Difficulties, because some times out of Respect to the Dead, they are forced to alter their very Language.

The laudable Custom of paying a Reverence to old Age is strictly observed, by Reverence to all the Indians in these Parts. The younger Persons will even do all mean Offices to excuse the Elder,

tho' they are Strangers, and have no manner of Acquaintance with them; but let a Man have no ver so many Years over his Head, yet he is not counted a Man, till he has signalized his Valour in some laudable Action worthy the Notice and Respect of all his Acquaintance.

Moons, and Winters, and by Division of Lodging abroad; they have made fome little Observation of the Stars, and as I observed before, always call

Charles's Wain, by the Name of Paukunnawaw, or the Bear,

or Nor in not a Mash ry tupon an, Place orm's

Bear,

ans h

ry, il carn I ha which hem, reat N

ng fil

f very aordiney ha

al, w gether ig Fire ether

This elieve ho mations ever ful, It with

e Moo od, in Vol. in th

Voile

Cats

is i

Iway

gratu

fts i

him

it, i

o the

ofe to

naint

as'd

e no

but

as he

lay

ome

Orced

rence

, by The

o all

Ider,

er of

e ne

not

lour

and

and

by

nade

tars,

call

ear,

Bear, which is the Name by which the Europeans have distinguished it. They have no Records, or Memorials of the Exploits of their Ancestors, nor is it possible they should, because they were not acquainted with the Use of Letters, the Dr. Mather says, there is a Rock or two in the Country that has unaccountable Characters engraved upon it: But to supply this Defect, as well as they can, they dig deep Holes in the Ground, in the Place where any memorable Action has been perormed, which they take care to preserve from beng filled up; so that as a Man travels the Counry, if he can but understand his Guide, he may earn the History of their Affairs.

I have not observed any Revolution of Time which they account sacred; all Days are alike with hem, which is a little strange, since there are reat Numbers of Priests, and among some of the vations, Houses that look like Temples; but this sustom is generally taken Notice of, that in Times I very great Want and Scarcity they offer up exaordinary Devotions to their Gods, and when hey have triumph'd over their Encinies, or gather'd in the Fruits of the Fields, they appoint a Festigether to sing and dance round about a rouzing Fire in the Fields, for sour or sive Hours to-ether.

THE Natives of New-England elieve not only a Plurality of Gods Religion. ho made and govern the feveral

ations of the World, but they make Deities every Thing they imagine to be great, powful, beneficial, or hurtful to Mankind. There with them, one God in the San, and another in Moon, &c. They believe Fire to be a kind of od, inalmuch as a Spark of it produces fuch re-

<sup>\*</sup> Harris's Voyages, Vol. II. p. 847.

markable Effects, and because Thunder and Lightning are very terrible, they pay divine Honours to them. But the Indians acknowledge a great Variety of Divine Powers, yet they conceive one Almighty Being who dwells in the South-West Regions of the Heavens, to be superior to all the rest; this Almighty Being, they call Kichtan, or Kawtantowit, who at first, according to their Tradition, made a Man and Woman out of a Stone, but upon some Dillike destroy'd them again; and then made another Couple out of a Tree, from whom descended all the Nations of the Earth; but how they came to be scatter'd and dispers'd into Countries so remote from one another, they can't tell. They believe their Supreme God to be a Good Being, and pay a fort of Acknowledgment to him for Plenty, Victory, and other Benefits.

THE Rev. Mr. Mahew gives this Account of

THE Rev. Mr. Mahew gives this Account of the Indians of Martha's Vineyard; "That they worshipp'd many false Gods, both in Heaven,

"Earth and Sea; that they had their Men Gods, their Women Gods, their Children Gods,

"Gods for their Animals, and for the Fruits of the Earth: That they had a great Veneration

"for the Devil, and endeavour'd to pacify him by

"their Sacrifices; to him they address'd for the Cure of their Diseases, and for Counsel in all

difficult Cases, having only an obscure Notion

" of a God greater than all, whom they called "Mannit, but they knew not what he was, and

therefore knew not how to worship him\*."

THE Immortality of the Soul, and a future State is universally believ'd among them; when good Men die, they say their Souls go to Kichtan, where they meet their Friends, have splendid Entertainments, and enjoy all Manner of Pleasures; when wicked Men die, they go to Kichtan Habita-

\* Letter to the Corporation for propagating the Gospel, O&; 23, 1652, page 2.

no away conto

boula

their tend their nocko.

omet Deer,

cult Come pure greate People Sight

to the

fellors
Defigi
Awe;
give o

Being other by the should

s the Worsh

of Dre fend w at pref

their c

ning

em.

riety

Al.

Re-

the

10

Fra.

one,

and

rom

th;

ers'd

they

o be

nent

t of

hey

ven,

ods,

ods,

ts of

tion

by c

the

all

tion

lled

and

ture

hen

tan,

En-

res;

rita-

tion

084

s.

no Answer from him but Quachet, that is, Walk noway, and so they wander about in restless Discontent and Horror for ever; when some of the English have talk'd with 'em of the Resurrection of the Body, all the Answer they could get from them was, that it was impossible, and that they should never believe it.

THEY acknowledge their Supream Deity Kichan to be altogether invisible, and their Priests do not so much as pre- Their Deities. tend to have seen him at any time;

but there is another Power which they call Hobbanocko, in English the Devil; who scruples not, as the Priests say, to appear to them in different Forms. fometimes in the Shape of a Man, sometimes of a Deer, and an Eagle, but most commonly in the Form of a Snake; to him they apply in all difficult Cases, for the curing of Diseases, and removing publick Judgments, and the People stand in greater A we of him than of Kichtan himself. The People are valtly ambitious of the Honour of a Sight of this Hobbamocko, but he never appears but to the Powaws or Priests, and the Paniese, or Counsellors of State, that is, to the Men of Intrigue and Delign, whose Business it is to keep the People in Awe; and according to the Accounts our English give of the Matter, the very Notion of this Evil Being was put into the Peoples Heads with no other Defign. But is it not strange, that People by the Power of Priestcraft, or any other Device, should be diverted and drawn away from the Worhip of a Good Being, who governs the World, and is the Author of all the Benefits of Life, to the Worship of an Evil One, meerly from a Principle of Dread and Terror, left in his Anger he should fend worfe Mischiefs upon them than those which at present they lie under? as Slaves do Homage to their cruel Masters, not because they love them, Om

but left by fuch a Neglect, their Servitude should be made more intolerable. But to make this Do trine go down the better with the People, the Priests have taken Care to represent their Kichia as an inexorable Being, that is, one whole Decree are irreverlible, to that if he fends an Affliction of Discase upon a Man, 'tis incurable ; all Medicine will be ineffectual, and all Applications to him, any other Being, infignificant. But Hobbamocko represented as one who by Sacrifices and Prayer may be appear d. Thus these Impostors give the People a far worse Notion of God Almighty that of the Devil, Many of the Indians have declared that within their Memories the Good Being Kid ton was much more invoked than at prefent : Bo our English Planters now tell us, from the Confe hons of the Indians themselves, that the Worth of him is almost worn out among them. In short the Genius of the People leads them to worship an Thing that is above them in Power, and able it do them any Hurt. These are their Deities, and they express a Reverence for them accordingly hence Fire, Water, Thunder and Lightning, nay even the Horfes, and great Guns and Musquets of the English were at first worshipp'd by some of them but the chief Object of their Worship, as I ob ferv'd before, is Hobbamocko. Anthroppi ban 4571

THE most zealous of all the Indians in their religious Superstitions, were the Sacrifices. Narrhagansets: They have large spacious Houses in the Nature of

Temples, which are frequented only by the Po waws; except at their Publick Solemnities, when vast Crouds of People resort thither, and offer the best of their Treasures in Sacrifice; as Skins, Hatebets, Kettles, and the like: All thefe are thrown by the Priests into the midst of a great Fire, and burnt to Afhes. Those that offer most liberally to wards these Sacrifices are esteem'd the wifest and most

noft

pen-

lymo

heir

he lik

T

iyen

Work

imfe

reacc

per

· W

wh

poi

hud

tog

OH

If h

feri

ing,

hav

E DIO

flat.

thei

dow

the

the.

1 45 7

this

mria

Fov

of

and

Pric

" and

to:

Mr.

fom

fon

nost devour Men; and so reputable is it to be pen-handed in the Cafe, that the Indians about lymouth Town told the English, they wish'd, for heir Sakes, that their Governours would appoint

he like Sacrifices among them.

hool

Doc

th

ichta

ecree

on o

icine

n, o

ocko

aye

e th

tha

lared

Kick

: Bu

onfel

rfh

hore

o an

ale to

and

gly :

nay

fthe

iem

lob

their

the

large

re of

Po

when

r the

kins,

OW!

and

y to

and

most

'Tis a diverting Account Mr. Denton has iven of the Indian Worship, who assures the but what World, that he has writ nothing imfelf has been an Eye witness to all, or the reacest Part of: He fays, " their Worship is perform'd but once or twice a Year, unless on forme extraordinary Occasion, as on making War, Go Their usual Time is about Michaelmas, when their Corn is ripe; the Day being appointed by the Powaw, most of them go a hunting for Venison. When they are affembled together, the Priest tells them what kind of Offering will be most acceptable to their God. If he wants Money, he tells them, no other Offering will be accepted, which the People believing, give according to their Ability; the Priest having received the Money, puts it into some h Dilhes, which he lets on the Top of their low flat-roofed Houses: He then begins to invocate their God with loud Voices and Outeries to come down and receive it, the People joining in the Clamour, beating themselves and knocking the Ground with Sticks at the fame time.

Manual they have wearied themselves with this Exercise, the Priest, by Conjuration, brings in any Apparition, fometimes in the Shape of a Fowl fomenmes of a Beaft, and fometimes of a Man; at which the People being amazed, and not daring to flir out of their Places, the Priest improves the Opportunity, steps out, " and makes fure of the Money, and then returns to lay the Spirit, who in the mean time (fays Mr. Denton) is fometimes gone, and carries away some of the Company along with him; but if

e any

es le

66 0

ce fe

" n

" T

ee ir cs th

The

the ]

fons,

ce In

« N

ec no

e to " da

" P

" te

" P " Si

et tha

" rel

ce fin

se of

e rec

from

Richa

gives

·· In

" E

" the

es for

" ad

" Th

" tai

" the

A

cu

any English People happen to come among them "at these Times, it puts a stop to their Pro-

"ceedings; they therefore defire them to be " gone, telling them that their God will not come

whilst they are there!! would not be

THEIR Powaws, or Priefts, are a subtile Ge. The Character of greedy of Riches, grasping at an their Powarus or absolute Power and Dominion over Priefts.

10 W the People from whom they require a profound Respect; and Reverence, as Person who have a familiar Acquaintance with the Deity, and who by their Bleffings and Curfings, vcan make Men happy or miserable in a future State, The People certainly believe that they can rail the Devil, and make him do whatever they bid him, except the superior Deity Kichtan interpoles: Dr. C. Mather seems to be of the same Opinion, by the Examples he gives us of their supernatural Influence on human Affairs. He tells us, "that they often kill'd Persons; caused Lameness and Impotency t, and thew their Art in performing feveral other things beyond human, by a "diabolical Skill; and this either by defining the Spirit they convers'd with, to do the Mischiel they intended, or by forming a Piece of Lea-"the like an Arrow Head, tying a Hair there " to; or using some Bone, as of Fish, edc. over "I which they performed certain Ceremonies, and then didmits'd cem to accomplish their Defires:

4. And fuch enchanted things (fays he) have most e certainly either enter'd the Bodies of those

whom they intended to afflict, or the Devil has form'd the like within their Flesh without any

" outward Breach of the Skin, which they have of good Reason to believe , the Powaws acknow-

gnigbel the Spirit, who in the mean time (it vs

and chirle \* Description &c. p. 8. + B. VI. p. 52.

them

Pro.

o be

come

MI-S

e Ge.

crue,

it an

over

quire

rfons

eity,

v can

tate.

raile

bid

nion,

tura

that

and

orm-

by a

the

chief

Ca-

ere-

ove:

and res:

noit

hole

has

any

ave

OW-

ing

" ledging it, and such things having been taken out of the Flesh of the Afflicted, or by the " seizing something of the Spirit (as the Devil " made them think) of such they intended to " torment or kill, while it wandred in their Sleep: "This they kept, being in Form of a Fly closely imprison'd, and according as they dealt with " this, fo it far'd with the Body it belong'd to." The Doctor goes on to give some Examples of the Power of these Powaws to do Mischief to Perfons, and cure them when they had done: "An Indian of Martha's Vineyard (fays he) whose " Name was George, having been tormented, and " now wholly impotent, his Friends advised him to the Pawaws, for a Cure; they being met, and "dancing round about a great Fire, the fick " Person lying by, some of the Neighbours en-" ter'd the House, being persuaded that a great Powaw now called to cure, had bewitch'd the " Sick; they threaten him, that unless he would " cure the fick Man, they would burn him in "that Fire; after many excuses too long here to "relate, they took him up, refolving at least to " finge him a little; who no fooner felt the Heat " of the Fire near him, but the Sick immediately " recovered."

ANOTHER Relation which the Doctor had from Captain Thomas Dagget, now deceas'd, and Richard Sarson, Esq; Justices of the Peace, he gives as follows: The Justice being on an Island, where a bewitch'd Woman lay in great Extremity, and wholly impotent, the Powaws there having without Success endeavour'd her Cure, the Relations sent to Mariba's Vineyard for more famous Powaws, and the Justices were admitted to be present on certain Conditions: The Powaws went to dancing, and using certain Ceremonies usual in such Cases: One of the Powaws pray'd to his God, with such ar-

nis h

Vorle

access

o the

ed: l

nd on nd V Тн

can't

ind ha

heir A

reat r

ig to

hen 1

ave o

he Fai

nt of

f Mai

gethe

ot of

aves

ears a

Hair is

f gene

ortably Iusban

pport

e is

ever th

gain In t

ay the

ith be

Vife h

orm th

Mr. land,

ut any

y a Su

dent Defires and Fervency, that Captain Day-" get told me, had it been to the true God, it had been a Prayer exceeding most he had ever heard, " The Issue was, that they caught the Spirit in a Deer-Skin (as they faid) which entered the Woman; this, they faid, was the Spirit of an Englishman drowned in the adjacent Sound: "Yet it was then supposed the Powaw was by, who bewitch'd her: The Iffue was, the immediately recover'd: But the Powaw told her, unless the remov'd to Martha's Vineyard, the would again be fick; for being an English Spirit " he could not long confine it." Mr. Thomas Maybew of Martha's Vineyard, was likewife of the same Opinion. "The Mischief (says he) that the Powaws and Devils usually do to the common Indians, is both by outward and bodily " Hurt, and inward Pain, Torture, and Distraction of Mind; both which I have feen my felf. To " accomplish the first, the Devil does abuse the real Body of a Serpent, which comes directly to the Man either in the House or Field, looming, or having a Shadow about him like a Man, and " shoots a Bone (as they say) into the Indian's " Body, which fometimes kills him."

I SHALL leave the Reader to pass what Judgment he pleases upon these Relations; but, in my Opinion, they are so far from improving the Doctrine they are brought to support, that they carry in them the greatest Air of Juggle and Imposture in

the World.

MANY of the devout Indians dedicate their Children to the Gods, and educate them to the Priesthood, by debarring them from Sleep, and making them observe a certain Diet, &c. but of those who are thus dedicated, there are but few (according to their own Confessions) who obtain this

Detter to the Corporation for propagating the Gospel, 1652. 1. 4

Dag-

had

ard,

in a

the

fan

nd:

by, im-

her,

fhe

pirit

mas

of

hat

ily

ion

To

the

to

ng.

ind

m's

ig.

my

ine

in in

eir

he

nd of

W

in

115

Z.

his high Dignity of a familiar Converse with the Vorld of Spirits; nor are all the Powaws alike accessful in their Addresses to their Deities; nor o their Incantations and Ceremonies always succeed; however, the People are kept in Awe by them, and on all Occasions pay them a prosound Respect and Veneration.

THERE is one Perquisite of the Clergy, which can't find the Powaws of New-Engind have any Concern in, and that is Marriages. heir Marriages. The Indians keep a

reat many Concubines, which they choose accordng to Appetite and Fancy, and turn away again hen they please for the same Reason; but they ave one Wife, who is the supream Governess of he Family, and is kept during her Life: TheConnt of the Sachem is always ask'd in the Affairs Matrimony, and 'tis he that joins their Hands ogether. No Sachem will take a Wife, that is ot of a Birth equal to his. When a Woman aves a fingle Life, she cuts off her Hair, and ears a fort of a Veil upon her Head, till her lair is grown again. The Time of War is a Time f general Release to all Women that are uncomortably yok'd; for if a Woman has either a bad lusband, or one she can't love, she takes that pportunity to run away to the Enemy, where he is fure to be made welcome, for the Indians ever think they have Women enough, and fight gain such Prizes, oftner than for Sovereignty.

In the Case of Adultery the Husband puts aay the guilty Wife, or sometimes rests satisfy'd ith beating her severely; but what Remedy the Vise has against the guilty Husband, I can't inorm the Reader.

Mr. Denton observes of the Indians in Longland, that their Marriages were perform'd withut any Ceremony, the Agreement being made y a Sum of Money given to the Woman: After this this the Husband keeps his Wife during Pleasure, and upon the least Dislike turns her away and takes another: 'Tis no Offence for married Women to lie with other Men, provided they acquaint their Husbands, but otherwise 'tis sometimes punished with Death. An Indian may have two Wives, or more, tho' this is not very common. A single Woman before Marriage may lie with whom she pleases for Money; it not being contrary to their

religious or civil Customs\*.

on, whether Males or Females, they change their Names, as our Women here in England do a their Marriage; and when they perform any remarkable Exploit, they quit their present Name again, and assume another new one: It was a common Practice amongst the polite Nation of Antiquity, to augment their Names, by a new Title, on the Account of some extraordinary Performance; but to quit an old Name entirely, and take up a new one in the room of it, is a Cultom peculiar to the Natives of New-England.

The Indian Government is strictly Monarchical the Sachem or Prince having an absolute Power over the Lives of all his Sachem of the Lives of all his sachement.

Subjects: In all important Affairs he summons a Council of his Nobles, and Paniels or Counsellors, in which 'tis admirable to see the Majestick Deportment of the Prince, and the submissive Behaviour of his Servants, who after the have given their Opinions upon the Question, refer the Determination of it to the Prince, and never fail to applaud his Wissom, and execute his Order, without the least Hesitation.

THE

T

not c

gious

gene

the &

weig

the A Guar

hono

to be

likeli

up w

tion

little

are u

curio

in fue

they a

and m

to ren

ceptal

nistere

and in

o giv

its to

tions

comin

But th

ind d

Coura

comm

Reach

Weap

TH

rom t

whom

ofhis I

or fuc

· Ha

there is the local in Line-

<sup>\*</sup> Denton's Description of New-York, p. 10.

Harris's Voyages, Vol. II. p. 156.

THE Paniele or Counfellors to the Sachem are not only the wifest and most couragious Men that can be found, but Their Ministers generally of the largest Size too; of State, the Sachems never make War, or undertake any

fure,

takes

en to their

ished

es, or

lingk

n The

their

creti

their

do a

y re-

Vande

was a

ation

new

Per

, and

Cul

hical,

abio

JI hi

Hairs

miele,

e the

e fub

r they

1, 10

d ne

is Or

THE

weighty Bufinels without their Advice; and when the Armies march, they are always the immediate Guard of the Prince's Person. To keep up so honourable an Order, as the Paniese are esteem'd to be amongst all the Indians\*, they chuse out the likeliest and most promising Boys, and train them up with abundance of Care, and in the Observation of peculiar Rites and Customs: 'Tis not a little Hardship these Boys go through while they are under this Discipline; they abstain from all curious Meats, and drink the Juices of bitter Herbs, in fuch Quantities, as to cause excessive Vomitings; they are beat over the Legs and Shins with Sticks, and made to run thro' prickly Bushes and Brambles. o fender them hardy; and, as they fay, more acceptable to Hobbamocko; for these Paniese, or Minilters of State, are in League with the Priests; and in order to keep the People in Awe, are allowed o give out, that Hobbamocko makes frequent Viits to them, the our English in all their Conversations with them, never had the good Fortune of coming to any of their Houses, when he was there: But this is certain, that the Paniese, in all great and dangerous Attempts, discover a Boldness and Courage beyond that of the other Warriors; the common People firmly believe them to be above the Reach of Swords and Darts, and that no ordinary Weapons at least will kill them.

THE Nobles are either such as + are descended from the Blood Royal, or fuch on whom the Prince has bestow'd Part Nobles. of his Dominions with the Royalties;

or such whose Descent has been from Ancestors, who

Harris's Voyages, p. 858, + Mather, Book VI. p. 51.

THE Teomen are fuch as having no Title to No. bility, are yet elteem'd by the Prince. Tronger, as those that have a natural Right nady bee of living within his Dominions, and a common Use of the Land, and are distinguished by two Names or Titles 4 the one fignifying Sub ission, the other a Tiller of the Lands elds roomed BESTORS these there are a fort of Villains of ment cient Slaves among the them, and thefe are Villain fach who were originally Strangers and art of Foreigness, the they have lived in the Country for many Generations, they are in forme Measure subject to the Yeomanny, and are not allowed the Honour of attending the Prince in Hunting, or such like Exercises, unless call'd to it by particular Envous. But after all, no Subject has any Property in the Land he ules, the whole Tersitory being the Prince's Inheritance, and i any Man has occasion for a Quantity of Land, he goes porhe Sachem, and obtains his Leave to make ad in ordento leep the People, in Awe, graville ale THE Succession to the Crown is Hereditary - Alveys defcending to the elder Son, and Sweetfourd in safe of Failure of Male Iffue, to the the Crown. Female; but the Blood Royal is in fuch James III of Veneration samong them, that if Prince has Iffue by divers Women, that shall success as Heir, which is royally descended on both Sides the's wounger than the other Children i the Illu which they have by a Venter of less Quality than Princess, being accounted only Noble, not Royal If the Father dies before the Son or Daughter is of Age to succeed him, the Minor is committed to the Tuition of some able Counsellor, who manage the Affairs of the Country till the other is fit to March whole Descent has been from Arcestors, Mather, Book VI. p. 51. odw Harris's Fogages, p. 858. A Markey Lead VI. p. 51:

The HISTORY OF

not only the wifelt and mod cours-

take tl

Sachem

pend o

Know

nor, en

bours.

Тн

Tribut

ole, w

fome o

hey ar

ies, B

Deer,

Sachem

ng the

xprefi

Words

he Pr

nable

Trave

**Ferrit** 

nterta

Custon

her th

tav.

overe

he Sh

r Wi

p with

Dispos

ither o

TH

hey ca

flitt

hich

Toles

· M

who had, Time out of Mind, been elteem'd

fuch.

I

n'd

No-

pee,

ght and

D'all Sub-

nod f Or

are

gers

Med

¢:10

are

se in

to il Heet

hole

di

a che

nake

i bu

ary

and 100

fuch

if 4

ceed

ides

Litu

an I

oyal,

15 of

di M

nage

ic to

take

1

take that Burden himfelf. There are fome perty Sachems that are little Tributary Princes, and depend on the greater for Protection, without whole Knowledge and Confent they dare not make War. nor enter into Alliances with any of their Neighbours.

THE Revenues of the Crown confift in the Tributes of Contributions of the People, who bring Barkers of Corn, and Revenues.

fome of the first Fruits of every thing hey are Malters of; as Flesh, Fish, Roots, Beries, Beans, and the Skins of Beafts, as Mosse, Bear. Deer, Bever, &c. to one of the Paniele, whom the Sachem appoints to receive them, and then acquaintng the Sachem with it, he comes out himfelf, and expresses his Gratitude to his People by good Words, and some small Presents; with these Things he Prince's Table is plentifully furnish'd, fo as to mable him to keep open House for Strangers and fravellers; all fuch when they pais thro' their Ferritories go thither of Courfe, where they are intertain'd according to their Quality; but the Custom is always as soon as they come to tell whiher they are going, and how long they intend to tay. Besides this, the Sachem claims an absolute overeignty over the Seas; all that is stranded on he Shoar of his Sea-Coast is his, and all Whales. r Wrecks of Value floating on the Sea, and taken within any Part of his Dominion\*. In Time War both People and Estate are wholly at the Disposal of the Prince, and therefore no Tribute is ther demanded or expected at fuch Times,

THEY have a fort of Money among them, which hey call Wampant, and is a Parcel

f little Beads made of the Shells Money.

hich lie on the Sea Coast, with loles in them to string upon a Bracelet, whereof

amody at to great a Databate, and then happy of Mather, Book VI p. 51. † Mather, ibid.

some are white, and of these six go for a Penny; fome black or blue, and of these three go for a Penny; they have no Coin, nor are they acquainted with the Use of any sort of Meral, but tharpen all their Instruments with Stone.

In Matters of unjust or dishonest Dealing, they

Administration of Juffice.

proportion the Punishment according to the Number of Times the Delinquent has offended. For the first Crime he is reproach d with his

Villany after a very difgraceful Manner; for the fecond, he is beaten with a Cudgel on the naked Back; and for the third, belides a found Beating, he has his Nose slit, that all Men may know and avoid him. Now in all these Cases the Sachem is not only Examiner and Judge, but Executioner too; tis he that beats and whips the Malefactors, and when the Matter requires it, flits their Nofes. Murder is always punish d with Death without the least Favour, and the Sachem does this bloody Work himself: Indeed, if the Criminal be a great Way off, and can't conveniently be brought to him, the Sachem fends his own Knife, with which the Execution must be done, where it can't be done with his own Hand. But any Punishment that is not capital, the Indians will not receive, but from the Hands of their Sachems; they won't be beat or whipped by an Officer, but their Prince may do it to all Extremities, and they'll never offer to run away: Nay, for a Man to cry or flinch during the Time of his Correction, is reckon'd a more infamous Thing than either the Offence it felf, or the Punishment. Mr. Denton says, if a Criminal be condemn'd to die, which feldom happens, but for Murder, or Incest, the Sachem goes out in Perfon with a felect Company into the Woods in quest of him, (for they have no Prisons) and having found him, the Sachem shoots first, the at never fo great a Distance, and then happy is 3d Mather, Book VI & 51.

bide mother ities.

Dexter Officer TH f the ours : he Go

he M

nis ulu vell a own; heir C here, ncum

ior) a aid to hipful Reply. he Ifla romii

ented ecal yo rue, bi an't m re alu

THO f abo et the f one Comm ave fo able o s Maf

ery li or the Words ignifie

Verrit Killi,

North I

Name 2

11158

ay;

ra

acbut

ord.

the the

his

e se-

ck;

has

oid not

00 :

and les. the ork

Vay the

ecu-

his

not the

hip-

ay:

ime

2011

Puba ba

Per

s -10

and tho

by is

he Man that can shoot him down, who for his Dexterity is made a Captain, or some military. Officer.

THE Indian Princes have a Sovereign Contempt of the limited Authority of the English Goverjours; one of them coming to make Mr. Mayhew, he Governour of Martha's Vineyard, a Visit with his usual \* Attendance, which were eighty Persons vell arm'd, being admitted into the Room, fat lown; and Mr. Maybew coming in, according to heir Custom took no Notice of the Prince's being here, (it being with them, in Point of Honour, ncumbent on the Inferior to falute the Supeior) after some Time past in Silence, the Prince aid to Mr. Maybew, Sachem, i. e. Noble or Worhipful, are you well? To which after a friendly Reply, and treating of feveral Things relating to he Island, he ask'd a Favour, which Mr. Maybers bromised, adding afterwards, if the Inhabitants conented; to which the Indian reply'd, Wby do you ecal your Promise? What I promise or speak is always rue, but you English Governours can't be true, for you an't make your Words nor Intentions true; but mine re always true, for I make them true.

Tho' the Indians of New-England are made up

f above twenty different † Nations,

et they seem originally to have been Language

f one Language, but for want of

Commerce and Correspondence among themselves, ave form'd different Dialects, so as not to be capable of understanding each other; but a Man that is Master of any one of the Languages may, in a very little time, be able to converse with them all, for there is a great Affinity between many of their Words; as for example, Nuppaw, Duppaw, Ruppaw, ignifies the Sun; Attik, Abtooque, a Deer; Wennit, Verrit, Good; Pum, Pumme, Pim, Oil or Fat, in

Mather, Book III p. 193. + Ibid.

feveral Dialects. There is a Letter or two in our Alphabet which the Indians have not in their they cannot pronounce the Letters L and R, except in the North, where the Indians, who have a peculiar Dialect to themselves, pronounce an R when an N is pronounced by the other Nations: But their Alphabet be short, I am sure some of the Words composed out of it are long enough; one would think it impossible to commit them to Momory; for Instance,

Nummatchekodtantamooonganuunonash
Signifies in English, Our Lusts.
Noowomantammooonkanunonnash. Our Loves.
Kummogkodonastoottummoottiteaongannunuonash.
Our Question.

There will certainly be no Occasion for more Examples to convince any reasonable Person of the Barbarity of this Language, or of the Herculean Labour of making one's self Master of it; especially when we add, that it has little Affinity to, or Derivation from any of the European Language that we are acquainted with.

Upon the whole, these barbarous Indians are a lively Image of human Nature, without the Improvement of Art and Industry; for the they have inhabited the Country for several Ages, they are but where they were at first; a Bow and an Arrow headed with the Bone of a Fish, are all their Weapons; the Skin of a Beast is their Clothing, and the Flesh of it their Food; they have no Learning nor Letters; it is only Necessity that puts them upon Hunting, Fishing, or making Bows and Arrows; their Diversion consists in extravavagant Dancings; Hoopings, and Howlings; Nature had given them a tolerable Complexion, but they have spoilt it by daubing themselves with certain

awn and east endu All chief them ftinct of Co to be fame and t of Co them Value grow! heir

their

others

conve

of Eu

certa

You

certain Oils and Juices, which has made them awny. Their Women are strong and masculine, and support the Pains of Child-bearing without the least Groan; they are swift of Foot, and capable of enduring a great deal of Fatigue and Hardship: All their Ambition is to be valiant; 'tis that chiefly which gives a Man Reputation among them, for there is hardly any other Mark of Difinction among the common People, but the Men of Courage or Poltroom; our Voyagers own them to be quick enough of Apprehension, but at the fame time, crafty, timorous, fickle, revengeful and thievish; so ignorant were they of the Nature of Commerce, when the Europeans first traded with them, that they parted with things of the greatest Value for Bagatelles and Trifles; but now they are grown wifer, and will drive as good a Bargain as heir Neighbours; many of them have left off their favage Way of living, and no doubt but others will follow their Example when they have convers'd a little longer with the trading Nations of Europe. No.

LAND A HOUSE HOUSE A PROPERTY

Control Jeof Statistical from telling it the of ratios of passing to be the

The live worse that is seem to be similar

be to very five the term, leave to exceed the

below the control of the control of

Black or 17 from Basel Amelians Land

soundly treating which there were no be-

Shiple and Late Hope are there a manager and

To the state by the by the property of the contract of the con

didning a comparate of a section size

+30 Secretary was the track of the second section by

the second second second second TO THE SECTION PROPERTY WAS TO

You. I. CHAP.

heirs

xcep Pecu

when But i

f the On

Me

ves.

Ex

f the

ulean

ecial. 01

age

gre

the

they

they

d an

e all othhave

that

ring

ex-

ngsi

ion, with rtain

## regio Olis and Laioes, which CACKET LEGISLAN

## morbuler-division supplied free free free free the CHAP. II.

The self-one of the distribution of the total of the self-one A Short Account of the Sufferings of the Puri tans, in the Reigns of Queen Elizabeth, and King James I. Of the Original of the Brown ists. Their Principles. Their Suffering Their removing themselves into Holland, where Mr. Robinson laid the Foundation of the Independent Church Discipline, as it was afterwards practifed in New-England.

HE first Settlements in New-England were a Confequence of the T Disputes which attended the Reformation of Religion in England; we must therefore look back to the Hi-

story of those Times, in order to trace them down from their Original, and discover the various Steps

by which they were at last accomplished.

THE Persecution which Queen Mary raised against the Protestants, forced great Numbers of them to leave their Native Country and retire with their Families into those Parts of Germany and Switzerland, where the Reformation had obtained; and the Magistrates would allow them Places for the free Exercise of their Religion: Here they had an Opportunity of observing the Discipline of the first Reformers, which some of them admired, and others as much undervalued and despised. The Congregation at Frankfort, copied after the Church of

Geneva,

Geni

very Straj Edw catio

been

Man wher And

fealir

Cong

for t

vice-

Com

That

the

them Chur bear

the :

that :

Coun

returi felves

as wa

the P

lived.

fying

ces fo

and c

could

afterv

the 1

temp

accord

quick

for be

Pomp

U

Geneva, and submitted to a Discipline differing very little from theirs; but those of Bafil and Strafburgh, adher'd to the Service-Book of King Edward; and the Reasons they offer'd in Vindication of their Practice were, because it had once been the establish'd Religion of their Country: Many of them had subscribed to the Use of it, when they accepted of Livings in the Church: And besides, their Brethren in England, were now fealing the Truth of it with their Blood. The Congregations of Frankfort and Geneva, argued for themselves on the other Hand, That the Service-Book of King Edward, was drawn up in Compliance with the Necessity of the Times: That it retain'd too many of the Superstitions of the Church of Rome: That the Authors of it themselves designed a further Reformation in the Church of England, as foon as the Times would bear it; for the Truth of which they appealed to the Book itself, in which there is a Prayer to that Purpose: That they were now in a Foreign Country, and uncertain whether ever they should return home again, and therefore thought themselves at Liberty to agree upon such a Discipline as was most agreeable to the Word of God, and the Practice of the Churches amongst which they lived. But these Reasons were so far from satisfying the other Party, that after several Conferences for an Accommodation, they parted in Anger, and carried their Resentments so high, that they could hardly ever live in Charity with each other afterwards.

Puri

an

wn

ing

and:

on of

25 it

and.

Eng-

the

efor-

we

Hi-

own

teps

d a-

hem

heir

zer-

and

the

had

the

and

on-

of

va,

UPON Q. Elizabeth's Accession to the Crown, the Exiles came home with Resolution to attempt the Reformation of the Church of England according to their several Models, but the Queen quickly let them fee what they were to trust to, for being a Woman that affected a great deal of Pomp and Ceremony in Religion, and having been

E 2 educated

for

VOC

Po

Αć

and

be i

and

ma

I

thu

the.

tha

at f

Chu

and

Cle

upo

was

ty u

Par

brin

an e

the

and

Dut

agre

Whice One " fo

er p

med

com

Mar

quel

as I

Chr

educated all along with Prince Edward, the was prejudic'd in favour of bis Service Book, and refolved to reduce the Reformation of the Church of England, as near as possible to that Standard. Some few Alterations, indeed, were made in the Book, but chiefly in favour, of the Roman Catholicks, and feveral Passages which gave them Offence were struck out, by the Advice of Dr. Parker, Grindal, and Cox, who were appointed to revise it; after which, it passed into a Law, and became the establish'd Religion of the Church of England, The Puritans struggled hard for the laying aside the Popist Vestments, or at least, for making the Use of them in Divine Service indifferent, but they could obtain nothing; the Queen was inflexible, and would be obeyed.

THE first Set of Protestant Bishops after the Queen's Accession to the Crown, being made up chiefly of such as had been Confessors for Religion, were Men of moderate Principles, and shewed a great Regard to tender Consciences : They complied indeed with the Ceremonies, but were very far from approving them. Dr. Horn, Bishop of Winchester, in a Letter to Bullinger, writes, "That " the Bishops had no Hand in making that Ad of Parliament which established the Vestments, and that they were in doubt, whether they should defert their Ministry or obey the Law." Grindal calls God to witness, " that it did not lie at their Door, that the Habits were not quite taken as way;" and in several of their Letters to the foreign Divines, they invested not only against the Habits, but against Musick in Churchest, the Gross in Biptism, and the Abuses of the Ecclesiastical Courts, which they promise to declaim against, till they were fent back to Hell, from whence they came; several Attempts were made in Convocation

<sup>10 1820 16013 6</sup> bolonts und nameW a galod W. Strype's Life of Archbilhop Parkers p. 1942 - By. Bund Hist. keform. Part 3. p. 3140

Was

efol-

h of

ome

ook,

and

were

ndal.

hich.

Re-

itans

Veft-

them

ob-

rould

the

e up

ligi.

hew.

Chey

were

Thop

**T**hat

Act

ents.

ould

indal

their

en a-

the

t he

Groß

tical

till

hey

tion

for

urnet

for the Redress of these Grievances, but the Convocation and Parliament too, had given away the Power out of their Hands, by a Clause in a late Act, whereby the Queen was authorized to Ordain and Publish such farther Rites and Geremonies, as should be most for the Reverence of Christ's body Mysteries and Secraments. And when Application was made to her, she declared roundly against all Innovations.

But the' the Preferments of the Church were thus thut against All that would not comply with the Queen's Injunctions in every thing, yet some of those that refus'd to wear the Habits were conniv'd at for the prefent, and fuffered to preach in the Churches, as Coverdale, Sampson, Fox, Lever, Humpbrys and others. No Subscriptions were requir'd of the Clergy, except to the Articles of Religion agreed upon in the Convocation of the Year 1562; nor was any great Stress laid upon an exact Uniformity in the Rites and Ceremonies of Divine Service. till some time after, But in the Month of January 1564-5, the Queen writ a Letter to Archbishop Parker, requiring him to take effectual Measures to bring the Clergy throughout the whole Kingdom to an exact Uniformity in Matters of Religion, laying the Blame of the Diforders in the Church on his, and his Brethrens Remissness in not doing their Duty. Upon this, the Bishops met together, and agreed on certain Orders relating to the Clergy, which were publish'd the 24th of March following. One of them was this; '5 That all beneficed Perfons should subscribe to the Use of the Surplice and Common-Prayer-Book in all Divine Administrations." Upon refusal of which they were immediately to be sequestred, and if they did not comply within three Months, to be ipfo facto deprived. Many of the Puritapical Ministers were first sequestred by this Injunction, and at last deprived, as Dr. Turner Dean of Wells, Dr. Sampson Dean of Christ-Church, and about thirty-seven of the E 3

when

fer'd

Diffil

the g

ner,

ters.

their

nent

and t

ed u

" Se

ee ed

ce, tic

" no

" pi

" eff

" (h

factor

hreat

cil li

again

thefe

of th

Peop

but f

and

witho

Supe

Purit

*fucce* 

of n

Que

unde

high

and f

his Şi afteri

verni

A

London Clergy, amongst whom were some of the most popular Preachers, whose Churches were shut up, for want of Conformists to supply them. But several others, either thro' the Connivance of some of the Bishops, or the Protection of some Great Persons at Court, made a shift still to keep their Livings in the Church.

THE Severity of the Queen and the Bishops, in pressing these Injunctions at this Time,

1566. gave rife to that Separation, which still divides the Church of England; for when the People could no longer hear their Ministers in the Churches without the Habits, some of them resolved to gather a Congregation of their own in private: and for this End, hired the Plumbers-Hall, under pretence of a Wedding, but in reality for the Exercise of religious Worship. About one hundred of them met there, and used the Geneva Service, but they were diffurbed by the Sheriffs, and fourteen or fifteen of them taken, and fent to the Compters feven or eight of these were brought the next Day before the Lord-Mayor, Bishop Grindal, Dean Goodman, Mr. Wattes, and other Commissionerst. The Bishop charged them with Lying, because they hired the Hall under pretence of a Wedding; and with condemning the whole State of the Church as it was reformed in King Edward's Time, for which many Good Men had laid down their Lives. The Prisoners answered for themselves with a little too much Freedom and Boldness; and were therefore all but one remanded to Prison, and kept there above a Year.

THE Parliament having at the latter End of the last Year taken into Confideration the 1573. State of Religion, order'd a Bill to be brought in for the Alteration of some of the 39 Articles in favour of the Puritans; but when

Plerce's Vind. of Diffenters, p. 63. + Strype's Life of Grindal, p. 136.

f the

Chut

But

fome

reat

their

ops,

ime,

Aill

hen

s in

nem

nwc

ers-

lity

one

eva

ffs,

to

ght

un-

m-

ig.

ité-

Ps

vn n-

d-

to

10

ie

e

C

t

n

when some of the Members of both Houses confer'd with the Archbishop'about it, he signify'd his Diflike, and immediately laid the Matter before the Queen, who, according to her arbitrary Manner, fent and forbad their medling with those Matters. Immediately upon this the Bishops revived their Severities against the Puritans; several eminent Ministers were sent for before the Council. and the Ecclefiaftical Commissioners, and examined upon these Articles; "Whether the Book of " Service was good and godly, every Tittle ground-"ed upon holy Scripture? Whether the 39 Ar-"ticles were agreeable to the Word of God or onot? Whether they must of necessiry follow the " primitive Church in fuch things as are used and "establish'd or not? And whether all Ministers " should be equal?" And for not giving satisfactory Answers, many were cast into Prison, and threatned with Banishment. The Queen and Council likewise publish'd two severe Proclamations against all that were of the same Principles; but these Methods were so far from healing the Wounds of the Church, that they widen'd them; for the People would not defert their filenced Ministers. out followed them into the Fields, and Woods and private Houses, where they could meet, without the Notice and Observance of their ored, for which many Good Men had ha seroispens

AFTER the Death of Archbishop Parker, the Puritans enjoy'd a little Rest, for Dr. Grindal, who succeeded him in the Archiepiscopal See, was a Man of moderate Principles, and would not go the Queen's Length in every thing; but he soon fell under her Displeasure, and her Resentments ran so high against him, that he was confined to his House, and sequestred for Six Months, and the he made his Submission, yet the Queen never respected him afterwards, nor had he any great Share in the Go-

vernment of the Church as long as he liv'd.

E 4

UPON

Upon Grindal's Death, Dr. Whitgift, Bishopol Worcester was translated to the See of Canterbury; he was a Man of a fevere Temper, a stiff Maintamer of the Ecclefiastical Policy of the Church, an implacable Advertary of the Puritans, and one who had not only drawn his Pen against them, but given fufficient Proofs of his Inclination to destroy them with the spiritual Sword, when it should be put into his Hand. The Queen, upon his Advance. ment, ordered him to restore the Discipline of the Church, and Uniformity in the Service of God, which through the Connivance of the Prelate, the Obstinacy of the Puritons, and the Power of fome of the Nobles, had been very much neglected: The Archbishop immediately, in the very first Year of his Confectation, with the Advice of his Brethren in Convocation, publish'd three new Articles, which all the Clergy were oblig'd to subscribe.

First, " THAT her Majesty under God bath, " and ought to have the Sovereignty and Rule over all Persons, born within her Realms, Do-

" minions, and Countries, of what Estate, either

" Ecceliaftical or Temporal, foever they be; and " that no other foreign Power, State, or Poten-

tate hath, or ought to have, any Jurisdiction,

" Power, Superiority, or Preeminence, or Au-

thority, Ecclefiaftical or Spiritual, within her

"Majefty's faid Realms, Dominions, or Councourties in 40,50 de 10 rules aous de grandisselve a misera

Secondly, "THAT the Book of Common-Prayer, and of ordering Bishops, Priests, and Deacons, containeth nothing in it contrary to the Word of God, and that the fame may be law-"Tally used, and that he himself will use the " Form in the faid Book prescribed in publick er Prayer,

\* Strype's Life of Whitgift, p. 115.

Pre and Thin Ar bill Cle Ye her alla

to 1 Th imes utely nless hem catio ende n Su ight i ho' N ift, al he Pr Great nd t

erced hemfe uspen them People

Petitio

Treasi

bey fe \* D,

Pastor.

. 111. Author of

† B.

Prayer, and Administration of the Sacraments,

Thirdly, "That he alloweth the Book of the Articles of Religion, agreed upon by the Archbishops and Bishops of both Provinces, and the Clergy in Convocation holden at London, in the Year of our Lord God 1562, and set forth by her Majesty's Authority. And that he believeth all the Articles therein contained to be agreeable to the Word of God."

The first of these Articles, the Puritans of those imes were willing to subscribe, but they absoutely refused Subscription to the second and third, nless they might have Liberty to explain uponhem; but the Bishop would admit of no Qualications, and fo great Numbers of them were fufended and deprived; Sixty four in Norfolk, Sixty Suffolk, Twenty-one in Lincolnsbire, Thirtyight in Essen, several in Kent and other Counties", ho' Mr. Strype t in the Life of Archbishop Whitift, afferts the whole Number of Recusants within. he Province of Canterbury to be but Forty-nine. reat Endeavours were used to move the Queen, nd the Bishops in favour of these Men. Many etitions came up from feveral Counties; the Lord Freasurer Burleigh, and Secretary Walfingham, inerceded for them, and at last the Privy Council hemselves entreated the Bishops to consider the poor uspended Ministers, if not out of Compassion to hem and their Families, yet for the fake of the cople of the Realm, who were deprived of their Pastors, being learned, tho' in some Points ceremonial, bey seemed doubtful only in Conscience, not in Wilfulsecolow attached to a constant with the mels.

hope

bury

Main-

burch.

d one

i, but

eftroy

ıld be

ance-

of the

God,

elates,

er of

eted: Year

hren

icles,

ath.

Rule

Do-

ther

and

ten-

ion,

Av.

her

un-

ay-

ea-

the

the

ick

er,

Dr. Calamy's Defence of Moderate Nonconformity, pt. 2d.

D. 111. taken from a Manuscript in the Doctor's Possession. The Author of the History of Conformity, printed 1689, mentions the same Manuscript, and gives the same Numbers.

B. 111, p. 156.

for u

on of

and t

conti

The

Tring

in go

alfo t

WHE

ivy C Pui

oufe o Mat

d for

clesia

Knee

rt the

s to b

faid #

the S

upo

ddle

ne ne et Pa

they v

o nev ur all

Example me

nguag

t had

m, w

the fa

ary's

nels. But the Archbishop instead of being formed by these Intercessions, resolved to go thro with the Work he had begun, and rid the Church of all that would not comply with his Terms; and to accomplish this, he went to the Queen, and prevail. ed with her to iffue out a Commission for Eccles. aftical Affairs to himself, the Bp. of London, and some others of the same severe Principles with himself, whereby they should have Power to frame Articles, and Interrogatories, and examine ex men Officio all suspected Persons. Accordingly they drew up 24 Arricles, which, as the Lord Treasurer writes, in a Letter to the Archbishop dated July 1, 1584, were to curioully penn'd, to full of Branches and Circumstances, as he thought the In-" quifition of Spain used not so many Questions to comprehend and to trap their Preys; that this " Juridical and Canonical fifting of poor Ministers, " was not to edify and reform; and that in Charity " he thought they ought not to answer to all these " nice Points, except they were very notorious " Offenders in Papility or Herefy;" and he adds, "that he had willed these Ministers not to answer "those Articles except their Consciences might " fuffer them." The Archbishop endeavourd to justify his Proceedings to the Treasurer, but he was fo far from being able to give him Satisfaction, that in a fhort Letter which the Treasurer writ back to him, he tells him that he would not call his Proceedings rigorous and captions, but they were scarcely charitable, and that he had Cause to pity the poor Men that fell into his Hands. The Lords of the Privy Council found no better Quarter with the Archbishop; for when they writ to him in favour of the deprived Ministers of Effex, he answered, that what † " he had done was

<sup>\*</sup> Strype's Life of Whitgift, p. 157. + Ibid. p. 157.

for the Peace of the Church, that the Acccusation of Severity was the least thing he seared, and that if he could but answer to himself the contrary Fault, he should think himself well paid. The same Severity, (says he) wherewith I kept Trinity College, and my late Diocess of Wigorn in good Order, for these Divisions do I now also use.

ed by

1 the

fiall

O SC.

vail.

cleft.

with

ame

mero

they

urer

94,

ran-

In-

s to

this

ers,

rity

nese

ous!

lds.

wer

ght

or'd

the-

on.

rit his

ere

to

he

ter

ey

of

vas for

WHEN neither the Treasurer nor the Lords of the ivy Council could obtain any thing of the Bifbop, Puritans laid their Grievances before the ouse of Commons, who passed a Bill, touching Matter of admitting Men into the Ministry, d for the Reformation of several Abuses in the clesiastical Courts; but the Archbishop fell upon Knees before the Queen, and begged her to supre the finking Church \*, and fuffer no Alteratis to be made in her Constitution, lest it should said that She had maintained an Error; whereupthe Queen reprimanded the House for incroachupon her Supremacy, and ordered them to ddle no further in those Matters. There were ne new Struggles in favour of the Puritans the r Parliament, which came to nothing, and they were given up to the Mercy of the Bishops, o never fail'd to profecute with the utmost Riur all fuch as fell into their Hands. The seve-Examinations of Puritanical Ministers that I re met with, are full of coarfe and abulive nguage, not fit for the Mouths of Bilhops; as t had not been enough to suspend and deprive m, without infulting and trampling upon them the same Time: How could these Gentlemen uplain of the Cruelties of the Papifts in Queen ary's Reign, when they were now acting the fame a

<sup>\*</sup> Fuller's Ch. History, B. IX. page 174.

for if

ens Co

ntinual

t of t

ver ha

TIS

ry uns

ngland,

ey allo

tition'

hich d

ncy faw nd pro

the C

ill Bl

them

Engl

Church.

Part of

THES

nown 1

Robert .

nan wh

Defence

n Anci

his Gra

im by

of Parli

be Prej

ritual or

ut for

a Gentl

n Ruth

furer C

Perfern

Christi

thods

fame Tragedy over again, upon Persons of a

Bur after all, the Zeal of the Archbishop his Brethren, had not all the Success they exped from it, for their levere Proceedings against Puritans, instead of reconciling them to the Church drove them further and further from it: The der of Bisbops began to be hated, and the People Compassion to the suffering Ministers, was re much raised; as thinking it hard, that Men Learning and Probity, and of the same Faith w themselves should be turned out of their Livin to beg their Bread, for the fake of a few Co monies, which their Adversaries themselves knowledg'd to be indifferent. It had been easy the Bishops at this Time to have put an End to Divisions of the Church, by yielding a little their weak Brethren, or following the Example the first Council of Jerusalem, which was to on the People no greater Burthen than the Oble vation of necessary Things; but these good M were wifer than their Predecessors, for it seem good to them to trouble the People for things the were not necessary; nay, so far did they process that in the 35th of Queen Elizabeth they obtain an Act of Paliament whereby the Penalties Non-conformity to the Church, were not wholesome Severities of Fines and Imprisonment but abjuring the Land, and in case of Reful Death . And yet notwithstanding all this, Number of Puritans encreased prodigiously und the Archbishop's Hands; they had their priva Affemblies in all Parts of the Country, they fett their Classes and Provincial Assemblies, and h a very great Interest both at Court and in Parli ment; but the Archbishop might thank himself so

Strype's Life of Archbishop Whitgift, page 417.

for if he had not by wracking and torturing ens Consciences without Form of Law, been atinually forcing honest and peaceable Men of the Church, the Body of Differers would wer have been so formidable as it was.

s of

hop

Xped

ainst

Churc

Che 0

People

as ve Men

ith w

Livin

V. Cei

ves

caly

l to t

ittle

mple

to h

Oble

dM

cem

gs th

OCCO

taine

ies

ot d

ment

eful

51)<sup>4</sup>

und

riva leta

l ha

arli

lf fo

Tis certain the Puritans of those Times were by unwilling to separate from the Church of instand, and seave their Preserments in it, for ey allowed her to be a true Church, and only ention'd for Indulgence in a sew Ceremonies shich did not affect her Constitution: But when sey saw the Bishops push things to an Extremity, and prosecute them with their Indignation, both the Church and out of it, it begot a great deal sill Blood, and alienated the Affections of some sthem to such a Degree, as to deny the Church such and the Lawfulness of joining in any art of her Worship.

THESE were the People who were afterwards nown by the Name of BROWNISTS\*, from one libert Brown, a fiery hot-headed young Clergynan who put himself at their Head, and writ in Defence of the Separation. He was descended of Ancient and Honourable Family in Rutlandshire; is Grandfather Francis, had a Charter granted im by King Henry the 8th, and confirm'd by Act Parliament, giving bim leave to put on bis Cap in be Presence of the King or his Heirs, or any Lord Spiitual or Temporal in the Land, and not to put it off ut for his own Ease or Pleasure. His Father was Gentleman of a considerable Estate at Toletborp m Rutlandsbire and nearly related to the Lord Trealurer Cecil; his Son Robert being delign'd for some Perferment in the Church, was educated in Corpus Christi College in Cambridge, and used to preach of the Ardibinap were refor

<sup>\*</sup> Fuller's Church Hift, B. IX. p. 167.

thods i

the La

watch'c

prison'd

their F

Zealand

travell'

of the

Way, a

little Co

fuch is t

Handfu

ions of

Parties

aftor f

oid of

o Engli

iples of

Dointor

ors eith

gener

l Engl rebbish

ourt,

hich v

reach\*c

Fuller

e was a

nded ot pref

diffoli

hich t

life w

d a Cl

was a

had

fornetimes at Bennet Church, where the Vehemen of his Delivery got him Esteem among the Co mon People. Bayly fays, that he was first School-Master in Southwark, and afterwards Preacher at Illington, which is not very likely, or fidering the Reputation of his Family. But first Place where he publish'd his Notions and veighed openly against the Discipline and Gerem nies of the Church, was in the City of Norwich which he was committed to the Custody of Sheriff of the County by Bishop Phreke, in the Year 1580, but at the request of the Lord Tre furer, he was brought to London, and having knowledged his Fault before the ABp. of Co terbury, was discharged. In the Year 1582, publish'd a Book call'd, The Life and Manners true Christians, for which ABp. Whitgift fent fe him into Cuftody to make answer to such Things he should lay to his Charge contain'd in the Book Brown confess'd himself to be the Author, bu denying that he was acquainted with the Public tion of it, and making a fort of Submission, at the Motion of his confrant Friend, the Treasurer, hewa dilmis'd again and sent home to his Father. H continued with his Father till the Beginning of the Year 1586, when the Old Gentleman grew was ry of him, and with the Leave of the Treasura turn'd him out of his House; all Methods for the changing his Principles, or making him conform able having been ineffectual: After this he travell'd up and down the Country in Company with his Affistant Richard Harrison, inveighing against Bishops, Ecclesiastical Courts, Ceremonies, ordaining of Ministers, &c. for which, as he afterwards boafted, he had been committed to 32 Prisons, in some of which he could not fee his Hand at Noon-Day. The Queen and the Archbishop were resolved to suppress the growing Faction, and fince gentle Me-

<sup>\*</sup> Diffusive from the Errors of the Times, page 13.

emen e Cor

first

rards

y, co

But t

and i

erem

of t

in d

Tre

ing a

F C

32,

ners

ent fo

ings

Book

r, bu

ablica

at th

he wa

· H

of the

WC

afure

or the

form-

vell'd

ch hi

gainst

ning of

afted,

me of

Day.

o fup-

Methods thods would not win them, to try the Rigour of the Law. Brown and his Congregation were watch'd fo narrowly, that many of them were imprison'd, and some put to Death. At last they refolved to leave the Kingdom, and remove with their Families to Middleburgh in the Province of Lealand, where (according to Fuller,) Brown had travell'd some Years before: They obtain'd leave of the States to worship God in their own Way, and Mr. Brown form'd a Church, out of his little Company, according to his own Model. But fuch is the Mifery of all human Affairs! When this Handful of People were deliver'd from the Opprefions of the Bishops, they crumbled into so many Parties among themselves, that Mr. Brown their Pallor foon grew weary of his Office, and being oid of all true Courage and Constancy, he return'd England in the Year 1589, renounced his Prinples of Separation, and was preferr'd to the Recbry of a Church in Northamptonshire: Fuller is of Dinion, that he never formally recanted his Erors either by Word or Writing, but only promis'd general to comply with the Orders of the Church England; however, by the Connivance of the rebbishop and the Favour of his great Friend at burt, he enjoy'd his Parsonage as long as he liv'd, hich was till the Year 1630, tho' he hardly ever each'd a Sermon in his Pulpit all the while. Fuller adds, that to his own personal Knowledge, was a Man of a proud and imperious Nature; ofnded if what he faid in common Discourse was of presently received as an Oracle, that he lived diffolute Life, far from the Sabbatarian Strictness hich his Followers pretended to, that he had a lie with whom he had not liv'd for many Years; da Church in which he never preach'd; that tho' was against the Lawfulness of paying Tithes, yet had the Conscience to take them: Upon the

Book IX. p. 168.

e of

of Go

elves

e gat

nade her, a hemse

Gospel

duding

rerfics.

preach

nd fer

nd Pr

ome o Priefile

n ind

other

Autho

he Sac

could d

hey m

Place,

of their

Limits

wild n

or bay

own So Liberty

Exhort

Sermor

resion t

in a W

of the

Power

to choo

whole Mr. Brown appears to have been a Man good Parts, but proud, conceited, extreamly partitionate, and uncharitable, which brought him last into a Gool; for quarrelling with the Constable of his Parish about the Payment of a Rate, a struck the Officer in his Passion, for which he was furnment defore Sir Rowland St. John, a Neighbouring Justice of Peace, and committed to North ampton Prison; the decrepit Old Man not being able to walk, was carried thither upon a Feather Bed in a Cart, where he fell sick and died about

the 81st Year of his Age.

The Revolt of Mr. Brown was attended with the Diffolution of his Church at Middleburgh, in the Seeds that he had fown in England were far from being destroy'd, that his Notions spread not only among the common People, but seven considerable Persons both for Learning and Probat openly espoused them: Sir Watter Raleigh, in Speech which he made in the House of Common in the Year 1592, when a Bill was brought in the House for banishing such as should be present at a Conventicle, tells us, that in his Opinio there were near Twenty-thousand of them then England.

THESE Brownifts did not differ from the Church of England in any Articles of her Faith, but the great Crime was the Separation, which they carried to such a length, as to deny the Church of England to be a true Church, and her Ministe to be regularly Ordain'd; the Discipline of the Church they look'd upon as Popish and Antichistian, and all her Ordinances and Sacraments invalid; hence they forbad their People to join with the Church of England in Prayer, Hearing, or any Par of publick Worship; nay, they not only renounce Communion with the Church of England, but with all other Protestant Churches, except such as should

<sup>.</sup> Strype's Life of Archbishop Whitgift, pag. 417.

e of the fame Model with their own. The Form f Government which they fet up amongst themelves was Democratical; when a Church was to e gathered. fuch as defired to be Members of it ide a Confession of their Faith before one anoher, and fign'd a Covenant, by which they oblig'd hemselves to walk together in the Order of the ofpel. The whole Power of admitting and exbiding Members, with the deciding of all Controrefices, was in the Brother bood. Their Church Ofers were chosen out from among themselves for eaching the Word, and taking care of the Poor; and separated to their several Offices, by Fasting nd Prayer, and the Imposition of the Hands of one of the Brethren; but they did not allow the Pridibood to be a distinct Order, or to give a Man indelible Character; but as the Vote of the otherhood made him a Minister, and gave him Authority to preach the Word, and administer he facraments among them, so the same Power could discharge him from his Office, and reduce im to the State of a private Man again. And as hey maintained the Bounds of a Church to be ogreater, than what could meet together in one Place, and join in one Communion, so the Power of their Officers was preferib'd within the same Limits; the Minister or Pastor of one Church ould not administer the Lord's Supper to another, or baptize the Children of any, but those of his wn Society. Any Lay Brother was allow'd the Liberry of Prophecying, or of giving a Word of Exhortation to the People, and twas usual, after sermon, for fome of them to ask Queltions, and reason upon the Doctrines that had been preach'd. in a Word, every Church, according to the Model of the Browniss, is a Body corporate, having full Power within it felf to admit and exclude Members, to choose and ordain Officers, and when the Good of the Society requires it, to depose them again, without Tarkow's of with Police

Man of the last of

ite, h he wa Neigh North

being eather about

d with b, but ere

fprea levera robit

, in nmon at int

e pro pinio hen i

Chura e the y car

erch of the

tichn inva

y Par

t with

without being accountable to a Classis, Synod, Convocation, or any Jurisdiction besides themselves.

Upon these People the Laws were executed with the utmost Rigour \*, their Books were pro hibited by the Queen's Authority, and two Par fons were hang'd at St. Edmund's Bury for ventur ing to difperfe them, Elias Thacker, June the 4th and John Copping. June the 6th, 1583. But not withstanding all the Discouragements they me with, they kept up their private Assemblies, the many Families were ruin'd by it: Nay, fo ze lous were they, that in Conjunction with som other Puritans, they purchased a Printing-Press, an by that means dispers'd among the People seven Satyrical Pamphlets against the Bishops: This, confess, would have been rude and unmannerly, the severe Treatment they met with from the Queen and Bishops had not in some measure made it necessary; for when Men are borne down will the Weight of Authority, and not allow'd to de bate their Cause before the World, tis hard they may not fo much as complain; Oppression will make a wife Man mad. But however, for of the Authors of these Pampblets paid very da for their Offence, as we shall see presently.

In the Year 1592, † Fifty-lix of the Brownsh were taken on a Lord's Day, as they were wor shipping God in the very Place where the Protestant Congregation used to meet in Queen Mary time; they were carried before a Magistrate, and sent two by two into the several Prisons in an about London. Some of them by long Imprison ment were almost starved, others, after two Year Imprisonment, were banished, and three or sou hanged. Barrow, who was himself a Brownist, and suffered Death for it, says in his Supplication to the Parliament, "the Fifty-six taken in London" were committed unbailably, by the Bishop.

Lim Com Lion fuffe for t purp they. fome this bout fon, the c then tenan and ' thefe undo a lan Serva their ing c able

of I

of w Cafe, us, fr espec

Chile

omit crave die o

Nati Maje der'd

Cold

we b

Fuller, B. IX. p. 169. + Barrow's Supl. to the Parliament

ves.

coure

re pro

o Pa

rentu

ie 4th

or not

y m

o ze

fon

/s, an

(even

his.

erly,

m th

mag

n wit

to de

ard

reffic

fon y dea

Sweet

WO

Pro

Lary

e, an

n an

rison

Year

r fou

t, and

on to

sondo

lifhor

iament

of London, close Prisoners in Bridewell, the Limbo, or Dungeon in Newgate, the Fleet, the Compters, the Clink, the Gateboufe, the White Lion. These bloody Men, says he, will allow them neither Meat, Drink, Fire, Lodging, nor fuffer any whose Hearts the Lord would ffir up for their Relief, to have any Access to them, purposing belike to imprison them to Death as they have done 17 or 18 others in the fame noisome Goals within these 6 Years. Some of this Company, fays he, had not one Penny about them when they were fent into close Prison, nor any thing, being abroad, (which is the case of most of them, if not of all) to procure themselves, and their poor Families any Maintenance, fave only by their handy Labours and Trades. Whereby it is come to pass, that these Enemies of God do not only starve and undo a Number of Men in the Prisons, but even a lamentable Company of poor Orphans and Servants abroad; their unbridled Slanders, their lawless privy Searches, their violent breaking open, and rifling our Houses, their lamentable and barbarous usage of Women, and young Children, in these hostile Assaults, their uncontroul'd Thievery, robbing, and taking away of whatfoever they think meet from us in this Case, their unappeased and merciless Pursuit of us, from our Houses, Trades, Wives, Children, especially from the holy Society of the Saints, and the Church of God, we are enforced to omit, lest we should be over tedious. --- We crave for all of us but the Liberty either to die openly, or to live openly in the Land of our Nativity: If we deferve Death, it befermeth the Majesty of Justice not to see us closely murder'd, yea starved to Death with Hunger and Cold, and stifled in loathforme Dungeons; if we be guiltless, we crave but the Benefit of our £ 2 "Innocence,

the

Que the V

been

out t

when

left b was t

believ

him i

a hi

" bu

" the

es the

er the

4 an

" Po

" fair

e tha

« and

" thi

" OF

" ed

he wa

Crimi

in his

to the

when

Divin

lished.

that w

Objec

her G

Place

narrov

And i

Treasi

"Innocence, (viz.) that we may have Peace to ferve our God, and our Prince, in the Place of the Sepulchres of our Fathers." But the Par liament took no Notice of the Complaints of the Sufferers, but left them to the Mercy of the Billion by whose Influence, as I observed before, three of

MR. Udall a Minister was try'd and condemn's in the Beginning of the Year 1591, for writing and dispersing a Libel \* against the Queen and the Church, which he called a Demonstration of the Disc pline which Christ hath prescribed in his Word, forth Government of the Church in all Times and Places w til the World's End. He absolutely defried himle to be the Author of it, but was caft by his Jury and the at the Instances of Some great Men, a in hopes of a speedy Pardon, he signed a Recar tation; yet he lay in Prison for above a Year, as there died about the End of the Year 1592. H was a learned Man, (fays Fuller) blameles for h Life, powerful in his Praying, and no lefs profit ble than painful in his Preaching.

Mr. John Peney Minister was feized in the Month of May 1593 t, in the Parith of Stepney, the Vicar of the faid Parish being the Informer; h Papers were feized and examined for Materials convict him, among which they found a Petito which, as was faid, he defigned to prefent to the Queen, wherein were contained feditious Word against her Majesty, and severe Resections on the Tyranny of the Bishops: He was convicted upo the Statute of 23 Eliz. Cap. II. and hurried awa to Execution the fame Month, being brought of of the Kings-Bench in Southwark in an Afternoon St. Thomas Waterings, where he was hanged. The Mr. Penry, by the Confession of his very Advert ries, was a Learned and Religious young Man, and

Fuller, Book IX. p. 221.

<sup>+</sup> Strype's Life of Archbifhop Whitgift, p. 419.

ace to

he Par

of the

Bilbook

4. 10

demn

writin

e Dila

for the

ices w

himle

Jury n, an

Recar

rofita

in th

ey, th

r; b

fals

etitio

to th

Nord

on th

upa

2 W2

ht ou

on t

Thi

verla

, and

th

the first since the Reformation of Religion under Queen Elizabeth, that preach'd the Gospel to the Welshmen, and would in all Probability have been an Apostle among them, if he had not been out to Death for his Disaffection to the Church. when he was no more than thirty Years old; he left behind him a Widow and four Children. Hard was the Fate of this young Man! for if we may believe his last Protestation, which he left behind him in Writing, he says . "That he never took " himself for a Rebuker, much less a Reformer; " but that in the Discharge of his Conscience, all " the World was to bear with him, "if he prefer'd "the Testimony which he was bound to yield to " the Truth of Jesus Christ, before the Favour of " any Creature. An Enemy to any good Order or " Policy either in Church or Commonwealth, be " faid, he never was. That whatfoever he wrote " in Religion, he did it simply for no other End, " than for the bringing of God's Truth to Light, " and he appealed to God, that he never did any " thing in this Cause for Contention, Vain-Glory, " or to draw Disciples after him, or to be account-" ed fingular." But befides, the Facts for which he was condemn'd would not have been accounted Criminal in another Man, for he declares farther in his Protestation at his Death, that the Petition to the Queen, for which he was to die, was writ when he was in Scotland, and partly as a Student in Divinity, that it was confused, unfinished, unpublished, and kept secret to himself; he pleaded, that what he had writ was the Sum of certain Objections made by others against her Majesty and her Government, which he had gathered up in the Place where he was, only with an Intention more narrowly to scan and examine the Truth of them: And in his last Letter which he wrote to the Lord Treasurer Burghly dated May the 22d, but a few

Strype's Life of Arcbbifbop Whitgift, p. 410.

Days before his Death, he has these affecting Words. "The Cause is most lamentable, so be, that the private Observations of any Student

of m

se ch

" de

« ag

" th

" of

" fca

" the

" the

u of

# po

" th

" to

Arch

and

Men

self d

as the

in A

End,

whic

as gr

the !

Deat

exect

coun

ruine

more

Puri

Chui

thip:

Bran

wher

upon

goin

accep

Prof

Iτ

B

in a Foreign Land, and wishing well to him Prince and Country, should bring his Life with

"Blood to a violent End, especially seeing the are most private, and so unperfect, as they have no Coherence at all in them, and in the most

"Places carry no true English." But his Enemie were resolved to have his Blood, and I hearth

wish it be not laid to their Charge.

ABOUT a Month before the Death of Penry Henry Barrow a Gentleman, and John Greenwood Minister, were executed at Tyburn on the like Ac count; they had lain in Prison ever since the Ya 1590 f, when Mr. Cartwright, and divers other P. rilans were taken into Custody, and brought before the Ecclesiastical Court and Star-chamber; but the Bishops politickly got these Men to be prosecuted in the Temporal Courts, and by Statutes of Parlia ment, that they might take off the Odium of the Death from themselves; but Barrow, who say thro' the Defign, makes no scruple to lay his own and Greenwood's Death at the Archbishop's Door The Prisoners had drawn up a Supplication to the Queen, representing the cruel Hardships they en dured in Prison, and praying her Highness to extend her Royal Compassion to them, and to their Wives and Children, who were ready to perilli but the Archbishop would not suffer the Supplication to be presented, but did every thing that lay in his Power to hinder the Knowledge of their Sufferings from coming to the Queen's Ear; where upon, in a Letter 5 which Barrow writ to one Mr. Fisher, he complains bitterly of him in these Words; "The Arcbbishop, says he, having sent to " many Men to divers Prisons, to stop the Clamours

Strype's Life of Archbifbop Whitgift, p. 413. + Ibid. p. 415.

affecting ble, fay Studen If to his Life with ling they he most Enemie heartil

Penry
en wood
ike Ac
he Yea
her Pa
t before
but the
fecutor
Parlia
of their
ho fav
is own

to the to ex-

cation lay in r Sufwhereo one

these ent so Cla-

nours . 415.

" mours of the People against him, has posted " these Things to the Civil Magistrate; He has " destin'd me and my Brother Greenwood to Death " against the Holy Feast, the rest to close Prison, " their poor Wives and Children to be cast out " of the City, and their few Goods to be confi-" scated. Is not this a Christian Bishop? Are " these the Virtues of him that taketh upon him the Care and Government of all the Churches " of the Land, thus to tear and devour God's " poor Sheep, to rend off the Flesh, and to break "their Bones, and chop them in pieces as Flesh " to the Cauldron?" Mr. Strype, the Writer of Archbishop Wbitgift's Life, calls these passionate and angry Expressions: But if the Case of these Men was as I have represented it, and as he himself does not deny, I think the Language is as soft as the Cause will bear. They were put to Death in April 1593, and made a very godly and pious End, praying earnestly for the Queen and the State; which when the Queen understood by Dr. Reynolds, as great an Enemy as the was to their Principles, the repented that the had given way to their Death.

Besides these, there was one William Dennis executed at Theisord in Norfolk on the same Account, and a great many poor Families utterly ruined by severe Fines and Imprisonments.

Ir must be confess'd, that the Brownists were more exposed to Sufferings than the rest of the Puritans, because they held it unlawful to go to Church, or join in any part of the publick Worship: They apprehended the Hierarchy, in all the Branches of it, to be Antichristian; and therefore when a Pardon was offer'd Barrow and Greenwood, upon Condition of their being conformable and going to Church, they chose to die rather than accept it upon those Terms. But the continual Prosecutions the Brownists underwent in the Eccle-

F 4

fiaftical

) geen

o give

her ti

f mo

Chorch

Writer

ntenti

Procee

earni

and by

er Al

Ground

TH

Scene

Affairs nifters,

whilst

Pleafu

never v

into fu

his De

and V

on furi

wonder teries o

tree L

In

fevere

" In t

" hun

" priv

or c

" Cou

out the

World

Some d

oppref

The lice!

fiaffical Commission-Court and the Star-Chamber, made them refolve at last to quit their Native Country, and retire to some Place, where they might enjoy the free Exercise of their Religion, without the Hazard of their Lives. Pursuant to this Resolution several Families settled at Amsterdam, about the End of the Century, formed themselves into a Church. and chose Mr. Johnson for their Pastor, and after him Mr. Ainsworth, Author of that excellent Commentary on the Pentateuch, which thews him to have been one of the most learned Men of his Age. This Church, tho' at first it had like to have been torn in pieces by intestine Divisions, yet afterwards flourished under a Succession of Pastors and Teachers for above an Hundred Years.

THE Puritans in the mean time were very still and quiet at Home, waiting for the Succession of King James to the Crown, from whom they had great Expectations of a Reformation in the Church, he having been bred a Presbyterian, and publickly declared the Kirk of Scotland to be the purest Church in the World. 'Accordingly on his Accession they presented him with a Petition for redress of their Grievances, figned by almost a Thousand Hands, and the King condescended so far to them, as to appoint a Conference at Hampton Court: But alas! they foon found that he had changed his Religion, if ever he had any, with his Country; that the Bishops had got him entirely into their Interests; and confequently that no Alterations of any Moment were to be expected from him. But there Convulsions in the Church, from a Party that the Archbishop thought he had crush'd, struck him with such Surprize and Astonishment, that he laid it to Heart, and dy'd with meer Grief and Concern of Mind about eleven Months after the Queen, ons care in might when your supplies he Locke

made

intry,

enjoy

t the

ution

e End

urch, after

ellent

him

of his

ce to

fions,

on of

ndred

ll and

King

great 1, he

y de-

urch

they

their

ands, is to

alas!

tion,

t the

efts ;

Mo-

hefe

the

him

laid

con-

een,

Dusen, and in the 70th Year of his Age, defiring a give an Account of his Bishoprick to God, raher than to Man. He was a good Man, but so most arbitrary and tyrannical Principles in the church, far from being such an Heroe as the late Writer of his Life has made him, unless a good intention will fanchify the most cruel and unjust Proceedings: He had a moderate Share of learning, according to the Times he liv'd in, and by falling on his knees before the Queen for her Assistance upon every Occasion, he kept his Bround against all his Adversaries.

THE Reign of K. James I. was one continued cene of Luxury and Eafe: He committed the Affairs of the State to the Management of his Miillers, and those of the Church to the Bilbons. shift he indulged himself in all the Diversions and Pleasures that a luxuriant Fancy could invent: He ever was a Man of Business; but at last he fell into such a stupid Indolence, that he seemed before his Death to have loft the very Remains of Honour and Virtues. The Perfecution of the Puritans went on furiously in his Reign: The King's Fancy was wonderfully pleased with the Applauses and Flatteries of the Bifhops, and in return he gave them free Liberty to vex and oppress their Brethren. In the Convocation in the Year 1604, several fevere Canons were made against the Puritans. "In the Year 1604, fays Mr. Calderwood, three "hundred Ministers were either silenc'd, or de-"priv'd of their Benefices, or excommunicated, " or call into Prison, or forced to leave their own "Country" which yet they could not do without the Hazard of all that was dear to them in the

oppress'd by the Bilhops about the Year 1607,

Altare Damele in Prof. W. Somie

World, as appears by the following Relation.

Some of the Separatiffs in Torksbire being very much

hired a Dutch Man then lying at Hull to can them over to Holland, who promis'd to take the in between Grimby and Hull; but they coming the Place a little too foon, the Officers of t adjoining Town, with a Body of Soldiers, can out to feize them : The Men made a shift to ge aboard in a Boat, but the Women were in a Bar that lay aground in a Creek at low Water. T Dutch Man perceiving the Disturbance that w ashore, weigh'd Anchor immediately for Zealan without staying for the Bark; the Women th bereav'd of their Husbands, were dragged from one Justice to another; and at last, for want Evidence of any Crime against them, dismiss The Men were furprized with a terrible Storm Sea, which lasted 14 Days, in 7 of which the faw neither Sun, Moon, or Stars: But at la they got fafe to their Friends at Amsterdam, a their Relations, some Time after, followed them

ARCHBISHOP Bancroft, who fucceeded Whiteff trod in the Steps of his Predecessor, orging Subscription with the utmost Rigour; till finding a many desert their Stations in the Church, he was forced to wink at them, and suffer them to kee their Places without subscribing over again. One may judge of the Spirit of the Governous of the Church in those Times, by the Profecution of Mr. Thomas Lad Merchant a Tarmouth, "Who was brought before the Chant cellor of Norwich for a supposed Convention of the Spirit of the Spirit of the Grant of Tarmouth, "Who was brought before the Chant cellor of Norwich for a supposed Convention title, because that he on the Sabbath-Day

" after the Sermons ended, sojourning in the House of Mr. Jackler in Yarmouth, who we

late Preacher of Farmouth, join'd with him is repeating the Substance and Heads of the Se

" mons that Day made in the Church, at which the Thomas Lad was usually present; and was force upon

Pierce's Vindication of the Diffenters, Part I. p. 174-

ing til his he afti

Cor Sig cha prif

" cou al Sir Man Lord's

nons
hat de
feiture
Th

in the fing of Purfui the Biff and jo Ways known

great I bire, of the I to affer them for ligious Smith

with the fundry the other the

Math

Carr

e the

ning

of t

, can

to g

a Bar

T

at w

ealang

n the

d from

want (

mis

orm

h the

at la

n, an

them

bitgiff

g Sub

ing

he w

o kee

agair

rnout

nt i

Chan

onven

-Day

in th

o w

ne Ser which

forc'

upo 74.

upon his Oath to answer certain Articles touching that Meeting, which he could not fee until he was fworn. And having answer'd upon his Oath twice before the Chancellor there. he was brought to Lambeth before the Ecclefiaftical Commissioners, to make a farther Anfwer upon a new Oath touching the fuppos'd Conventicle; which he refus'd to do without Sight of his former Answers, (because he was charged with Perjury,) and was therefore imprison'd by the Commissioners a long time, and could not be bailed." So that it was a moral Sin, in the Opinion of these Men, for a Man that had been at Church twice Lord's-Day, to repeat the Heads of the Sermons to his Family in the Evening; a Crime hat deserved Fines, Imprisonment, and the Forfeiture of all that was dear to a Man in the World.

THERE had been a Congregation of Brownists n these Parts ever since \* the Year 1602, who, being oppressed with Commissary Courts, Apparitors, Pursuivants, Subscriptions, and other Severities of the Bishops, separated from the established Church, and joined themselves by Covenant to walk in the Ways of Christ as far as they should be made known to them, at all Hazards. There were great Numbers about the Borders of Nottinghambire, Lincolnsbire, and Yorksbire, who, by reason of the Distance of their Habitations, were obliged to assemble in two different Places, and erect themselves into two distinct Churches, or religious Societies; one of which chose Mr. John Smith for their Pastor, who afterwards retiring with them into the Low-Countries, fell into fundry odd Herefies, and broke them to Pieces; the other chose the Reverend Mr. John Robinson for their Pastor, and Mr. William Brewster for

Mather's Ecclefiaftical History of New-England, Book. I. p. 5.

ances, and D

Donvo

of Diffriendl

any A free ( difallo

Engla

Prave

it nec

and

disco

Chur

Princ

guish

Bu

fome

their

from

or D

preh

folve

for 1

die (

to f

prot

who

the

corp leaf

hon

the

their Elder they met together in private House for seven or eight Years, but were frequent disturbed by the Bishop's Officers, and seven of their Members ruined in the Eccessiastic Courts; whereupon they resolved to leave the Kingdom; some of their Friends went over an settled in Holland, soon after the fruitless Success of the Hampton-Court Conference, in 1602; but in the Spring of 1608, the Persecutions under Archbishop Bancrost growing still hotter, Mr. Ribinson, Mr. Brewster, and the rest of his little Flock, went over and settled at Amsterdam, when Mr. Smith and his Church were already settled but the Flames of Contention having broke our amongst them. Mr. Robinson, and his Church prudently removed, and settled at Leyden 7, when with the Leave of the Magistrates, they hired Meeting-house, and worshipped God publicks in their own Way.

THIS Mr. John Robinson was the Eather of th Independents, being the first that beat out a midd Way between Brownifm and Presbytery; when came first to Holland, he was a rigid Brown but after he had feen more of the World, and con vers'd with Learned Men, he began to have more charitable Opinion of those that differ from him; and tho' he always maintained the Lawfulness and Necessity of separating from the Reformed Churches amongst which he & lived yet he was far from denying them to be mu Churches; nay, he allow'd the Lawfulness of Communicating with them in the Word an Prayer, tho not in the Sacraments and Dife pline; and would give Liberty to any Member of the Dutch Church to receive the Sacramen with him occasionally; he maintained to the last that every particular Church or Society of Christi ans had a compleat Power within itielf, to choose

Prince's Chronol of New Engl. p. 19, 20. + Ibid. p. 26.
5 Robinson's Apology for the Brownists, p. 7, 11, 35.

NEW-ENGLAND.

House

Quen

fever

fiaftic

ver a

Succe

unde

Ar. R.

is litt

when

ettled

ke ou

hurch

Where

hired

blick

of th

middle

nen b

ownis

d con

ave

liffer'

ed di

thol

lived.

e tru

es o

dan

Difci

mben

men

laft

hrifti-

hoole

113

p. 26.

wown Officers, to administer all Gofpel Ordiances, and to exercise all Acts of Authority and Discipline over its Members, and that confe mently it was independent upon all Classes, Synods, Convocations, and Councils is he allowed the Exrediency of Synods and Councils for the reconciling of Differences among Cherches, and giving them friendly Advice, but not for the exercifing any Act of Authority or Jurisdiction, or the imposing any Articles or Canons upon them without the free Consent of the Churches themselves: He disallowed of the Constitution of the Church of England as National, of their Liturgy and stinted Prayers, and of their open Communion, as thinking it necessary to keep out unworthy Communicants, and to have some Marks of the Grace of God discovered by those who desired the Privilege of Church Fellowship; and these are some of the Principles by which the Independents are diffinguished at this Day.

But when Mr. Robinson and his Church had been some Years at Leyden, they began to be weary of their new Settlement, not from any Disturbance from the Civil Magistrate, nor from any Quarrels or Divisions among themselves, but from an Apprehension that their Church must in Time be disfolved, and their Religion lost in a strange Land; for many of their substantial Members began to die off, and few or none came over from England to fill up their Places; they had no Hopes of propagating their Principles among a People whose Language they did not understand, but on the contrary, were like to be fwallowed up by them, their Children beginning to marry and incorporate with the Dutch. There was not the least Prospect of a Reformation of Religion at home, or a Toleration for such as dissented from the Establishment. These Considerations made them unanimously resolve (after many Days of

The HISTORY of Prayer for Counsel and Direction from Heaven to transport themselves and their Families into some Part of America, under the Protection of the King of England, provided they could obtain a Patent for the Lands they should possess, and fufficient Security from the Crown for the free and undisturbed Exercise of their Religion. in ill Advice, but not for me constitut any the supposition for the bid of the imposing of Littles or Colons upon them without the in Content of the Churches throughlyes: The falleways of the Carriqution of the Church of the state of their Laurey and Rinted payers, and of their creek Communico, as thinking seed by to keep our naworthy Cogunaticants, and to have forme Marks of the Come of God introvered by these with desired the privilege of the of Fellowinds and their as force of the Principles by which the Independents are diffinmilital or this Day. Bow when Wire Reviews and his Course lidd been long Yours at Leveler, they began to be weary of thou, as a Skiperston, not from any Differentiance lloin the divid Megalitate, nor from any Quancia a. Davidons among a walches, but saids all Apattention that their court multily transports and their is, appear lost in a liter of Land. the water of their tick ranged bicuracy began to the que and ten or way a come over some district to the up their Places; they had no Hapen of populating their Precipies union t a People TA H D. were liked to be five to up by the on the contract of corportes with the Dateby There is not the that Profiped of a Reformation of Religion as home, or a Toleration for fach as eliferial from Profped the Machillandur. I note Confiderations ulade but the bevisor them manimobily fatelye (after theny Days, or Player

be I

Voy

men

fuff (

foie

Sug

Ma

The

han

Mr

Att

chu

redu

Dut

coun

T

Fundy, South;

the Ina

for a c

s into
ion of
obtain
, and
ce and

1.00

**Weit** 

Pilec

ting

io i gio!

Pial

010

1,11

בסנד

ioil

2/11

pil)

B

## PIRAGODONITOR

## CHAP. III.

Voyage to New-England. Their Settlement at Plimouth, and the Hardships they suffer'd. Treaty of Alliance with Massa-soiet, and other Indian Princes. The ill Suaces of Mr. Weston's Settlement in the Massachuset's Bay; and of Capt. Gorge's. The seditious Practices of Lysord and Oldham. The Death and Character of the Rev. Mr. John Robinson. Of Capt. Wollaston's Attempt to begin a Settlement in the Massachusets, and the Misery to which his Men were reduced. Of the Opening a Trade with the Dutch on Hudson's River. A general Account of the Religion of the Planters.

HE Merchants of London
and Bristol had carried on 1620.

an advantageous Trade to
Virginia, which at this Timee extended from Florida to the Bay of funds, and was divided into North and

with all maket West for tor a Settlement the

South; and was divided into North and South; and had a very profitable Commerce with the Indians on the Northern Coast of America, for a considerable Time, before they had any Prospect of perfecting a Settlement in those Parts; but the Council for South-Virginia having at last received an encouraging Account of the Climate

and

and Soil; from one of their Captains who haventured pretty high up into the Country, the follicited King James for a Charter. The King yielded to their Request, and in one Patent, bearing Date April the 10th, 1606, incorporated two Companies, for the sending out two Colonies.

THE first, for South-Virginia, went by the Name of the London-Adventurers, who had I berry to seat themselves, and such as should join with them, at any Place on the Coast of Virginia between the Degrees of 34 and 41 N. L. Captain Newport, their Commander, landed at Change Bay, and Mr. Wingfield their Profident so the Year, made the first Settlement with one during the Year, made the first Settlement with one during the James Town, June 22, 1607; but the following Minter proving very sharp, the Company broken, and most of them returned to England.

THE Adventurers for South-Virginia made to veral advantageous Voyages; they trafficked with the Natives, fished along the Coast, and made valuable Returns to England, for Toys and The fles, which the Indians were found of. At length they renewed their Settlement, and sending over fresh Supplies of new Planters from time to time with all proper Necessaries for a Settlement, the

accomplished it about the Year 1614.

But leaving the South Continent of Virginia and be described by the Historians of that Country we shall confine ourselves to the Morth, and of serve that Captain Smith being arrived at Phototo from this Part of the World, in the Month of August this Year, drew a new Map of the Country first called North-Virginia, and gave the Name of NEW ENGLIND, which retains to this Day. The Captain's Map we published in the Year 1616, with an Account his Observations and Discoveries, which encountry

11/70

raged for a TH dayen o who

1620

ers o ettle Degre lurifdi ind ar

ho' they we rear ation ry on ccom

Ma n the Mag Year, hemfe Browni wn W

oftern hey reica un hight f enco

ettle w lear 10 Vol

Eigh aptain S begin a wreed to a any, for lew-Eng

† Mort

rated the Merchants to make several Attempts

THEY were called the Plymouth.

Adventurers, because the Persons The Adventuo whom the Grant was made, were very for North
Vest Country Merchants, and Mem-

pers of that Corporation. They had Liberty to ettle in any Part of the Country, between the Degrees of 38 and 45 N. L. and to extend their wildletion an hundred Miles along the Coast, and an hundred Miles up into the Country; but ho the Company made several other Attempts, hey were not able to perfect a Settlement till the sear 1620, when Mr. Robinson, and his Congression at Leyden, who had fled their native Country on the Account of their Religion, happily

ccomplished it \*.

io ha

, the

bea ed to

by the

d joi

rginia Cap

t Ch

THE fo

e bu

Owing

ade fe

d with

d Tri lengt

g ove

time.

inia l

untr

nd of

t P

of the

ich i

P WE

pat o

encou

12gd

Mr. Robinson and his Friends went to Holland the Year 1608, and with the Leave of the Magistrates settled in Leyden the following lear, where they hired a Meeting-house, formed hemselves into a Church, after the Model of the Brownists, and worshipped God publickly in their wn Way; but, after twelve Years Experience, ading their Affairs go backward, and that their softerity were like to be lost among the Dutch, hey resolved to remove into some Part of America under his Majesty's Protection, where they hight live by themselves, and have a Prospect sentence with them. The Project was formed in the lear 1617, when Mr. Robinson and Mr. Brewster Vol. I.

Eight Stips were sent thither this Summer, and the next appain Smith sailed thither with three Ships; and fifteen Men, begin a Settlement; but Provisions falling short, they were wied to return, though the Commissioners of the Plymouth Commy, for his good Services, appointed him their Admiral of two Lingland for Lefe.

Morton's Memor. of New-Eng. Ed. Camb. N. E. p. 29.

to the Privy-Council, but King James was le

great an Enemy to the Puritans, that it was no Purpose. He told them he would not disturb

them as long as they lived peaceably, but would

not fo much as tolerate them by his publick As

thority under his Seal. Upon which the Agent

returned to Leyden, to the great Discouragement

The HIST ORY of [Ab\$1620.

620

them then

of the

prepa

being

tay 1

went

ftian (

or Te

ME

Favou

Leyder

ping

ral of

fates.

and cl turers

fixty .

and G

one t

Thefe

Mayfe

be fre

failed

In as 1

embar

Mr. R

Prayer

ling :

preach

I proc

we me

a righ

wich t

it bre

ty, as

THE Treaty being thus broken off, Mr. Robis fon's Agents returned again to London, in the Year 1619, and after long Attendance, obtained a Petent under the Seal of the Virginia Company which being carried back to Leyden, with several Proposals for their Voyage, drawn up by Mr. Thomas Weston of London, and other Merchants who were willing to be Adventurers with them, they began to prepare for their Expedition, and appointed a Day of solemn Prayer for a divine Blessing, when Mr. Robinson preached a suitable Sermon from 1 Sam. xxiii. 3, 4, and encourage

then

.

1620

e Vir

large Cour

nd his

ir Ar

ay re

refeno

nber

rugal, they

God

The

emen

ade o Starte

to Si

ccount French

icate vas fo

was u

liftur

would s. Alt

gent

emen

Robin

e Ye

a Pt

pany

eyera Mr.

hants,

them,

, 200

diving

nitable raged

them

83

them in their Recolutions for the Voyage. It was then agreed, for the greater Dispatch, that Part of the Church should go before their Brethren to prepare for the rest, but the greater Number not being ready, Mr. Rabinson was prevailed with to say with them; and Mr. Brewster, their Elder, went with the sirst, but both were to continue one Church, and to receive each other to Christian Communion, without any surther Dismission or Testimonial.

MR. Weston, Merchant of London, was a great Favourer of the new Settlement, and coming to Leven, agreed with the People both for Shipping and Money for their Transportation; seveal of Mr. Robinson's Congregation fold their Efates, and made a common Bank, with which, and the Money they received from other Adventurers, they purchased the Speedwell, a Ship of fixty Tuns, to transport them to New England, and stay in the Country. At the same Time Mr. Cultural and Carver were sent over to England, one to London, and the other to Southampton; These Gentlemen hired another Ship, called the Mayforeer, of 180 Tuns, which they ordered to be freighted in the River Thames, while they falled back to Holland in the Speedwell, to take in as many of the Congregation as were ready to embark. All Things being got ready in Holland, Mr. Robinson kept a solemn Day of Fasting and Prayer with his Congregation, to implore a Blefing upon their hazardous Undertaking, preached an excellent Sermon from Ezra vill. 21. I proclaimed a Fast there, at the River Abava, that we might afflict our Souls before God, to seek of him a right Way for us, and for our little ones, and for all our Substance. He concluded his Discourse with the following Exhortation; which, because it breaths such a noble Spirit of Christian Liberty, as was hardly then known in the World, and

G

may

The HISTORY of PAM1620, may ferve to give the Reader a just Idea of this great and good Man, I shall transcribe for the

"BRETHREN, (fays he) we are now quick " ly to part from one another, and whether may ever live to fee your Face on Barth and " more, the God of Heaven only knows; but

whether the Lord hath appointed that or no "I charge you before God and his bleffed Angels,

" that you follow me no farther than you have " feen me follow the Lord Jelus Christ.

IF God reveal any thing to you by any other Instrument of his, be as ready to receive

it as ever you were to receive any Truth by my Ministry; for I am verily prefunded, I am

very confident, the Lord has more Truth yet to break forth out of his holy Word. For my " part, I cannot fufficiently bewail the Condi

tion of the Reformed Churches, who are come to a Period in Religion, and will go at prefent

" no further than the full tuments of their Re

formation. The Lutberans can't be drawn to go beyond what Luther law, whatever Part of

" his Will our good God has reveal'd to Calon, they will rather die than embrace it; and

" the Calvinifts you fee flick fast where they were

left by that great Man of God, who yer law not all things.

This is a Mifery much to be lamented;

for the they were burning and thining Light in their Times, yet they penetrated not into the whole Counfel of God; but were they

now living, would be as willing to embrace further Light, as that which they first received

I beseech you remember it, tis an Article of

your Church Covenant, That you be ready to receive whatever Truth shall be made known to you

from the written Word of God. Remember that, and every other Article of your facred

" Covenant:

Co to. Ex

620

oth if 3 fho

chr Kn 4 ]

> and Ti ma

ous HA elatin

hem t MR ind a

oruden imfeli

of Jul vhithe Congre

inued fter r own

ervent and Pr heir

Master. Mr. C Seven

rifions Sevente which i

for thei listribu

Govern o gove Covenant: But I must herewithal exhort you to take heed what you receive as Truth. Examine it, consider it, and compare it with other Scriptures of Truth before you receive it; for tis not possible the Christian World should come so lately out of such thick Anti-christian Darkness, and that Perfection of Knowledge should break forth at once.

"I MUST also advise you to abandon, avoid, and shake off the Name of BROWNIST:
"Tis a meer Nickname; and a Brand for the making Religion, and the Professors of it, oditions to the Christian World."

HAVING said this, with some other things the their private Conduct, he committed

hem to the Grace of God.

\$1620.

oftehis

for the

om a

quick

ether I

th any

s : Libu

or no.

Ingels,

i have

eN.

y any

receive

ath by

, I am

th ye

or my

Condi

come

relent

miRe

wn to

art of

alpin

land

were

te faw

done

ited;

ight

into

prace

iv di

le of

ly to

you

nber

cred

int:

MR. John Brewfter, Affistant to Mr. Robinson, nd a ruling Elder in his Church, a wife and orudent Man of about 60 Years of Age, put imself at the Head of the Colony. On the 12th f July they went from Leyden to Delftbaven, whither Mr. Robinson and the Ancients of his Congregation accompanied them. They coninued together all Night, and next Morning, fter mutual Embraces, Mr. Robinson kneeled lown with them on the Sea-shore, and with a ervent Prayer committed them to the Bleffing and Protection of Heaven. They quickly joined heir other Ship at Southampton, Mr. Jones, Master, who had been waiting for them with Mr. Cushman about a Week. They laid out seven hundred Pounds at Southampton in Prorisions and other Necessaries and carried about Seventeen hundred more in Adventures, with which they resolved to set out with all Expedition or their intended Voyage, The Company being listributed into the two Ships, they chose a Governor and two or three Affistants for each, govern the People with Consent of the Master, G 3 and

hat we

Hoceec

THE

vere n

Plymou

Pear to

long

the La

ollowi

dif a

ward f

had, it

entry rendin

Parts,

eberefo

chem

where

ven b

out in

the Sc

there.

There

fecclin

been last Y Ten

were

Proba

ere a

there

Was,

of th

from

their

Engli

wher

Nece

giver

Plantations which divide this Country. On the 5th of August both Ships fail'd from Southampton in Company for New England | bu before they got to the Land's-End, Mr. Reynold, Master of the Speedwell, complained his Ship was fo leaky that he durft not venture out to Se in her: Upon which they put into Darmond August 13th, to have her causked. They the put to Sea a second time; but when they had fail'd about 100 Leagues Mr. Reynolds alarmed his Paffengers again, telling them he should a tainly founder at Sea if he held on the Voyage So both Ships put back again into Plymoul and the Speedwell was difmis'd as unfit for the Voyage; tho in Truth this was owing chiefly the Cowardice and Treachery of the Master, who did not care to perform the Voyage, being afraid their Provisions would fall short before his Year was expired; for the Ship was found enough, and made feveral fuccessful Voyages afterwards. But Mr. Gulbman and his Family with some others

bas

hat were more fearful went ashore, and did not

This rest of the Company, being about 120,

e Mar. Earls o

. 1620.

his wa

a ne

g then bunty i governincorlace of

aft of

, and ts and

from but molds,

ez in nouth then had

安美鸡 安里

y to who raid

raid ear and

But ers hat

ere now stowed in one Ship, which fail'd out of Plymouth on the 6th of Sptember: A fad Time of fear to enter on fuch an Expedition! And after long and dangerous Voyage, they fell in with he Land at Cupe Cod on the 9th of November ollowing. Piere they refresh'd themselves about alf a Day, and then tack'd about to the Southward for Hudjon's Bay; but Mr. Jones the Master ad, it feems, been brib'd by the Hollanders to early them more to the North, the Dutch inunding themselves to take Possession of those Parts, as they did fome time after. Instead therefore of putting out to Sea, he intangled them among dangerous Shoals and Breakers, where meeting with a Storm, the Ship was driven back again to the Cape; upon which they put into the Harbour, and refolv'd, confidering the Scalon of the Year, to attempt a Settlement there, and not proceed forward to the Bay. There was one unexpected Advantage of their lenling here, which was, That the Country had been in a manner depopulated by a Plague the last Year, which had carried off Nine Parts in Ten of the Inhabitants, whereas the Natives were to numerous about the Bay, that in all Probability they would have malfacred the Planters as foon as they came afhore: But then there was an Inconvenience attending it, which was, That Cape Cod not being within the Limits of their Patent, the Powers they had receiv'd from the Virginia Company would become void, their Patent being for Virginia, and not New-England, which belongs to another Jurisdiction, wherewith the Company had no Concern. Necessity has no Law, and therefore having first

given Thanks to God for their fafe Arrival,

G 4

before they went ashore, they entred into a solem Contract to fubmit to fuch Laws as should be the Majority be approved of; in witness whereof they fign'd the following Inftrument. If won to

weed won the " I N the Name of God, Amen, We whole "Names are underwritten, the Lon "Subjects of our dread Sovereign Lord King " James, by the Grace of God, of Great-Britain France, and Ireland, King, Defender of the " Faith, &c. having undertaken for the Glon 65 of God, and Advancement of the Christian "Faith, and the Honour of our King and Comtry, a Voyage to plant the first Colony in the "Northern Parts of Virginia, do by these Pro fents, folemnly and murually, in the Prefence of God and one another, covenant and combine ourselves regether into a civil Body political " for our better ordering and Prefervation, and "Furtherance of the Ends aforefaid a cand by 55 Virtue hereof do enact, constitute, and frame " fuch just and equal Laws, Ordinances, Ach " Constitutions, and Officers, from time to time,

is as shall be thought most meet and convenient for the general Good of the Colony, unto " which we promise all due Submission and

I'en of the Inhabitants, whereas sansibado ...

before

In Witness whereof we have become 1 5" Subscribed our Names at Cape God, No vember the 11th, in the Reign of our Sovereign Lord King James, of England,

France, and Ireland, the 18th, and of

Scotland the 54th, Annog; Dom. 1620. John Garver,

William Bradford, John Alden, harris Edward Winflow, John Turner, William Brewfter, Ifaas Allerton, James Chilton, and

Miles Standish, will Francis Eatons

7064

Liebs

i doi 9

ool oo

atmed men B

1 ...

1931-01

sitti

. 1.3345

Early. Mond

5H\$1.6

red t

lat Sto

i bris

as Lo

THE

id on

lýmou

nd H

ninhal cience

ndefit

Sw

no h

ommo

hem w y thei

ad no

eceive

The I

nd a

ations

and;

very

Count

egan

eside

Kner

1620.

olema

ıld by hereof

T Dis

whole

Loyal

King

ritain,

of the

Glon

riftia

Coun-

10 the

e Pre

elena

mbine

Hick.

acd by

Frame Acts

time.

mient

MOTO

and

Ten;

Stanto

No

f our

land,

nd of

620

moul

11011

38.1

SOF

os M

7064

in John Craxton, Richard Bitteridge. ool o John Billington, George Soule, fofes Fletcher, Edward Tilly, bent John Goodman, John Tilly Samuel Fuller Pool Francis Cook. Christopher Martin, Thomas Rogers, Mod William Mullins, Thomas Tinker. William White, John Ridgdale, 01 Richard Warren, Edward Fuller, and John Howland Richard Clarke Stephen Hopkins, Richard Gardiner Digery Priesty John Allerton, W. Thomas Williams, Thomas English 19913 12 16 Gilbert Winflow, ach Edward Doten. W Edward Liefter. to ew of Peter Browne, your state wolland of rosaW.

These with their Families made one Hundred id one Persons, which were all that sailed from symulto in England, and encountred all the Toils and Hazards of a new Settlement in a distant and ninhabited Desart, for the sake of a good Continue and the peaceable Enjoyment of pure and adesided Religion.

Swb was the Condition of these poor Men, ho had the Winter before them, and no Acmmodations for their Entertainment! Most of tem were reduced to a weak and fickly Condition, y their Voyage, and now they were come to Port ad no Friends to welcome them, no Houses to ceive them, nor Physicians to take care of them: the French had a small Settlement at Port Royal, nd another at Canada; the only English Planations were at Virginia, Bermudas and Newfoundand; the nearest of them are 500 Miles off, and very one uncapable of affifting them. The country was full of Woods and Thickets, and egan to look with a Winter Complexion; elides, they were under Apprehensions from the Indians.

nees

ay ho

moft i

ne of

gave

eg, v

id not

eer-T

AFT

or M

nt in 1 vo or

to I

Weath

owed

net th

he Ka

hat fe hey fa

nfit fo

cep I

Morni

Havin

over o

he P

Bushel

which

hie of

digged

deep,

aboard

Ship.

this C

Boats, ready

health

excelle

the V

Indians, who were on no good Terms with a Europeans at this Time; but there was no looking back; the Master of the Ship press due to look out for a Settlement, and threatned fet them and their Goods assore, and rem home, if they did not use Expedition in it. I told them plainly, that he was resolved to see Provisions for himself and his Men home,

them thift as they would never in british a

So they immediately choic Mr. John Care their Government for one Tear On Mond November agth, the People went afhore to relie themselves, from whence they observed Whales playing round about them, and great St of Wild-Fowl ; but the Earth landy, and Water fo shallow that they were forced to w a Bow-shot or two, before they could get to La which gave them such Colds as afterwards provi the Death of many. November 15th Capt. Stan with fixteen Men well armed fet out from the 0 to view the Country, and look out a convenience Place for a Settlement. Having marched about Mile upon the Goast they discover'd Five India whom they follow'd for feveral Miles, but of not come to the Speech of them I next Morn they ventured higher up into the Country, and a to a large Spot of clear Ground, where Comb been planted They discovered several Gun the Remains of an old Fort or Pallifado, then an Harbour opening into two Creeks with high Cliff of Sand at the Entrance; then the mee with some Heaps of Sand in which the found several Baskets of Corn in the Ear, some which they brought away with them; but no finding any Place fie to make a Settlement, the made a fort of Barricado to fecure them in the Night, and next Day returned to their Ship west and disappointed, the Weather being very rain and themselves being forced to wade up to the D. 1620

With

no lo

d b

atned

d rem

H.

to fee

me,

Can

Mond

refr

red

at Su

and a

to wa

o La

Prov

Stand

he C

venia

about

ndia

t cou

orni

đ as

rn h

Grave

ren,

ich

3 the

the

ome

at m

the

n th

Weat

rainy

o th

Knee

not

nees before they could get aboard. In their sy home they faw a young Tree bent down most to the Ground with some Acorns under it. no of the Company going a little too near, gave a sudden Jerk, and caught him up by the eg, where he must have hung, if his Friends id not come to his Relief: This was an Indian cer-Trap.

AFTER this the Master of the Ship with thirtyor Men, among whom were nine Sailors, went tin the Boat, and coasted along the Shore for wor three Leagues, but could find no Harbour to receive any thing bigger than a Boat; the Weather being rough, and the Winds cross, they owed for the nearest Shere; which was so shallow in they could not land without wading up to he Knees, and the Frost and Snow was fo violent, at feveral caught their Deaths: The next Day ey failed to their defigned Port, and found it in for Shipping; and marching up and down tep Hills and Valleys covered half a foot with how, they lodged under Pine-trees, and next forning return to the Creek where they landed. having discover'd two Houses at a Distance, over'd with Matts, they made up to them, but te People ran away: They found about ten Bushels of Corn, some Beans, and a Bottle of Oil, which they brought away in their Boat, and made le of for Seed the next Spring. Next Day they igged again, tho' the Ground was frozen a Foot teep, but found nothing but Graves. So they got board that Night, and next Day return to the ship. Some of the Company were for fettling at this Creek, because it was a good Harbour for Boats, tho' not for Ships; there was Ground ready cleared to their Hands, and the Place was healthy and defentible: It was near Cape Cod, an excellent Place for Fishery: And lastly, because the Winter was so far advanced, that they could

KA OS

Arro

houts

ach wo

heir A

Mulket

Mulket

vere P

vere or

naking

no din

Tree

et fly

faM

ndians

f the u

ble to

erir d.

rrows

thers v

Claws

AFT

blving

rho aff

our fo

light:

empest

tere in

of the

ruft to

fthe I

ilot a

mong

nt a 1

hem,

bere all

lerd, a

ot unc

l Nig

nadin

not go a Coasting without the utmost Hazard both of Men and Boat. Others again were for making farther Trial, rill they could find a Harbour for Ships, and urged that they might fail twenty Leagues to the Northward, where they had heard of an excellent Harbour for Ships, and good Fishing; but the Company could not be prevailed

with to try this last Experiment.

However they refolved to fend out the Boat once more to go round the whole Bay of Cape Cod, and see if there was a Harbour for Ships The chief of the Planters went on this Discove ry, as Mr. John Carver, Governour, Mr. William Bradford, Mr. Edward Winslow, Capt. Miles Standish, Mr. John Howland, Mr. Richard Warren, Mr. Stephen Hopkins, Mr. Edward Tilly, Mr. John Tilly, Mr. Clarke, Mr. Coppin, John Allerton, Themas English, Edward Doten, with the Master-Gunner of the Ship and eight or ten of the Sailors: They fet fail on the 6th of December, the Westher being fo cold that the Spra of the Sea froze upon their Cloaths. They got down that Night into the Bottom of the Bay, where they discovered ten Indians about a dead Grampus. They landed about a League off them, and lay affore all Night without any Disturbance. Next Morning they divided their Company, coasting along, some on Shore, and some in the Boat; but faw no People, nor any Place fit for a Settles ment that Day. Those on Shore found a Buryingplace encompassed with a Pallisado full of Graves, fome paled about, others having small Poles turned and twifted over them; they faw four or five deferted Wigwams but no People. The whole Company lay ashore next Night by the fide of a Creek, where they made a Barricado of Boughs and Logs for their Lodging. Next Morning about Break of Day they were brifkly attack'd by a Company of Indians, who let fly a Shower of

1620

d both

naking

our for

twenty

heard

good

vail'd

I knowl

e Boat

Cape

Ships

Cove-

illiam

Stan

arren,

7obn

Tho-

after-

ilors:

Wea-

froze

light

ifco-

Chey

hore

Vext

ting

at;

ttle

ing-

ves,

oles

r or

The

the

of

rn-

k'd

ver

of

Arrows among them, attended with a terrible hour, after this Manner; Woach woach ba, ba we wearb. Upon this they immediately ran to heir Arms, which were no more than four Mulkets, a few Swords and Battle-Axes, the other lukets being in the Boat. The Mulketeers ere placed in two Lines, the former of which rete order'd to fire, while those in the Rear were making ready. The Indians stood several Fires no in particular, having thelter'd himfelf behind Tree within half a Musket-shot of the Barricado. the fly three Arrows, and stood three Discharges a Musket before he run away : The rest of the dians wheel'd about upon them that run out the Barricado towards, the Boat, but not being ble to do any Execution upon them, they tird. The English gather'd up eighteen of their mows, whereof some were headed with Brass, thers with Harts-Horn, and others with Eagles-Claws

AFTER this they all went into the Boat, reblying to be govern'd by their Pilot Mr. Coppin. the affur'd them that he knew of a good Harour for Ships, which they might reach before light: But in the Afternoon the Weather grew impestuous, and the Sea ran so high, that they ere in danger of being cast away, for they had of their Mast and Rudder, and had nothing to full to but their Oars; but having the Benefit the Flood, they struck into Shore, where the filot and Mate were for running in the Boat mong a Cove of Breakers right before the Wind, ut a stout Sailor that was at the Helm bid nem, If they were Men, about with her, else they pere all cast away, which they did, tho' it rain'd ard, and was very dark. In a little time they or under a Lee-shore, where they lay in Safety Night, and next Morning found themselves na small Island, which they call'd Clark's Island, because anished to be divined as easy

and little running Brooks, so they resolved to plant here, and returning to the Ship, they report their Resolution to the rest of the Company.

On the 15th of December, the whole Co pany weigh'd Anchor, and arrived next Day the Harbour, which was a large Bay with a fmall Mands in it; but the Court was to thell that the Ship was obliged to ride at Anchor about a Mile from the Shore; and though their B was very ferviceable to them on this Occasion yet they were forc'd to wade a great Way in Water to land their Goods. On the 20th the quitted the Ship, and after viewing the Country concluded to fettle on the Main, on a hig Ground facing the Bay where Corn had be planted three or four Years before; a clear Bro running under the Hill, with many delic Springs: They intended to fortify on a great H which commands the Country round, and affor a Prospect cross the Bay to the Cape; and he being in number twenty, they relted that Night but the Weather being fromy, they could nothing from on board the Ship to Melter the December the twenty-third, they began to and carry Timber for a common Building, a on Monday the twenty-fifth, they began to en a Store-house for their Goods, and some im Cottages to preferve them from the Weather. the twenty-eighth, they meafurd out the Ground and divided their whole Company into Nineto Families, allotting to every Person half a Poki Breadth, and three in Length, for Lodging and Gardens ndens mation hey ag eir Civ e Place EW

But t a fa cation e, the ents, a

em Car four of anters em no nable

of the

om the
arts of
ier-like
rying
Velcome
elongin

ourney erion ecept liece of

vith los d them Patunet D. 162

ra M

at D

Tha

Evati

y wh

nd it

UD I

Fiel

to pi epon

1211

Co Day

ch ti

fhallo abe

r B

callo

in C

b the

Untr hip

la bi

Bre

elic at H

for

hat

light

dig

the

0 (

, 3

era

Ima

...0

OUN

retat ole II

g and

dens

idens, and to prevent all Disputes about the ation of each Family, they decided it by Lot: or agreed likewise upon some Laws, both for r Civil and Military Government, and called Place of their Settlement by the Name of 

Bur no fooner were the Planters got ashore a fad Mortality began to rage among them, alion'd partly by the Fatigues of their late Voye, the want of Houses, and other warm Refreshns, and partly by the Severity of the Weather, Want of Necessaries, which brought upon em Catarrhs, Scurvy and other Difeases, which four or five Months time carried off above half Company is fo that out of above a hundred anters, there remained not above fifty, and of m not above fix or feven at a time, who were mble of helping the reft. Inexpressible were Hardships they underwent the first Winter! If the Indians had been apprized of their Cirmilances, they might have out them off withmany Trouble; but they appear'd only at a stance, till the 16th of March, when one Salet, who had learn'd a little broken English on the Fishermen who traded to the Eastern; alts of the Country, came boldy to them, Soler-like, with his Bow and Arrows in his Hand, ying with a loud Voice Welcome Englishmen, elcome Englishmen! He was one of the Sagamores clonging to the Northern Parts about Monbegin, Moratiggon, a Country about five or fix Days ourney by Land from their Town, and was a erson of a free, easy Carriage, but quite naked acept his Waist, which was cover'd with a fiece of Leather, being a tall straight Man, with long black Hair, but no Beard. He informd them the Place where they had settled was called aturet, that about four Years ago all the Inhadrawn to take I ha drive about abitants

Incr. Mather's Treatife of New-England, p. 7.

bitants died of a contagious Diffeinper, and the none remained to claim the Country, or to hinde their taking Policilion. The Planters entertain him in the best Manner they could, and having conferred with him concerning the State of a Country, the Number and the Strength of the Inhabitants, their Situation and Diffance from Place where they were, they diffilled him in the most friendly and obliging Manner Next Mon ing he went home to the Maffefold out he Neighbour, the Naufites on the South East bein our Enemies, because Hant had earried off twent of their People | but forme time aften Samole can again with feveral other Natives, forme of which were cloathed with Deer-Skins, and others hi a forts of large Hole that reach'd up to the Groins and Pieces of Leather about their Wall but the Chief of them was diffreguish'd by wild Cat's-Skin on his Arm. They were talk proper Men, of a brown Complection, like the English Gypfies; their Hair was cut short be fore; but hung down very long behind, and wa fluck with Reathers after feveral antick Fashions They eat and drank very freely with the English and in return entertain'd them with some Inika Dances. They acquainted the Planters with the Defign of their great Sachem Maffesbiet to make them a Visit, and went home very well fatisfy'd On the 22d of March Maffafoiet himself, with his Brother Quadequina, and about 60 of his Friends and Attendants, came to the Top of a neighbouring Hill without any Arms, and fent word by one of his Attendants, that we should fend one to parley with him; accordingly Mr. Winflow waited upon him, and acquainted him with the Governor's Defire to converse with him, and enter into a Treaty of Peace: Upon this Massassiet left Mr. Winslow in the Custody of his Brocher Quandequina, and came over the Brook with a Train of twenty Men; A Louisett wolf to the Transaction To Capt.

Mofke where which. green middle of Spe that of tion d) bout Majest painted Head 1 afily He ha doforn. Tobacc out; b eft Co Varie

he Ro

Tromp

iisd e

relent.

nges lo arge L

ll the

lucted

AM

quanto

way b

paniar

England

Mercha

ne lov'. Reason

VOL.

Capt.

1620

Hinde

rtain

of d

of H

Hirk

in th

Morn

nei Bein

Went

Can

Whid

hill

the

Vailt

64°

tall

e the

re be

dewas

nions.

nglif

Intha

he the

make

sfy'd.

h his iends

bour-

y one

arley

upon De-

reaty

ni urc

came.

Ien;

Capt.

Capt. Standift met him at the Head of a File of Mulketeers, and conducted him into a House where a Seat of State was prepared for him. which was three or four Cushions piled upon a green Rug. Massasses was a large, tall Man, middle aged, of a grave Countenance, and sparing of Speech: His Dress was little different from hat of his Men, (the fame with that before menton'd) only that he had a Chain of Fish Bones bout his Neck, in which Ornament all the Majesty of his Garb consisted: His Face was minted with a murry Red, and both that and his Head were lick'd over with Oil, fo that it may ally be imagin'd he made a very thining Figure : He had a long Knife hanging by a String at his bolom, and behind on his Back a little Pouch of Tobacco: This was Furniture he never went withbut: but the Chain was only for high Days and feet Company: His Men had also their Bags of Toacco at their Backs, and their Paces painted with Variety of Colours. The Governour came into he Room attended with a Guard, a Drum and Immeet marching before him. Massassit having ill'd the Governour, they fat down together, and refently an Entertainment was brought in, con-Ming chiefly of Strong-Waters, a thing the Saign love very well; and the Sachem took fuch a arge Draught of it at once, as made him fweat the Time he staid; after which he was conlucted back to the Brook.

Amon's the Attendants of Massassie was seem to or Tisquantum, who had been kidnapp'd way by Hunt the Interloper, and sold to the spaniards, from whom he made his Escape into singland, and was Servant to one Mr. Slaney, Merchant in Cornbill, who us'd him so well, that to lov'd the English ever after, and had no other season but the Love of Liberty to return into Vol. I.

New-England Memorial, p. 24.

Ti

Cond

of th

Succe to th

this i

with.

very Mans

Fish:

Coast

Ti

all th

gone

fick s

and Mare

I N

tlema in th

fition

Love to fu

Difte

The

lemn

Volle

for,

flow a

at Pa

terpre

Coun

confi

along

of Co

plied

and

M

his own Country. This Squanto was a hearty Friend of the Colony, and brought his Countrymen to have a good Opinion of them, by affuring them that Hunt, who had carried off him and to many of his Countrymen, was a declar'd Villain. He ferv'd now as an Interpreter between the Great Sachem Maffafoiet, and the Governour of the Colony, who, after mutual Civilities, and some Presents made, entered into an Alliance, called the Peace of Plymouth. The Conditions of which were as follows:

First, That neither Massassier, nor any of his should injure or do hunt to any of the Colony.

Secondly, That if any of his did any hard to any of theirs, he should send the Offender that they might punish him.

Thirdly, That, if any thing was taken away from any of theirs, he should cause it to be restored, and they should do the like to his.

Fourthly, That if any did unjustly war against bim, they would aid him, and if any did war against them, he should aid them.

Fiftbly, That he should fend to his neighbour Confederates to certify them of this, that they might not wrong them, but might be likewise comprized in these Conditions of Peace.

Sixtbly, That when his Men came to them on any Occasion, they should leave their Arms (viz. Bows and Arrows) behind them.

Seventhly, That, so doing, their Sovereign Lord King James would esteem him as his Friend and Ally.

New England of Smooth, bury by 24.

THE

1621.

hearty

untry-

Turing

and fo

illain.

Great

fathe

fome

called

which

and in

f his,

old at

ere to

ender

100

a way

ke to

zainst

bour that

night

tions

hem

their

hind

eign his

THE

THE Sachem was not only content with these Conditions, but was willing to become a Subject of the King of Great-Britain, his Heirs and Successors, and gave away all the Lands adjacent to the Planters and their Heirs for ever. After this he return'd home, but Squanto continu'd with the Colony as their Interpreter, and was very serviceable to them in directing them in the Manner of planting their Corn, and of catching Fish; as also in piloting them up and down the Coast, and he never left them till he dy'd.

THE May Flower rid at Anchor in the Bay all the Winter, the the Captain would have been gone much sooner if his Men had not been so sick; but the Spring coming on they recover'd, and he weighed Anchor about the latter End of March.

In the Month of April the Governour, Mr. John Garwer, fell lick and died: He was a Gentleman of a confiderable Estate, which he spent in this Project, and of such a charitable Disposition that he did not shun the meanest Offices of Love and Service to the Sick; but not being us'd to such Fatigues and Hardships, he fell into a Distemper, which carried him off in a few Days. The Colony buried him with as much Solemnity as they were capable, discharging several Volleys of Shot over his Grave.

Mr. William Bradford was chosen his Successfor, who in the Beginning of July sent Mr. Winflow and Mr. Hopkins on an Embassy to Massassies
at Pakanokit, with Squanto for their Guide and Interpreter: Their Commission was to view the
Country, to observe his military Strength, and to
consirm the Peace of Plymouth. The Indians all
along by the Way treated them with a great deal
of Courtesy, and plain honest Freedom; they supplied them with Provisions, carried their Baggage,
and waded thro' the Rivers with them on their
H 2
Backs.

Souan

to ge

feiz'd

of the

only

Couba

and e

Alleg

being.

and r

cured.

Capt.

Squant

Repri

not fi

have I

Dange

comin

at Lit

having

preffin

vefted

ed i b

Maffafa

ganfet,

or offe

they w

of him

into the

came i

whom

Narrba

trume

" do a

TH

Backs. But the Country was very much debopulated; there were fine Corn Fields and Paffure Grounds, without either Cattle or Inhabitants, the Plague having lately fwept them away. About a River, where formerly Abundance of People had dwelt, there were but two Savages remaining and those both old Men, unfit for the Hazard of War, or the Defence of the Country, ye as foon as they faw the Emplify coming they ran to the opposite Bank of the River, and food upon their Guard with Bow and Arrows in their Hands and with a refolute Boldness demanded who and what they were, intending if they were Enemies, to have died rather than fuffer them to pass the River; but hearing they were Friends, they entertained them with the best Food they had Upon their Arrival at Pakanokit the ordinary Refidence of the Great Suchem, they made him a Prefent of a red Cotton Coas trimm'd with Lace which was very acceptable: The Sabben in return treated them with the utmost Civilina Mr. Winlow was lodged on the royal Bed, which was nothing but a few Planks rais'd about a Foot high from the Ground. Maffafores and his Quem lay at one End of it, under a thin Mat, and the Embaffadors with two or three of the Grandes at the other; but the Court was to ill furnished with Provisions that the Embassadors were almost starv'd: However, having confirm'd the Peace, they return'd home, and reported that Maffafoiet's Country was very much wasted and depopulated with the Plague, but that the Nambayanfels, who lived on the other Side of the Bay, were numerous and very formidable, and had drove their Friend Mellafoiet from his Country.

ANOTHER Indian came to live among the English about this time, whose Name was Hobbamoek, a lufty Youth, a chief Captain of Massacian and of good Repute among his Countrymen:

Squanto

621.

depo-

afture

st 1the

Lbour

copic

ning

zards

yet

y tan

UDOA

ands.

and

mies,

s the

y en-

had.

Re.

m a

ACC,

10

thes,

hich

Finat

nem

the

s at

with

molt

ace,

neet's

ared

who

rous

iend

the

Tob.

effa.

en:

anto

Squanto and he being fent among the Indians to get Information of Maffafaier's Affairs, were feiz'd at Namasket by Coubatant the petty Sachem of the Place, a Confederate of the Namhaganlets. only because they were Friends of the English. Coubatant, who had been plotting against Massassiet. and endeavouring to draw his Subjects from their Allegiance, was going to stab Hobbamock, but being a strong Man, he clear'd himself of him, and run away to Plymouth; but Squanto was fecured. The Governour hereupon dispatch'd away Capt. Miles Standiff with 14 Men to release Squanto, and if they had kill'd him, to make Reprifals, concluding very justly, that if they did not support and affilt their Friends, they should have none to give them Intelligence in Time of Danger. Coubatant hearing of the Force that was coming against him absonded, and set Squanto at Liberty; with whom the Captain return'd, having only wounded three Men as they were preffing out of Coubatant's House, which he had invested before he knew that Coubatant had absconded; but the Captain declared to them all, that if Massassiet did not return in Safety from Narrharanset, or if Coubatant (hould raise an Insurrection, or offer Violence to any of Massassiet's Subjects, they would revenge it with the utter Overthrow of him and his.

This little Expedition struck such a Terror into the neighbouring Indians, that their Sachems came in, and courted our Friendship\*, among whom was Canonicus himself, chief Sachem of the Narrhagansets; they subscribed the following Instrument.

September the 13th, 1621.

K NOW all Men by these Presents, That we whose Names are underwritten do acknowledge ourselves to be the Loyal H 3 "Subjects

Pr. Chron. p. 111.

The HISTORY of [An. 1621.

" Subjects of King James, King of Great Britain

" France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &

"In witness whereof, and as a Testimonial of the

se fame, we have subscribed our Names or Mark

paid 34 this proposition and a section is a

as followeth: I wante grown and a manager

Obquamebud, Nattawabunt, Quadaquina, Cawnacome Caunbatant Huttamoiden. Obbatinua, Chikkatabak, Apadnow. a supply of the state of the state of the supply of the state of the s

COUBATANT made use of the Mediation of Massassiet to make his Peace with the English but would not trust himself among them for long time after. All the neighbouring Prince courted their Friendship, except Canonicus Prince of the Narrhagansets, who quickly forgot the Fright of his late Submission, and sent a Messen ger to the Plantation with a Bundle of Arrow ried together with a Snake's-Skin; which Squant told them was a Declaration of War. The Governour having receiv'd the Arrows, fent the Meffenger back with this resolute Answer, That if the lov'd War, they might begin as foon as they would; be did not fear them, nor should they find him unprovided. He likewise sent a Messenger of his own to Canonicus with fome Powder and Ball tied up in the fame Snake's Skin, which check'd the Infolence of the Barbarians for the prefent; for they were fo terrified with the Powder, that they would not receive it into their Houses. However, this put the English on pallisadoing their little Town; taking in the Top of the Hill under which it was feated, they made four Bulwarks or Jetties whence they could defend the whole Town, making Gates in three convenient Places, which were lock'd every Night, and upon keeping a constant Watch, to prevent a Surprize, the Soldiers were divided into four Companies, and every one knew his Post, in case of an Alarm. IN

IN

Capt.

Maffa

er.

the I

Disch

been

his Fa

that !

to aff

that I

ing th

Conft

**fuade** 

Wife

who

that I

mistr

was \*

to ha

coup

him

their

him,

Pard

his N

Bay,

The

he 1

Maj

feem

their

henc

the

a Fe

Tre

in o

was

buri

Capt. Standiff and 10 Men in their Boat to the

In the Month of April, \* the Planters fent out

Britain. ith, & al of the r Mark

V. 1621.

uina; oiden, Ø.

diation English, for a Prince Prince Ot the Teffen-TOWS quanto Joverleffen-

f they vould; יון עון-S OWN

up in Hence were d not

s put king ated,

they es in very

, to into , 19

IN

Massachuset Bay, with Squanto for their Interpreter. But they had no fooner turn'd the Point of he Harbour, but they were called back by the Discharge of a Cannon from the Colony, who had been alarm'd by an Indian coming to them with his Face cover'd over with Blood, and telling them, that Massassiet had join'd with the Narrhagansets to affault them in the Captain's Absence, and that he had receiv'd all those Wounds for disfuading them from it. The Colony were in the utmost Consternation at this Report, but Hobbamock perfunded them to be easy, and dispatch'd away his Wife to the Court of Massassist for Intelligence, who brought back Word, that all was well, and that Massassiet was concern'd that the English should mistrust him. It appeared afterwards, that this was one of Squanto's Sham-Plots, which had like to have cost him his Life; for the Sachem sent a couple of Tawnies with his own Knife, to bring him dead or alive, who had certainly executed their Commission, if the English had not protected him, and interceded with the angry Prince for his Pardon. This Fright being over, the Captain and his Men purfued their Voyage to the Maffachuset-Bay, about twenty Leagues North from Plymouth. The Sachem's Name was Obbatinewat, who, tho' he lives in the Bottom of the Bay, is subject to Maffafoiet: The Bay appeared very large, and seemed to have 50 Islands in it; Nanepashemet, their late King, lived in a House a Mile from hence, built on a Scaffold fix Foot high, and on the Top of a Hill; in the Bottom of which, was a Fort pallisadoed 30 or 40 Foot high, with a Trench before it Breaft-high, and but one Way in over a Bridge: In the midst of the Pallisado was the Frame of an House, in which he lies buried. Within the Bay are two Rivers, with H 4 good

\* Pr. Chron. p. 117.

good Harbouring for Ships; but, the most of the Mands had been inhabited, they were now quite depopulated, the Inhabitants being all dead of removed: The Natives treated them with great Humanity, and traded with them for a confiden able Quantity of Bever-Furs, and when they had furveyed this part of the Country, they were for charmed with the Situation, that they wished heartily they had fettled here; but it was too later for they had now fitted up their Cottages against Winter, and were buly in getting in their Harvest, which must have been lost, if they had attempted to remove. In the same Month an rived the Fortune, a small Vessel from England with thirty-five Passengers for the Plantation, but no Provisions, which occasioned a Famine among them foon after; for the Harvest proved very indifferent this Year, the Seed which the Planters brought from England being either damag'd, or not ripening, because it was fown in the Spring; nor did the Indian Corn yield any confiderable Produce, for want of Skill in the planting it. She brought a Letter from Mr. Wefton for Mr. Carver, dated July the 6th, in which he writes, That the Adventurers at London bad procured them a new Charter, better than the former, and with less Limitations. And next Month they received an Allowance of their possessing and enjoying their Land under the Authority of the President and Council for the Affairs of New-England. December the 13th, the Ship returned, being freighted with Bever and other Skins, to the Value of 500 Pounds, but was taken by the French, and carried into France.

Ship belonging to Mr. Thomas Weston, Merchant, with seven Passengers, but no Provisions; and after that, two more, with sixty Passengers, who were entertain'd at Plymouth all the Summer, and then

then re he had for Bre Provifi he got of a Po our ca must h very I strengt Bodies hell-fi och w The N red Pe iumme vith C Mr. W f Mer hall ob ne of inia. 1 lews o hose P 2d, 16 our Pe h his L our hui ofs : membe

dens Hauilt a ements

ade it confidently

ho laffacro

hen removed to the Maffachufet-Bay, for which he had procured a Patent; but being straitned or Bread, Mr. Winflow went out in a Boar to get Provisions of the fishing Ships, by which Means he got as much Bread as amounted to a Quarter of a Pound a Day, till Harvest, which the Goverour caused to be distributed every Day, or some must have starved, for the Colony grew weaker very Day, the Want of Bread having abated the brength and Flesh of some, and swelled the bodies of others; and had it not been for the shell-fish they caught, they must have perished: such was the low Condition of their Affairs! The Number of the Garrison was about one hunred Persons in Health, and before the End of ummer, they had planted about fixty Acres ith Corn, besides Gardens with useful Fruits. Ir. Weston's People were a disorderly Company Men, and foon forced to break up, as we all observe in its proper Place. By the Return of ne of these Vessels, which went forward to Virinia, the Governour received the melancholy News of a dreadful Massacre of the English in lose Parts, which was executed on March the 2d, 1622, wherein three hundred and thirtyour Persons were cut in Pieces. Capt, Hudston, his Letter to his Friends at Plymouth, fays, that ur hundred Persons would not make good their ofs; and then adds the Words, I entreat you member the old Rule, Happy is he whom other lens Harms do make to beware. Upon this, they pilt a Timber-Fort, with a flat Roof and Batements; mounted feveral Pieces of Cannon on it, and kept Guard in it Night and Day, and ade it the Place of their publick Worthip. It was confiderable Work for the few Hands that were pploy'd about it, but the Terror of the Virginia affacre, with the Fear of an Infurrection of the Narr-

622

f the Quite 1, or

grea lider

had re so

ished late;

gainst Har

had ar-

land,

tion, mine

oved the

r da-

any

Wef-

hich

bad

they

eying

and

heed

500

rried

mall

and

and

Narrbagansets, made them work Night and Day

THE Weather provid very unleafonable in former Part of this Summer; for from the Middle of May to the Middle of July, they had no Ram but a constant Sun, which octasioned a very great Drought, and threatned the Lofs of the whole Harvest; but the refreshing Showers which is towards the latter End of July and August recovered the Corn, so as to afford them a prem tolerable Crop: But tho' the Crop exceeded the Expectation, they all forefaw it could not last to Year round, the they should husband it never well; nor could they get a Supply of Corn from the Neighbouring Indians, because they ha nothing to give in Exchange for it. But toward the End of the Year there came in by Acciden a small trading Vessel with a good Quantity of English Beads, Knives, Sciffars, &c. on board The Colony bought them all up with their Col Beaver, at any Rate, and by this Means were en abled again to trade with the Indians for Com and other Necessaries. Order byollan to and

With the Shallop to traffick with the Indian for Corn, and return'd in a few Days rich laden, to the Joy of the whole Colony. In the Expedition there happen'd an odd Adventure which may give the Reader an Idea of the brutish Nature of these poor Savages: While the Captain went ashore at Nosset to barter with the Natives of those Parts, one of them stole some which terrified him to such a Degree, that he came with his Attendants next Morning, an saluted the Captain in the most humble Manner by putting out his Tongue that one might so

he Rall his Le had in he Cahat h

at Ma Voyage in tho going many ment both

perfual Plague could when Interes

truft 1

The Phim, for the Legaci

defired

the English Residual Residual

them a too fall with a their (

Cloaths Servani NEW-ENGLAND. 107

the Root of it, and licking the Captain's Hands, ill his Men doing the like. He then made him Leg after an awkward Fashion, as Squanto had instructed him, and restored the Toys, telling the Captain that he had much beaten the Rogue

hat had stolen them.

1622

nd Day

le th

Midd

Rain

y gra

whole

ch fel

7 reco

prem

d the

last th

ever

n from

y ha

oward

cciden

tity o

board

ir Coa

ere en

- Com

eside

diatel

Indian

-richh

In thi

enture

he bru

ile th

ith th

ome d

n here

ed th

cution

hat b

Janner ght se

th

Condined

ABOUT the End of this Year Squanto died Mannamoik near Cape Cod, being on a Trading Voyage with the English, who were buying Corn n those Parts. He was an arch Knave, who by going between the English and Indians got a great many rich Presents, and by his dexterous Management became a Person of great Significancy to both Parties, till the Discovery of his sham Plot gainst Massassiet, after which he durst never built himself among his own Countrymen. He persuaded the Savages that the English had the Plague buried in their Store-House, which they rould let out, and fend among their Enemies when they pleased; and that it was owing to his Interest that all the Indians were not destroy'd. The Planters had certainly a very great Loss of him, for he lov'd them, and was very ferviceable them as their Interpreter. He left several Legacies among his English Acquaintance, and defired the Governour to pray, That he might go to be English Man's God in Heaven.

Mr. Weston's Men who settled in the Massachuset Bay last Summer, at a Place call'd by the
Indians, Wesagusquaset, now known by the Name
of Weymouth, having liv'd in a riotous and disorderly Manner, began now to be in want of
Provisions. The Governour of Plymouth gave
them all the Assistance he could, but they liv'd
too fast for Men that were to begin the World
with a little; when they had barter'd away all
their Goods for Indian Corn, they sold their
Cloaths and Bedding; some of them became
Servants to the Indians, and would cut their

Wood

nditio

pected nics v

me to

s his

minore

on of

be. 2

n. Wit

thee

fle th

l'd a

ing th

count

arie of

king

Reco

otly e

keep

ade as

biet fu

utoms

ad Ma

e best

outh,

och fur

d fuch

Dang

Tisi

ok this

n he

Maj

d drav

ade to

t to lo

onfoira

buld a

Wood, and draw their Water for a Cap full Corn; the major Part turn'd Robbers; but was too little to fupply their Wants: Some with Hunger; one, as he was gathering She Fifth, stuck fast in the Mud, and being fo we as not to be able to get out, perished in Place; the reft left their Dwellings, and liv up and down in the Woods upon Ground N and Clams, whereby they became the Scom the Indians, who infulted them in a most be barous Manner; for when they were dreffin their Victuals, the Indians would come, and foon as it was ready ear it up. If any of the had a forry Blanker to wrap himself in, the dians would take it, and make him lie all Nig in the Cold. Miserable was the Condition the they were reduced to! For as their Necessia forced them to steal from the Indians, the Indians made no Conscience of plundring them, and h entred into Conspiracy to cut them all to piece which had certainly been executed in a few Day if it had not been strangely discover'd by following Accident.

THE Governour of Plymouth having receiv Advice that Maffafoiet their Friend and Ally w fick, fent Mr. Winflow and Mr. Hopkins to vil him, with Hobbamock for their Guide and Into preter. As they were upon their Journey the had News that Maffafoiet was dead, upon which Hobbamock burft out into Tears, crying out, New womafu, neen womafu, Sagamus; My Sachem, m Sachem, many bave I known, but never any like that He would then turn to Mr. Winflow, and m out into a long Harangue in Praise of his Ma fter; and bid him depend upon it, that he should never find any other Indian Prince so just, honest and good as he: But when they came to Pa kanokit they were agreeably furprized with the News of Massassier's being yet alive, tho' in

Condition

n. 162

p full

but

me d

g She fo we

in

nd liv

M br

COM

oft b

dreffin

and

of the

the l

1 Nig

on th

eceffiti

India

and h

piece

v Day

by d

eceiv

lly w

O VI

Inter

y the

whid

Nea

ke then

d ru

Ma

hould

onest,

o Pa

h the

in a

ndition in which his Life was not long to be edied: His Sight was gone, but his other nies were pretty entire. When Mr. Winflow me to his Bed-fide, and Hobbamock told him there his good Friend Winflow, he put out his ind, and faintly repeated these Words, Keen show? that is, Art those Winflow? for they toronounce the Letter L. but use N in the on of it. To which Mr. Winflow replying be, Yesq he roturn'd, Mattaneen Wonkanet no Winforms that is, O Winflow, I shall never thee again! And in Truth, the Noise and file that was about him was enough to have I'd a Man without any other Diftemper; for ing mightily belov'd among the Indians on the mount of his Virtues, there was a vast Conwie of People about his House and Chambery king use of their Charms and Incantations for Recovery. Six or eight Women were cononly employ'd in chafing his Arms and Legs keep the natural Heat in them, and these ide as great a Noise as the Inchanters. Mashis fubmitted to all these Ceremonies and thems of his Country, concluding himself a d Man: But Mr. Winfow comforted him in best manner he could; he look'd into his outh, and ferap'd his Tongue, which was very th furr'd, and gave him some Cordials; which luch an Effect, that in a few Days he was out 

It is not to be express'd how kindly the Prince of this Visit; and to make them the best Remains he could, he discovered the whole Plot of Massachuset Indians, how many Sachems they detain in, and what Applications they had been to him: He advis'd them at the same time to lose any Time, but seize the Heads of the Dispirators immediately, or else Weston's Men puld all be cut off; and so, with infinite

Thanks,

necuti

its, by

d dev

e Cap

nt to t

pport

veral

ngth ith tw

them

lambe de sh

ing St

ith his

d the

wanier

ards h

icle: tv

ons to

nanly I

No fo

nown,

rrows

lead of

e Com

ered hi

led the

fer, th

den ha

eace, y

vo after

his I

Maffachu

ain Stan

Plymo

Thanks, and fresh Affurances of Love and Friend thip to the English, he fent them home. Upo their Arrival at Plymouth, they related Maffafaie News to the Governour, who immediately di patch'd away Captain Standift with eight Men is the Security of the English in those Parts, which Hobbamock was one. The Captain four the Remains of Welton's Men reduced to the la Extremities, the Indians being Mafters of the little Fort, and treating them as fo many Slave and Vallals; the Reafon why drey had not me facred them, being only this, because they we not in a Capacity to prevent the Revenge the was to be expected from Plymouth. M. Capta Standiff endeavoured to conceal the Delign his coming into those Parts But the guit Wretches suffected their Plac was discovered however they relolved to put the best Face of their Affairs, and try if they could fright the Captain away. Withwamet and Peckinot we two Champions in whom they placed a great de of Confidence. Peckinot, talking one Day with Hobbamock, faid, We know that Captain Standil is come to kill us all; tell bim that we know t but fear bim not, neither will we run away fro bim : Let bim begin as foon as be will, be la not come upon us unawares. Another Time he n lied the Captain upon the Smallness of his St ture: You, fays he, though a great Captain, are a little Man; and tho' I am no Sachem, yet am Man of great Strength and Courage. Wituwan likewife would come among the English, and p his rude Pranks. Once he was bragging of the Goodness of the Knife he had in his Hand, the Handle of which was carved a Woman's Fact But, fays he, I have a better than this at home, wil a Man's Face carved on the Handle, and thefe to Knives I intend shall be married together. The Knife at bome (continued he) bas done many Executio

1

1622

riend

Upo

Tofaie

ly di len fo

ts, o

fou the

f the

Slave

t ma

y wer

te th

aptai

lign (

guin

vered

ace o

ht th

t we

at de

y wit tandil

now i

zy fro

be by

he ra

nis St areh

et am

uwam

nd pla

of th

nd, o

s Fact

ie, wil

rese tu

Th

any

xecutio

secution on the English and French, and as for Himaim mamen, hinnaim michen matta its, by and by it shall see, and by and by it shall eat devour, though without speaking a Word. But Captain kept himfelf on his Guard, refolving of to break with them till he found a favourable poortunity, tho! they often provoked him by hetting their Knives before his Face, and afing weral threatning Gestures and Actions. At neth the Captain observing these two Hectors. ith two more of their Companions, in a Room themselves, went in to them with just the same lumber of his own Men, and ordering the Door be thut, fell himself upon Pecksnot, and after a ing Struggle got him down, and cut his Throat th his own long Knife. The Englishman that nicht with Wituwamet, killed him too, and fo d the third; but the fourth Man, who was Wimamet's Brother, was taken alive, and afterands hanged. Tis incredible how many Wounds ele two valiant Savages received before they ed, how they struggled and catch'd at the Wear ons to the last Breath, and died without any unanly Noises or Signs of Fear, an almost vall vall

No fooner was the Fall of these two Champions nown, but a Body of Indians let fly a Shower of frows among the English; the Captain, at the lead of his Men, challenged their Sachem to fin-Combat, but received no Answer; so he orted his Men to fire upon them, which frightded them away into the Woods. Some Time her, the Sachem pleading Ignorance of what his len had done, begg'd Pardon, and fued for cace, which was granted him; but a Year or vo after, the Plague deftroy'd him and almost his People, which opened the Way for the Saffachuset Settlement in the Year 1629. Capin Standish offered to conduct Mr. Weston's Men Plymouth, where they might remain till they could

could agree how to dispose of themselves; the thank'd him for his Kindness, but begg'd him fupply them with a little Corn, and they won fail away wish their Veffel to the Eastward meet Mr. Weston; and if they missed him, to make the best of their Way to England . The Captain freely gave them all the Corn he could spare, they shipp'd off their Effects, and went aboard and when the Captain had feen them out of the Bay under Sail, he returned home with the He of Winwamet, which was fet up on the Fort.

THUS ended Welton's Settlement, which w fet up in Opposition to Plymouth a Mr. Westen a originally one of the Plymouth-Adverturers, by had now broken off from them, and fet up for himself. He obtained a Patent for Part of the Maffachuset Bay, under Presence of propagating the Discipline of the Church of England in An rican but his Men were to scandaloully vile a wicked, that they became a Nusance to the ver Savages, who would infallibly have out them a · to Pieces, if the Colony of Plymouth had no shewed them more Charity than in all Probat lity they would have hown the Colony, if it has been in the like Circumstances.

Soon after the breaking up of this Settlement Mr. Weston himself, with some Fishermen, arrive in the Bay, where he heard of the deplorable Fal of his Plantation and the poor Man himfelf me with one not much better. For having loft hi Boar in a Storm, between Merrimuck and Palis taqua, he fell into the Hands of the Savares, wh pillaged him of all that he had faved from the Sea, and ftrippld him to his very Shirt. Ar Pa cataqua he borrowed fomething to cover his N kedness, and in this Condition came to Plymout and was faved from starving by that very Colony which he had a thousand Ways endeavoured destroy.

But

Bu

ithert Ching

ternou

nd Co

ime !

de kn

e the

hem;

nuch g

han w

he Se

orced

ad the

ut der

lry:

Hands

nd Sh

hot a f

tind of

esides.

vant o

hem fr

f Hun

re Cha

he Nev

inguish

Bur

nived

upplies

ierce,

ter: T

wilt for

Trade;

pent th

nterests

Аво

empt v

VOL.

1623

s the

bim t

Worl

ard t

mek

aptai

oard of th

He

rt.

h wa

on wa s, bu

p for

of the

And le and

e ver

em a

d no

obabi

re had

rovent

YFIVO

e Fat

if me

of hi

Paju

, wh

m di

1 P4

s.Na

mouth

olony

red a

But

Bur to return to Plymouth: All Provisions had itherto been in common among the Planters, but things being now a little more fettled, the Goemour divided to every Family a Portion of Land nd Corn, for their proper Use, which after some lime had a very good Effect; for when the Peohe knew that the Produce of their Labour would their own, it kindled an Emulation among em; fo that the Fields were cleared, and a nuch greater Quantity of Corn planted next Year han would otherwise have been. But alas! while he Seed was in the Ground, the People were orced to live in a manner without Bread; nor ad they a Store of any other fort of Provision, ut depended entirely on their Labour and Indury: Their Boat and Net were constantly emloyed in catching of Basse; when that failed, all lands were employed in digging Ground Nuts nd Shell-fish out of the Sands. Sometimes they not a few Fowl, but they had no Cattle, nor any ind of Roots to supply the Want of Bread: elides, they were in a very ragged Condition for ant of Cloaths, those they brought over with hem from England being quite worn out; so that f Hunger and Nakedness, in a savage Country, re Characters of Misery, it must be allowed that he New-England Planters were remarkably difinguished by them.

But at length, about Midsummer, two Ships mived from the Adventurers in England, with supplies for the Plantation, the Anne, William sierce, Master; and the James, Mr. Bridges, Mater: This last was a small Vessel of 44 Tuns, wilt for the Service of the Planters in the coasting strade; and brought over several Passengers, who pent their Lives and Estates in promoting the

nterests of the Colony.

ABOUT the middle of September another Atempt was made to begin a Settlement in the Vol. I.

Massa-

## 114 The HISTORY of [An, 1623.

Massachuset-Bay, at the Place where Weston's Men had broke up, by Captain Gorges, and seven Families that came over with him: The Captain had a Commission from the Council of New-Ene land, to be General Governour of the Country Captain Francis Weft, Christopher Levels, Elq; th Governour of Plymouth for the Time being, and fuch others as he should approve, being appoint his Council, with full Power to bimfelf and an three of them, whereof himself always to be one, to and execute what to them should feem good in a Causes, capital, criminal, and civil. With him came over Mr. Morrel, a Minister, with an eccle fiaftical Commission of Superintendent of the Churches, but he made no Use of it; nor wa the Captain's Commission very long-liv'd', all the Weight of it fell on the Head of poor Wellow for the Captain meeting him at Plymouth, fum moned him to appear before the Council, to as fwer fuch Things as he should lay to his Charge which were the riotous Behaviour of his Men a the Massachuset-Bay, by which the Peace of the Country was diffurbed, and the Plantation ruined and his abusing the Captain's Father Sir Ferdinand Gorges, who had procured him a Licence from the King, to transport some Pieces of great Cannot for a Fort in New-England, which he had fold in foreign Countries for his private Use, for which Su Ferdinando, and the Council of New-England, had been severely reprimanded. Weston answered to the first, that he thought he had sufficiently smart ed for that already; the second he excused upon his Knees as well as he could; and the Captain at the Intercession of the Governour of Plymouth, took his Bond for his Appearance when called for; but the poor Man going for England, some time after died at Bristol, which put an End to all his Troubles. The Captain also imagining himfelf a greater Man than he really was, and not finding Maffix.

inding
new W
ind ret
Morrel
which
England

No

Planter
Spring
from the
Rain;
Blade,
sppoin
with p

he Ha bout t England Paffeng afterwa

out a semplo had be licit the mouth,

Knave
own N
vaft T
hold i
go ov

board had pi his Sh

lo disc ent to und re Affair

T H

inding Things answer his Expectations in this new World, left his Colony after a few Months, and returned to England, and his Bishop, Mr. Morrel, followed him about a Year after; upon which the Plantation broke up, and went some to

England, and the rest to Virginia.

1623.

's Men

feven

aptain

v-Eng

untry

q; th

z, and

Olute

nd an

, 10

2n 4

him

eccle.

of the

all the Telton:

fum

to an

arge:

Jen at

of the

ined:

inande

m the

nnoa

ald in

ch Sir

, had

ed to

mart

пров

otain,

outh,

alled

fome

to all

not

ding

Notwithstand to the great Pains the Planters had taken for a large Crop of Corn this Spring, the Weather was so intemperate, that rom the Beginning of May to July, there was no Rain; so that the Corn withered both Root and Blade, and seemed quite dead; upon which they prointed a Day of Prayer, which was answered with plentiful Showers of Rain, which revived the Harvest, and produced a plentiful Crop. About the same Time arrived two Vessels from England, the Anne and James, with about sixty Passengers for the Colony, many of whom were sterwards useful Members of the Society.

THE Colony having been all this while without a sufficient Patent for their Lands, they had imployed one Mr. William Peirce, whose Name ad been used in Trust in their first Patent, to solicit this Affair with the Grand Council of Plywuth, and the Court of England; but he, like a knave, procured the Patent to be taken out in his own Name, referving to himself and his Heirs a raft Tract of Land, intending the Planters should hold it as Tenants under him. He defigned to go over himself with his Patent, and took on board above an hundred Passengers; but after he had put to Sea twice, he returned into Port with his Ship almost torn to Pieces in a Storm, which o discouraged him, that he assigned back his Paent to the Company for five hundred Pounds, and resolved to concern himself no further in the

THE Planters being advis'd of Peirce's Treathery, sent over Mr. Edward Winslow last Year to 1 2 obtain

1001

mong

were 1

Englas

Preach

Knave

a prof

into th

his Co

import

length

bam, 2

the Ac

tents a

little n

the Re

Adven afraid t

vernou

the Re

him ov

ved to

drop fo

carryin

judice o

on, un

to Sea

and, w

Master.

Copies

them fo

ginals in

while v

as to th

monwe

ftrong o the Lo

nister t

Episcop

calling

obtain a Patent, which at last he effected, and brought over the Beginning of March; it was taken out in the Name of the Governour William Bradford, his Heirs, Affociates and Affigns, b which Mr. Bradford was made Lord of the Coun try; but when the Number of Freemen encre fed, the General Court defired him to furrende it into their Hands, which he generoully did Thus the Colony became a kind of Republick by Patent from King James I. whereby they were enabled to chuse a Governour, Council, and Ge neral Court, who should have full Power of make ing and executing all Laws which should be judg ed necessary for the publick Good, the Sovereignt being still reserved to the Crown of England, the Reader will observe in the Charter, which have given a Place in the Appendix. By the Time the Number of Inhabitants was so mud encreased, that instead of one Assistant, which the Governour had before, it was found necessary to enlarge the Number to five, referving only to the Governour a casting Vote. In the Year 1633, the Council was encreased to seven, and so continued till their Charter was taken from them. This Spring the Governour gave to every Person on Acre, to hold in Continuance for themselves and their Heirs, as near the Town as possible, tha they might keep close together for their greate Security; but they were to have no more till the Expiration of feven Years.

MR. Winflow brought over Letters from Mr. Robinson at Leyden, to the Governour wherein he informs him of a Divinon among the Adventurers; some were absolutely for his coming over, but the Majority being against the Colony, were absolutely against it. In the same Ship Charity, Mr. Winslow brought over a considerable Supply for the Plantation, and a mong

Appendix, No I.

กเมช่อ

## NEW-ENGLAND.

mong the rest three Heisers and a Bull, which were the first Neat Cattle that came into New-England. At the same Time came over a certain whose Name was Lyford, a crafty Preacher, Knave, who, under the Cloak of Religion, and a profound Humility, infinuated himself so far into the Governour's Affection, that he made him his Confident, and confulted him upon the most important Affairs of Church and State; till at length observing him to join with Mr. John Oldbam, a private Instrument of the factious Part of the Adventurers in England, and to fow Discontents among the People, he treated him with a little more Coldness. Lyford's Design was to ruin the Reputation of the Colony with the Merchants-Adventurers in England, that so they might be afraid to trade with them any longer. The Governour did not; so much as suspect his Design, till the Return of the Ship for England, which brought him over; when he and Mr. Oldbam were observed to fend away a large Pacquet of Letters, and drop some Words which gave Suspicion of their carrying on a private Correspondence to the Preudice of the Plantation. The Governour hereupon, under Pretence of going a League or two out to Sea in Company with the Ship, went aboard, and, with the Affiftance of Mr. William Pierce the Master, opening his and Oldbam's Pacquets, took Copies of the most remarkable Letters, and sent them forward to England, bringing back the Originals in his Pocket. Lyford and Oldbam were all this while working up the People's Discontent, both as to the Government of the Church and Commonwealth; and when they thought their Party frong enough, they fet up a separate Meeting on the Lord's-Day, Mr. Lyford promising to administer the Sacrament to them by Virtue of his Episcopal Orders. The Governour hereupon calling a general Court, charged them with fedi-I 3 tious

1.1623

it was

gns, by

encrea rrende ly did

lick by wen

f mak

eignt nd, a hich

y thi much ch th

ary to to the 3, the

inued Thi

n one

that reater 11 the

from nour

rifion utely being

In over d a-

ong

todi

ualls

tile I ok I

lame

arm

art of

uch v

on,

omm

alto

ras g

moke the

digh

ighter

aid th

Dama

with a

heir I T n

fifted o

Trade

as yet,

for the

the P

house,

to the

Dwell

Mile i

Top of the Ce

to Sea

Year

cured

all thi

tious Practices tending to the Ruin of the Colony, which they stiffly denied; but their own Letter being produced against them in Court, Lyford wa struck dumb, and Oldbam, like a mad Man, calle out to the People in a Rage, My Masters, when are your Hearts? Now shew your Courage; you bave often complained to me, now is the Time, if you will do any Thing, I will stand by you: But no body answered him. The Court observing his info lent Behaviour, sentenced him to depart the Plan tation immediately, and Lyford within fix Months and neither of them to return without Leave from the Governour. Lyford went and fettled at Nantasket, at the Entrance of the Massachuset's Bay; and after some Time, having confessed his Villang was restored to his Teaching, though afterward he relapfed: And Oldham had the Impudence to return again the next Year, and interest himself in the Election of a Governour, but he was arrested, and made to run the Gauntlet between two Ranks of Musketeers, who gave him every one a Blow on his Breech, with the Butt-end of their Muskets, as he passed through them, and was then fent away. Oldbam being in Danger of Shipwreck as he was failing to Virginia, confessed his Villany, and begg'd Pardon of God and the Colony; after which the Colony gave him Liberty to correspond with them whensoever he pleased. Lyford, at fix Months End, giving no Hopes of Amendment, left the Colony, and went to Cape Anne, and from thence to Virginia, where in a little Time he died.

But while the little Commonwealth was struggling with these Incendiaries within her own Bowels, the whole Settlement had like to have been destroy'd by a dreadful Fire, which broke out on the fifth of November, just against the Store-bouse, where all their Provisions were lodg'd. The Occasion was this; several Sailors belonging a Ship in the Harbour, making merry in a

tile House, laid so much Wood on the Fire as

ok Hold of the Thatching, and fet all into a

lame: The whole Colony were immediately

arm'd, and ran to the Store-bouse, which one

art of the Company was order'd to defend, while

te other was employed in putting out the Fire.

uch was the Confusion and Cry upon this Occa-

on, that they knew not what they did; the

ommon People suspected a Conspiracy, nor was

altogether without Reason; for when the Fire

s got under at the Place where it began, a

moke was feen to rife out of a Shed that join'd

the Store-bouse, which was made up of the

onghs of Trees; and upon Examination, a

ighted Fire-brand of about an Ell long was found it, which all that faw, concluded, must be

1 1624 Colony, Letter ford wi , calle when e i you o if you o body s info e Plan lonths. e from Nan Bay llany. wards nce to umfelf aid there with a Defign; but however, no more as ar-Dimage was done than the Loss of three Houses, n two with all the Goods that were in them, which was y one indeed the Ruin of those Families, and occasion'd their

Was

Ship-

d his

- Ca-

berty

afed.

es of

Cape

in a

ug-

nwc

ave

oke

the

'd.

ing

to

heir Return to England. THE Colony at this Time (fays Mr. Smith) conisted of 180 Persons, who followed their several Trades both by Sea and Land, but lived together, wyet, like one Family upon the common Stock; for the every Man had his Division of Land, yet the Produce of it was put into the publick Storehouse, and divided out to each Family according to their Number. The Town confifted of 32 Dwelling-Houses, and was paled in about half a Mile in Compass; in the midst of the Inclosure upon a rifing Ground was the Fort, upon the Top of which was a Watch-Tower, from whence the Centinel might fee a great many Leagues out to Sea. They had made a Salt-Work, and this Year freighted a Ship of 180 Tuns with Fish cured with their own Salt: But notwithstanding all this, the Adventurers, who were about feventy

I 4

in Number, and had expended about feven Thou. fand Pounds upon the Settlement, began to be dispirited: There were Differences among them and Lyford's Letters had made ill Impressions upon them, which, together with the small Retun the Planters were capable of making, broke the Society in Pieces, and made the major Part of them refolve to have nothing more to do with the Settlement, as not being willing to throw away good Money after bad. This must infallibly have ruined the Plantation, if God by his Providence had not given them fuch a plentiful Harvest this Sommer, as was not only sufficient for themselves, but enabled them to begin a Trade with the Indians. The Differences were at length referr'd to the Decision of the Adventurers; Mr. Lyford's Friends chofe Mr. White, a Counsellor at Law; the other Mr. Hooker, their Moderator; In this Affembly, Mr. Winflow made fuch a Difcovery of Mr. Lyford's ill Conduct in Ireland, and fince at New Plymouth, that his very Friends were filenced, fo that it was agreed, that he was unfit for any Countenance as a Minister.

The Colony were Masters but of two small Shallops, one of which they cover'd with a Deck to keep the Corn dry, and sent her a Trading Voyage, as far as Kanebeck, 30 Leagues to the Eastward; they had neither Pilot, nor Sailors that understood the working of a Ship, but yet they made a prosperous Voyage, and a very good Return. Capt. Standish in the mean Time was sent to England, with 800 Weight of Beaver, and a great Quantity of Fish and Furs for the Adventurers, in two Ships, which came on a Trading Voyage to the Plantations on their own Account; but when they were got almost within Sight of Plymouth, one of the Ships was taken by a Turkish Man of War, and carried to Sally, which put an End to all their Hopes of encouraging

iging 1 he Cap o perfi Humou Mr. Ly ho ha ion, a f Trac nth fa perf heir I gned v nade t compo e coul ent or Errand. five: hould or 180 baelma ifchar n Con heir Si Chattel ecame aymer leads artner ne Tr: ent o ngle amily s Wi pay 1 cordi

ow ar

venty

NEW-ENGLAND.

aging the Adventurers to trade with them, tho he Captain did every Thing that lay in his Power persuade them to it; but they were out of Homour, having received ill Impressions from Mr. Lyford and the Enemies of the Plantation, he had represented them as Monsters in Reliion, and covetous, designing Men in the Way Trade, which made them put off the Captain ith fair Promises, which they never intended perform. The Planters were certainly under heir Lash, on Account of the Articles they ghed with them at their first fetting out, which nade the Captain endeavour to bring them to a composition, but the Plague being then in London, e rould do but little towards it: Mr. Allerton ent over about a Twelvemonth after on the same frand, and brought the Matter to a tolerable fue; which was this, That the Adventurers hould part with all their Right to the Planters r 1800 Pounds, paying 200 Pounds every Mibelmas at the Royal-Exchange, till the whole was scharged; the first Payment to be in 1628. Confideration of which, the Company fell all heir Stocks, Shares, Merchandizes, Lands, and hattels to the Colony; feven or eight of whom came bound for the rest, to make good the syments. In order to which, they take the leads of the feveral Families of Planters into attership, and agree among themselves, that Trade shall be managed, as before, for Payent of the Debrs: Every fingle Freeman had a ngle Share given him; and every Father of a amily had Leave to purchase one for himself, Wife, and for each of his living Children, and pay towards the Discharge of the publick Debt, cording to the Number of his Shares. One ow and two Goats, was divided by Lot to every Shares, with some Swine. Every Share had

renty Acres of arable Land annexed to it by Lot,

besides

1625

Chouto b

them. upon etun

e the

art of With

away

Hibly

rovi Har-

nt for

**Trade** ength

Mr.

fellor

ator: Dif

eland.

iends

e was

fmall

th a Tra.

es to

ailors

t yet

good

was

wer,

the

on a

OWN

thin

ken

ally, cou-

ging

besides the single Acres and Gardens which the had before; but no Meadows were laid out il fome Years after: But the Company being dubi ous of the Event of these Proceedings, agreed after some Time, to make some Abatements of their Bargain, upon Condition that the Planter give them Security for the whole Debt at prefent which was accordingly done. For this Purpole the Governour, with fix or feven of the principal Heads of Families, gave out nine Bonds for the Payment of 200 Pounds yearly for nine Year according to the Contract, and gave Security for all the other Debts of the Plantation, which mounted to 600 Pounds more. To reimburg themselves, or enable them to make Payment their Bonds as they became due, they farmed hired the Trade of the Colony for fix Years, the End of which Term, they returned the Trad to the Colony as before; By this Means they go rid of the excessive Interest they had been form to pay for Money: And when Mr. Allerton ha paid the first Payment in 1628, he received the Deeds, upon Condition that the Planters di charged the Remainder at once; which was a cordingly done . जिस्सीर में में तो शिक्षा

THE Colony had all this while lived in How of being join'd by their Paftor, and the reft their Brethren from Leyden; but the unwelcom News which Captain Standiff brought over the Death of Mr. Robinson, put an End to all fut ther Expectations from thence. Mr. John Robin for was a Man of a great deal of Learning at good Sense; in his younger Days he had espould most of the rigid Principles of the Brownists, an writ in their Defence, but when he came abroa into the World, and had Opportunities of col verling with learned Men of different Sentiment from himself, he laid aside his Uncharitableness and allowed the Members of the Dutch Church

he Li

le w eparat

ere u Death.

ecause

eforn

ut not

ertáin Brow

Vay t

ccoun

depend

nd goo

opear'c

rlities

erly ha

Holla

id efte

fors, v

ey lan

ear, w

blick .

ommur

Body

gue or uary 12

idst of

use c

most

s burie

d left b

the N

lety Ye

broke i

of th

ving the

w. Engl

625

they

t til

dubi

reed

its o

inten

efent

irpole

ncipa

or th

Cars

ty for

ich a

aburk ent d

sed or

rs ; 2

Trad

y go

force

on ha

d the

rs dif

ras ad

例析

reft (

elcom

ver (

all fur

Robin

ig an

poula

ts, an

abroa

of con

timen

blenes

hurche

he Liberty of Occasional Communion with his. He writ several learned Treatises, to justify his parating from the Church of England, which ere univerfally esteem'd, and reprinted after his eath. His Adversaries call'd him a Semi-Separatift. ecause he allow'd of Communion with other eform'd Churches, in the Word and Prayer, nt not in the Sacraments and Discipline. ertain he abandon'd the most indefensible Parts Brownism, and endeavour'd to beat out a middle lay between that and Presbytery, on which count he may justly be stiled the Father of the dependents. He was a Man of great Probity. d good Nature; an admirable Disputant, as rities of Leyden, when the Arminian Controriy had like to have torn the Church and State Holland in Pieces: He was universally beloved d efteem'd by all the Dutch Ministers and Profors, with whom he liv'd in a perfect Harmony; ey lamented his Death, which happen'd this ear, when he was but 50 Years of Age, as a blick Loss; and tho he never had been of their ommunion, they did him the Honour to attend Body to the Grave. He was taken ill of an gue or Fever in his Bowels, Saturday, Fe-uary 12, 1624-5, and died the 19th, in the idst of his Friends, who attended him with e use of all proper Means, accompanied with most earnest Supplications for his Life. He s buried in the Chancel of the English Church, left behind him a Son Ifaac, who came over the North-east Colony, and lived to above pety Years of Age. The Death of Mr. Robinbroke up the Remains of the Church of Leyden; of them retiring to Amsterdam, few or none ving the Courage to follow their Brethren into w. England.

THERE

## 124 The HISTORY of [An. 1626

Prod

dians.

to ch

tion o

then

for h

better

of Fo

tution

new 1

ind A

hat A

Plymon

gers t

him in

orbids

f war

night

but he

nd bis

f they

bemfela

im by

arty o

lood u

rmed 1

rich L

ll on a

ared up

hake a

ook hir

cred at

lymouth

ith Let

g an A

lotice v

imes a

nded his

emains

THERE was another Attempt, made this You to begin a Settlement in the Massachusets , b Capt. Wollaston, and three or four more Gentle men of Substance, who brought with them great many Servants, Provisions, and other No ceffaries for a Plantation. They pieched at Place which they called Mount Wollaston, no known by the Name of Braintry; the Captain continued fome Time with his Colony, but find ing the Difficulties of raifing a Plantation greater than he imagined, he failed with Part of his Sen vants to Virginia, and writ back to Mr. Rafdale, I Deputy, to bring another Part along with him telling him that the Men would turn to a bene Account there, than in New-England: Rasa appointed Filcher his Lieutenant; but when Ra dale was gone, Mr. Morton, who had a fma Share in the Plantation, took the Advantage the Lieutenant's being out of the Way, to make the Company merry with Drink, and then ad dress'd himself to them in the following Manner "Gentlemen, you fee many of your Companion carried away to Virginia, and if you stay the Rafdale's Return, you will also be carried away, and fold for Slaves with the rest; therefore would advise you to thrust out this Lieutenant Fileber, and I, having a Part in the Plantation, will receive you as my Partners and Confor ates; fo you may be free from Servitude, and "we will converse, plant, trade, and live togo " ther as Equals." Upon this they turned Lieute nant Filcher out into the wide World, to feek his Bread where he could find it, and Morton became their fovereign Lord, leading them into all fort of Debauchery and Wickedness; they fet up May-pole, and danced about it, and drunk strong Liquors to fuch an Excess, that they confumed ten Pounds worth in a Morning: To support this Prodi-

New-England Memor. p. 68.

Prodigality, they ingratiated themselves with the Indians, and taught them the Use of Fire-Arms, how to charge and discharge a Musket, what Proporion of Powder to put in, and what Shot : Morton then exercised them, and sent them out a Birding for him, fo that in a little Time they became better Marks-men than the English, and being swift of Foot, were capable of doing much more Execution. The Indians were fo charmed with this new Invention, that they threw away their Bows and Arrows, and gave any Price for Fire-Arms hat Morton and his Companions demanded. When Plymouth Colony heard of this, they fent Messeners to expostulate with him about ir, putting im in mind of the King's Proclamation, which orbids their trading with the Indians in any fort warlike Stores, and of the Inconveniencies that night attend instructing them in the Art of War: out he infolently reply'd, that the King was dead, nd bis Diffleafure with bim; and threatned, that they came to molest him again, they should look to bemselves. Upon this they resolved to reduce in by Force, and fent Captain Standish with a Party of Men to bring him dead or alive: Morton ood upon his Defence, barricadoed his House, med his Companions, and having heated them ith Liquor, defied the Captain, and bid him on at his Peril. The Captain however venared up to the Door, and Morton coming out to take a Shot at him, he put by his Piece, and ok him Prifoner, upon which the rest surrencred at Discretion. Mr. Morton was conveyed to mouth, and after some Time sent to England, ith Letters from the Council of New-England, givg an Account of his Conduct; but little or no otice was taken of it. He returned several mes after this into the Country, and at last ided his miserable Life at Pascatagua. Thus the emains of Wolfaston's Colony broke up, after

1626. Year

entle entle

r No l at a

aptain t find

greate is Sch ale, hi

him, better

R*afdoll* n Raf fmal

age of make in ad

inner i anion

ay til away,

fore l

ation nfoci-

toge

icute ek his

came l forts

up a

umed t this

Prodi-

126 The HISTORY of [An. 1627,

they had maintained themselves in the Bay of Mas

fachulets above two Years.

We have already observed in the Year 1622 that the Colony of Plymouth had made some small Distribution of Land among the Planters, which was no more than an Acre a Man, besides the Home-steads or Garden-plots; the Reason of which was, that they might keep together for their great er Sasety and Desence against the common Endmy; but now their Numbers being encreased, the ventured to spread themselves surther into the Country, and the Government allotted to even one in each Family twenty Acres of Land, to be laid out five in Length by the Water-side, and sour in Breadth.

THE Dutch had now perfected a Settlement Hudson's River, and sent Letters about this Tim to the Colony of Plymouth, to begin a Correspon dence, and invite them to a Trade. Some Tim after, they sent their Secretary Mr. Isac de Rosin with Letters and Goods; the Letters were date from the Manhatas in the Fort Amsterdam, February 27, 1626-7. The Governour received him with all imaginable Civilities, and both Paris were pleased with the Exchange of their Merchan dize; for the Secretary brought with him Beave and fuch like Commodicies, which they ha bought of the Natives, and exchanged them to Corn and Fish, which the Colony were at the Time very well provided with. This Wampan peag, as the Indians call it, was of vast Advantage to the Natives, for the Europeans were so fond it, that they purchased it at any Rate: The Sa of this made them grow rich and powerful, an furnished them with all warlike Materials, as Gum Powder and Shot, whereby they became capable of making some kind of a Stand against the E croachments of the English upon their Religion and Country.

hich thef in ( Aff New calle and God cry, near calio other on th faid and A betwe and A Weste a strai main of Na of a C kit, al like A Mouth far into

But

nay b

most L extend between Comasce bek, an River i

each Sic all Pres tions, I Immuni

the Esch

But

#### NEW-ENGLAND. 127

627.

Maf

623

**Sma** 

which

thei

which

great Enc

, the

o th

even

tob

, and

ent of

Tim

fpon

Tim

Roher

date

d hi

Partic

rchan

esva

y ha

m fo

et thi

mpan

antag

ond o

ne Sal I, and

Gum

apab

he E

eligio

But

Bur before we leave the Plymouth Colony, it may be proper to take Notice of their last Patent. which fettles the Boundaries of their Settlements these Words: " The Council for New-England. in Consideration that William Bradford and his Affociates have, for these nine Years, lived in New-England, and have there planted a Town called New-Plymouth, at their own Charges and now feeing, by the special Providence of God, and their extraordinary Care and Industry, they have encreased their Plantations to near three hundred People, and are, on all Occasions, able to relieve any new Planters, or others of his Majesty's Subjects, who may fall on that Coast; therefore seal a Patent to the faid William Bradford, his Heirs, Affociates, and Assigns, of all that Part of New-England between Cobaffet Rivulet towards the North, and Narrhaganset River towards the South, the Western Ocean towards the East, and between s fraight Line directly extending up into the main Land towards the West, from the Mouth of Narrhaganset River, to the utmost Bounds of a Country into New-England called Pacanakit, alias Sawamset, Westward, and anotherlike straight Line extending directly from the Mouth of Cabasset River towards the West, so far into the main Land Westward, as the utmost Limits of the said Pacanokit or Sawamset extend: As also all that Part of New-England between the utmost Limits of Capersecont or Comascecont, which adjoins to the River Kennebek, and the Falls of Negumke, with the faid River itself, and the Space of fifteen Miles on each Side, between the Bounds abovefaid, with all Prerogatives, Rights, Royalties, Jurisdictions, Privileges, Franchises, Liberties, and Immunities; and also Marine Liberties, with the Escheats and Casualties thereof (the Admi-

### 128 The HISTORY of [An. 1628

ing it

who h

len, P

Mini

acram

he W

aren

criptu

Chur

ftheir

their

at wh

dution

or a. P

n and

layer,

lders (

ear 16

ccount

which

d the w, Ef

s give

the fa

Europ

vernn

furthe

their

the C

Scotch

ing fo

terene

tice o

us in t

and th

format fition t Vol.

" ralty Jurisdiction excepted) with all the Inte-" reft, Right, &c. which the faid Council have or ought to have thereto; with the Liberty " trade with the Natives, and fish on the Sea " adjoining. And it shall be lawful for them to incorporate themselves, or the People then " inhabiting, by some fit Name or Title " with Liberty to them and their Successors, \* make Orders, Ordinances, and Constitutions not contrary to the Laws of England, for the " better Government, and put the fame in Exe cution, by fuch Officers as he or they shall an " thorize and depute; and, for their Safety and " Defence, to encounter, by Force of Arms, b " all Means, by Land and Sea, feize and make " Prize of all who attempt to inhabit or trad " with the Savages within the Limits of the " Plantations, or attempt Invalion, Detriment or Annoyance to their faid Plantations, & This Patent was dated Jan. 1629-30, and w obtained (fays Mr. Hubbard) by the Earl of Wa wick and Sir F. Gorges, with a Confirmation from the King, to make them a Corporation in as an ple a Manner as the Maffachusets. But others lay that the Grant from the King miscarried, and the their Patents were only from the Council of New

'Tis Time now that we take some Notice of the Religion of the Planters, for it may seen strange that Men that left their Native Country and afterwards ventured out into an uninhabite World, for the Sake of a Church Discipline, which they apprehended more agreeable to the World God, than that which was practifed in their ow Country, should live so many Years without see

England, as above . When this Patent was of

tained, the Colony was encreased to the Number

of three hundred Souls.

Prince's Chron. pag. 196, 197, &c. Calender's Histor Sermon, pag. 10.

1628, Inte-

have

rty to

e Sea

em to

then

Title

ors, u

utions

r thei

Exe

all au

ty and

as, b

mak

r trad F chei

ment

G(.

d wa

Wat

n from

as am

rs fay

nd tha

- New

ras ob

umbe

tice o

feen

untry

abito

which

ord o

r ow

ut se

tin

Hifto

ing it up among themselves. Mr. Brewster indeed. the had been ruling Elder of the Church at Levin, preached and performed all other Offices of Minister among them, except administring the acraments: Befides this, they had Meetings on he Week Days, wherein some of the Elder Brehien prayed and expounded some Portion of cripture to the rest, but they did not enter into Church Relation, because they lived in Hope Otheir reverend Pastor Mr. Robinson, and the rest ftheir Friends at Leyden, coming over to them's t when they heard of his Death, and the Difdution of his Church, they began to look out ra Paftor; and one Mr. Ralph Smith coming rer to New-England about this Time, was choand separated to that Office by Fasting and layer, and the Impolition of the Hands of the lders of the Church, in the Beginning of the ar 1620. I have already given the Reader an mount of Mr. Robinson's Sentiments in Religion. which these Planters entirely agreed: I'll now d the Relation that the worshipful Edward Win-, Elq; fome Time Governour of the Colony, s given of them\*. "He fays, that they are of the fame Faith with the Reformed Churches in Europe, except in the Article of Church Goremment, wherein they have endeavoured a further Reformation: He gives Inftances of their admitting to Communion among them, the Communicants of the French, Dutch, and Stolch Churches, merely by Virtue of their being fo; and fays, we ever placed a large Difterence between those that grounded their Pracuce on the Word of God, tho' differing from in the Exposition and Understanding of it, and those that hated such Reformers and Reformation, and went on in antichristian Oppofition to it, and Perfecution of it. Tis true, VOL. I. K

<sup>\*</sup> Mather, Book I p. 13.

we profess, and desire to practise a Separation of from the World, and the Works of it, and are willing to discern an Appearance of the Grace of God in all we admit to Church Fe lowship, but do not renounce all other Churches nay, if any joining to us formerly at Leyder or here in New-England, have, with the Control of the control of

e fession of their Faith, held forth an entire se paration from the Church of England, I have

divers Times heard either Mr. Robinson of Pastor, or Mr. Brezuster our Elder, stop the

" forthwith; Thewing them that we required a fuch Thing at their Hands, but only to he

" forth Faith in Christ Jesus, Holiness in a Fear of God, and Submission to every On

" nance and Appointment of God."

'Tis certain however, they were too much a tached to some of the Brownifical Principle which Mr. Robinson, if he had lived, would have weaned them from, and particularly to the Practings of the Gifted Bretbren; which they carried such a Length, as not only to discourage, but drive away a regular and learned Ministry, who after some Years they were bless'd with, for war of due Countenance and Support; but these, an several other little Fancies, they are now entire free from, and are of one Heart and Soul with the rest of the Churches of New-England.

The People at Plymouth were generally Brown ists, or of the more rigid Separatists from the Church of England; but those who afterward settled at Boston, like the other Puritans, lived a Communion with the Church, the they scrupted Conformity to several of the Ceremonies.

the second of the control of the con

be S

Adn

Rife

The

thei

Hat

the S

topl

Nor

Mr

The

The

tans

with

ning

bonch

none in

Rome,

rotesta

Rites ar

he Obs

he Pra

Archbid Modera

Court,

Calend. p. 13. 9 hor rio of the

Dincher, Local 1 por eg.

with the sold programme of the sold the



### C H A P. IV.

1628

aratio it, an

ch Fe urcha Leyda

ie Con ire S

I ha

san a

P the

ared a

in th

uch a

acipla d hav

Press ried ( but (

which

e, an

ith d

Brow

m th

rward

ved i

ruplo

22.

AP

170.

oith)

ioV:

he Sate of Religion in England under the Administration of Archbishop Laud. The Rise of the Colony of the Massachuset-Bay. Their Settlement at Salem. The Manner of their incorporating into a Church. The Hardships they suffer'd. The Foundation of the Town of Boston. The Story of Sir Christopher Gardiner. Capt. Stone and Capt. Norton murder'd by the Indians. Of Mr. Roger Williams and his Opinions. The Beginning of Connecticut Settlement. The Council of England prohibit the Puritans transporting themselves into America without License from the King. The Beginning of Newhaven Settlement.

vanced to the Throne upon 1629.

the Demise of his Father,
committed the Government of the
hunch to men of arbitrary Principles, who were
none inclinable to an Union with the Church of
lone, than to promote an Agreement amongst
notestants. They were passionately fond of the
lites and Ceremonies of the Church, and press'd
he Observance of them with greater Rigour, than
he Practice of Morality, or a good Life. Old
hrchbishop Abbot was a Man of Temper and
Moderation, but he fell into Disgrace with the
Court, and at last by Letters Patents, bearing
K 2

Date

abf

fha ed:

evo

e M

r De

Im

em -

reach

ared

Delign

djudg

f fou

Ar. Of

ne of

nd for

Mayor

would

nly ble

rofecui

er, if t

im\*

THI

ody di

he Bill

ut run

im in

old Sco

d Zion'

f that 1

nd the

r of H

People +.

tar-Cha

it, and

ace, w

o pay te

120 mode

· Fuller

worth, p.

Date Octob. 9tb, 1627, was suspended ab Officia and a Commission was signed to the Bishops London, Durham, Rochester, Oxford, Bath as Wells, " to do, execute and perform all Ad " Matters and Things any way touching or con " cerning the Power, Juridiction, or Authorit " of the Archbishop of Canterbury in Causes " Matters Ecclefiaftical." The Bishop of Lon was Dr. William Land, a great Patron of Lear ning, but one of the worst Politicians that ev fat in Council; he push'd the King upon the violent Measures that rendered his Government unpopular, and by his intemperate Zeal in Church ruined many good People, and do Thoulands of the Kings best Subjects out of Kingdom; his Defign was to make the Religion of the Church of England as gay and folendid that of Rome, and the Power of the Bishops, absolute as that of the Pope and his Cardinal the Ecclefiaftical Commission Court, was a Pr restant Court of Inquisition, wherein Men we fined, imprisoned, and banished contrary to Laws of the Land, according to the lovere Will and Pleafure of the Bishops \* ... . 2011

the Church about this Time; the Communications were brought in the Church about this Time; the Communication of the Church, was order'd to be made in Form of Altar, to be placed at the East End, and to lighted Candles to be set upon it; the Peopwere commanded to bow or do Reverence at in coming into the Church, or upon a nearer A proach to the Holy Table; all Lectures on to Week Days, and Afternoon Sermons on to Lord's Day, were suppressed, and in their Ross Games and Sports were allowed, by the Roy Proclamation, with this very odd Exception that all known Recusants, either Men or Women, the state of the control o

<sup>\*</sup> Compleat Hift. of Eng. Vol. III. p. 85.

1.1620

Officio

nops of

1 Ad

OF COL

uthori

ules

Lond

Lear

at cv

n tho

in'd

dro

of

Celigio

endid

ops, dinal

a Pu

n wa

Verei

ht is

Trunk

of t

of

nd i

Peop

at fi

er A

on 4

on 4

Room

Roy

eptio

en, th

abst

abstain from coming to Church or Divine Service, hall be debar'd the Benefit, and Liberty bere granted." This Proclamation was ordered to be read every Parish-Church throughout England by Minister of the Place, on Pain of Suspension Deprivation. The laudable Defign of buying Impropriations, and employing the Profits of em for the Maintenance of Lecturers and reachers both in Town and Country was delared illegal; the Corporation engaged in this lefign was diffolved, and the Fund and Stock hinde'd to the King; this Corporation confifted four Divines, namely, Dr. Gouge, Dr. Sibs, Ir. Offspring, and Mr. Davenport; four Lawyers, ne of which was the King's Serjeant at Law. nd four Citizens, whereof one was the Lord Mayor of London himself; but the Bishop fearing would promote the Growth of Puritanism, not nly blew up the Design it self, but would have rolecuted the Managers of it in the Star-Chamer, if the Clamours of the People had not deterr'd im<sup>e</sup>.

was restrain'd, so that THE Press edy durst venture to debate the Authority of he Bishops, or dispute their Proceedings withut running the Hazard of all that was dear to im in the World. Alexander Leighton, D. D. a. old Scoteb Man, ventur'd to publish a Book calld Zion's Plea, wherein, according to the Custom that Nation, he spoke too freely of the Queen nd the Bishops, calling the Queen a Daughr of Heth, and the Bishops Persecutors of God's tople t. For which he was sentenced in the har-Chamber, after Degradation, to have his Nose it, and his Ears cut off, to be branded in the ace, whipp'd at a Post, to stand in the Pillory, pay ten thousand Pounds Fine, and suffer per-K 3

Fuller, B. XI. p. 136. † Ludlow's Letter to Dr. Holling-worth, p. 22.

N

tween

mdon;

Bur

w ha

cs. T

e Lor

herch

g, nor Vork o

on cou

s exh

the

time

was :

for n

muni

the B

befor

fome

him :

ful.

fuspe in hi

them

ot only

It the

(fay

Proce

Subje

ning,

fome

Wor

and

Detr

e Bif

ling's

Eachard Fift. of Engl. Vol. 41. Apro 1637.

1620

ted i

r clos

by the

foun

thi

The

ch e

ut th

Valle

, for

e con string

Sent

edelf

of hi

war the

I for

augh

dd

at th

tob

Out

o na

the

icia k, t

high

3, H

nan i

ete a

n th

Cour

in ou

tweet

7

tween Dr. Laud's Advancement to the See of undon, and his Confinement in the Tower. Bur by this Specimen the Reader may fee, w hard it must be for the Puritans of those es, who were all Calvinists, strict Observers of Lord's Day, and Enemies to Popery, and all inds of Licentiousness, to get their Bread in the hurch with a good Conscience; neither Learng, nor Piety, nor Diligence and Success in the York of the Ministry, nor any other Qualificawould fave a Man from Ruin, that scrupled mformity to the Bishops Injunctions. The Artis exhibited against Dr. Wren, Bishop of Ely, the Year 1641, tell us, "That during the time of his being Bishop of Norwich, which was about two Years and a half, there were, for not reading the fecond Service at the Communion Table fee Altar-wife; for not reading the Book of Sports; for oling conceived Prayer before and after Sermon, and for not observing fome other illegal Innovations introduced by him and his Officers, above fifty godly, painful, preaching Ministers excommunicated, suspended, deprived, or otherwise censured, in his Diocels, to the undoing of many of them, their Wives and Children." And ot only the Clergy but the Laity, it feems, It the Weight of the Bishop's Displeasure, "For (fay the same Articles) by the same rigorous Proceedings, three Thousand of his Majesty's Subjects, many of which used Trades, Spinning, Weaving, Knitting and making of Cloth, some of them setting hundreds of Poor on Work, have been forced to remove themselves and their Families beyond Sea, to the great Detriment of the Trade of the Kingdom." All he Bishops of the Court Party were equally evere against the Puritans; and it was the ling's Unhappinels to be governed by them: et district bearing Key V. To rive all the

· lie

· co

12

ing

ly M

٠ La

wit

Sol

any

fin

foe

thr

Sol

chu

tan

Spa

" wa

" Me

" eve

" me

" fore

" Bre

" and

" out

" and

" to t

" Lar

" Wo

" Riv

" wha

" Lin

" alfo

" faid

" Eaf

" Lan

" well

" Min

" Lan

all !

He put the Reins into their Hands, and the drove so surjointly that the whole Nation grown under their Tyranny. The Puritan Clergy we neither suffered to live in the Kingdom, nor to sout of it, and many true Members of the Churthat could not come up to the new Measures we severely punished in the spiritual Courts; till last the very Name of a Bishop grew odious the People, and when they could get rid of the Tyranny no other way, they were forced to do their Swords in Desence of their Liberties, who by the Kingdom was involved in all the Misses of a Civil War.

THIS being the melancholy State of Affair the Reverend Mr. White, Minister of Dorchell encourag'd by the Success of the Plymouth Color projected a new Settlement in the Massachuset Bi as an Afylum for the filenced Ministers; he h prevailed with Mr. Roger Conant and forme other to make a Beginning as early as the Year 161 Mr. Conant, and his Friends, had been at Plymout but removed from thence to Nantafket on a D gult; after which they went to Cape Anne, the next Year to Nauenkeak, fince called Sala but they were about to return, when they reco ed Letters from Mr. White, that if they wo wait a little longer, he would procure them Patent, and fend them over Friends, Goods, Patent, visions, and all things necessary for a Sertleme Accordingly the Council established at Plym in the County of Devon, for the planting, ruling ordering, and governing of New-England America, did by their Deed indented under the Common Seal, bearing date the 19th of Man 1627, " give, grant, bargain, fell, infeoff, ale and confirm to Sir Henry Referell, Sir John Your " Knights, Thomas Southcot, John Humphre John Endicot, and Simon Whotcombe, their He 54 and Affigns, and their Affociates for eve si all that Part of New-England aforefaid, which of Jid

1. 1620

and the

groan

gy w

or to

Chu

res w

till

dious

of th

to di

whe Miser

177 'Affai

rcbell Color

fet Be

he h

e oth r 162

lymout a Di

ne, u Sale

Teca

WOU them

ls. Pi

lema

lymn

rulin and

er the Man

fl, alk

Youn phri

He

CVC which

of lia

45 Freedoms,

lies and extends between a great River there. commonly called Monomack, alias Merimack, and a certain other River called Charles River, being in a Bottom of a certain Bay there commonly called Moffachusets, alias Mattachusets, alias Massatusetts-Bay, and also all and fingular those Lands and Hereditaments whatfoever, lying within the Space of three English Miles on the South Part of the faid Charles River, or of any and every Part thereof, and also all and fingular the Lands, and Hereditaments whatfoever, lying, and being within the Space of three English Miles to the Southward of the " Southermost Part of the said Bay called Massachusets, and also all those Lands and Hereditaments whatfoever, which lie within the "Space of three English Miles to the North-" ward of the faid River called Monomack, alias "Merimack, or to the Northward of any and every Part thereof, and all Lands and Heredita-" ments whatfoever lying within the Limits a-"forefaid, North and South, in Latitude and in Breadth, and in Length and Longitude, of "and within all the Breadth aforefaid, through-" out the main Lands there, from the Atlantick " and Western Sea and Ocean on the East Part, " to the South-Sea on the West Part, and all the "Lands and Grounds, Place and Places, Soil, "Woods, and Wood Grounds, Havens, Ports, "Rivers, Waters, Fishings and Hereditaments "whatfoever lying within the faid Bounds and "Limits, and every Part and Parcel thereof, and " also all Islands lying in America aforesaid in the " faid Seas, or either of them on the Western or "Eastern Coasts or Parts of the said Tracts of " Land; and also all Mines and Minerals, as " well Royal Mines of Gold and Silver, as other "Mines and Minerals whatfoever in the faid Lands and Premises, or any part thereof, and all Jurisdictions, Rights, Royalties, Liberties,

ere II

e Na

Maffack

wer'

eputy

rates o

ncy we laker

at Da

al Con

latter,

hey r

ands,

or the

ras lik

hose P

As

Charter vernour

licott w

o Mr.

hem o

ions t

Colony hem r

tho' th

into the

to then lengers

Scurvy

of then

fend for

mouth, of man

Colony

mouth

obligin

from N

" Freedoms, Immunities, Privileges, Franchife. " Preheminencies and Commodities whatfore " which they the faid Council established at Pl " mouth, had or might ufe, exercise or enjoy, or within the faid Lands or Premifes, &c. to be holden of his Mejetty King Charles the " First, his Heirs and Successors, as of his Man " nor of East Greensoich in the County of Kent, in free and common Saccage, and not in Ca " pitt, nor by Knight's Service, vielding and " paying therefore to his faid Majesty, his Hein s and Successors, the fifth Part of the Oar of "Gold and Silver, which should from time to time, and at at all times hereafter happen to be " found, gotten, had, and obtained in any of " the faid Lands, within the faid Limits, or in. " or wishin any Part thereof, for and in Satisf faction of all Manner of Duties, Demands, " and Services whatfover to be done, made " or paid to his Majesty, his Heirs and Suc-Sections, and minima and personal street

Bur the Gentlemen mentioned in the Chaner not being willing to embark alone in so great an Affair, engaged several other Persons of Quality and Substance about the City of London to join with them , as Sir Richard Saltonfall, Ifaac John son, Samuel Adderly, John Ven, Matthew Cradock, George Harwood, Increase Nowel, Richard Perry, Richard Bellingham, Nathaniel Wright, Samuel Vaf fal, Theophilus Eaton, Tho. Goff, Tho. Adams, John Brown, Samuel Brown, Tho. Hatthings, William Vaffal, William Pinchon, and George Foxcraft; and petition'd the King that their Names might be inferted in the Patent, as Original Proprietors, which was accordingly done in a new Draught of the former Patent, bearing Date the 4th of March, 1628-9, and confirmed by the King. By this Charter, the above mention'd Gentlemen, and all that should hereafter join with them, , and the translate ye D. Colend p. 92 10 11 that were

\*i Freedoms.

1629.

chile

bever

t Ph

ov. ii

De. 10

es the

Man Kent

in Ca

Hein

Dar of

ne to

to be

ny of

or in, Satif-

ands.

nade.

Suc-

m 4

narter

at an

join

tabn-

dock, erry.

Val-

Fobit

Hiam

and e be

cors,

aght

1 01

g .

nen,

em,

ere made a Body-Corporate and Politique, by e Name of the Governour and Company of the Mallachulet-Bay in New-England, they were emwer'd Yearly to clect their own Governour. eputy-Governour, and 118 Affociates, or Magintes out of the Freemen of the faid Company: were to be chosen the last Wednesday every fer Term, by a General Court to be held on at Day Yearly. They were to have four Gene-Courts a Year, the last Wednesday in Hillary, later, Trinity, and Michaelmas Terms for ever. hey might admit Freemen, chuse Officers, order ands, and make such Laws as they should think the Good of the Plantation, not repugnant to le Laws of England; free Liberty of Conscience as likewife granted to all that should settle in hole Parts, to worship God in their own Way.

As foon as the Company had received their harter, they chose Mr. Matthew Cradock their Goemour, and Mr. Thomas Goffe his Deputy; Mr. Enliott was fent over immediately with some Recruits Mr. Conant and his Companions; to inform hem of the State of Affairs, and of the Preparaions that were making for fending over a larger Colony the next Year. Mr. Endicott found hem reduced to very low Circumstances, and to the Supply he brought put some new Life nto the Planters, yet was it of very little Service to them in their Settlement, because all the Pasengers that came over with him fell fick of the Scurvy and other infectious Distempers, and many of them died; infomuch that he was obliged to and for Mr. Fuller, Physician to the Colony of Plynouth, who by the Bleffing of God faved the Lives of many of them. Mr. Fuller staid with the little Colony all Winter, and when he return'd to Plymouth in the Spring, Mr. Endicott fent a most obliging Letter to Governour Bradford, dated from Neumkeak, May 11, 1629, wherein, after Ac-

knowledgments

N

med i

hips C

nlon's

rho lef

iberty

ion. I

rovino

se Am

RE

oming

etde th

Approl

heir

heir I

of the

n the

ew Co

d the

Church

Mr. G

fuly 2

he Ch

Plymou

Procee

Day, W

Person

did th

Affem

of Fai

given

Perusa

Coven

" ano

" of (

cor

us i

\* Pri

" 7

knowledgments of his great Civility in lending M. Fuller to them in their Diffress, he declares his stisfaction in their Form of Church Disciplinas explained by Mr. Fuller, and gives it as his Opinion, that it is grounded upon the Scripture

THE Adventurers at London in the mean in made their Application to the Rev. Mr. Higgins a filenced Non-conformist Minister of Lettelle fbire, and the Rev. Mr. Skelton of Lincolnshire, be Chaplains to the grand Colony that was goin over and defired them to engage as many of the Friends as were fit for fuch an Undertaking join with them , with these went over the Re Mr. Francis Bright, and Mr. Ralph Smith; th Fleet confifted of fix Sail of Ships, namely if George Boneventure of 20 Guns : the Talbot of to the Lion's Whelp of 8; the Mayflower of 11 the Four Sifters of 14; and the Pilgrim of 4 Gun About 350 Paffengers, Men, Women, and Chi dren embark'd aboard these Fransports for the Pla tation, with 115 Head of neat Cartle, such Horses, Mares, Cows, &c. 41 Goats, for Conies, and all other Necessaries for a Settlement belides of Pieces of Cannon for a Fort, with Mo kets, Pikes, Drums, Colours, and a large Quan tity of Ammunition and Provision . The who Fleet failed from the Isle of Wight, May 1, 1619 and arrived at the Place which Mr. Conant an the Dorchefter Agents had mark'd out for them on the 24th of June following; it was called by the Natives Neumkeak, but the new Planter called it Salem, which in the Hebrew Language fignifies Peace; Mr. Graves, with some of the Company's Servants, and others that were willing, removed to Mishawum, to which they gave the Name of Charles Town. Mr. Graves laid out the Town in Lots of 400 Acres to each la habitant, and a great House was built for such a they expected fhortly to join them, which was the tutned 0.1620

ling M

his S

Ciplin

t as

riptur

an tip

gginfa cicola

bire,

s gon

of the

ing

e Re

, d

ely the

f 14

Gun

d Chil

e Pla

uch a

fon

ment

Mus

Quan

whole

1629

t and

them

ed by

anten

guag f the

were

they

s laid

h In-

ch as

then

ined

hips came over thirty-five Families of Mr. Reinfon's Church, from Leyden, besides many others,
the left their native Country for the sake of the
liberty of their Consciences in Matters of Reliion. From this small Beginning is the Massachuset
revince grown to the Figure it now makes in
the American World.

RELIGION being the chief Motive of their oming over into these Parts, they resolved to the that in the first Place; accordingly, with the approbation of the Worshipful John Endicatt, Eigs heir Deputy-Governour, they confulted with heir Brethren at Plymouth; who informed them the Church-Order and Discipline which they of fer up, and of the Warrant they had for it, the Word of God; the new Planters after some w Conferences, agreed with them, and appointd the 6th of August for the Erecting such a Church among themselves; or, according to Mr. Gott, in his Letter to Governour Bradford, fully 20th, the 6th of August being appointed for he Choice of Elders and Deacons. The Church at Plymouth sent Messengers to be Witnesses of their Proceedings, which were after this Manner: The Day was spent in Fasting and Prayer; and 30 Persons who were defired to be of the Communion, did then folemnly and severally, before the whole Affembly, profess their Consent unto a Confession of Faith, which Mr. Higginson had drawn up, and given them Copies of some Days before for their Perusal; after which they signed the following Covenant, drawn up by the fame Hand.

"We covenant with our Lord, and one with another; we do bind tourselves in the Presence of God, to walk together in all his Ways, according as he is pleased to reveal himself to us in his Blessed Word of Truth, and do expli-

citly

Prince's Chron. p. 189.

<sup>+</sup> Mather, Book I. p. 18.

142 The HISTORY of [An. 1620] the citly in the Name and Fear of God, professand and Ap or protest to walk as followeth through the Powe " and Grace of our Lord Jefus Christ." We avouch the Lord to be our God, an 19 ourselves to be his People, in the Truth an ove " Simplicity of our Spirits. ing W z give ourselves to the Lord Jesus Christ that " and the Word of his Grace for the teaching Plac ruling, and fanctifying of us in Matters of Wor our " ship, and Conversation, resolving to cleave unto him alone for Life and Glory, and a u y in c reject all contrary Ways, Canons, and Confi-totions of Men in Worthip. as t hare WE promife to walk with our Brethren are with all Watchfulness and Tenderness, avoid " P. ing Jealoufies, and Sulpicions, Backbring our. Centurings, Provokings, fecret Rilings of Spirit against them; but in all Offences to follow God him the Rule of our Lord Jefus Chrift, and to be our c and forbear, give and forgive, as he had taught us. we d in h In publick or private, we will willingly de AFT nothing to the Offence of the Church, but will be willing to take Advice for ourselve ves I k. Hi and ours, as Occasion thall be preferred. heir R Wi will not in the Congregation be forward veral either to shew our own Gifts and Parts fome " fpeaking, or scrupling; or there discover to that Weakneffes, or Failings of our Brethren, bu veral attend an orderly Call thereunto, knowing exp " how much the Lord may be diffionoured, an onfessi \*\* his Gospel and the Profession of it slighted by riting " our Diffempers and Weakneffes in publick. and oth WE bind ourselves to study the Advance efore ment of the Gospel in all Truth and Peace rithout both in Regard of those that are within o ives a without, no Way flighting our Sifter Churches heir ( but using their Counsel as Need shall be, no be Chur laying a Stumbling-Block before any, no no

NEW-BNGLAND. 143 the Indians, whose Good we desire to promote, and fo to converse, as we may avoid the very Appearance of Evil

1629

fs and

Power

.nois

Hrit

hine

Wor-

cleave

nd t

hren

Void

tings

Spi

ollor

bea

1

ly do

elva

州州

ward

ts it

, bu

WID

200 ed b

WOU

ance

cace

tr o

ches

, no noi s the

W B do bereby promife to carry ourselves is all lawful Obedience to those that are over us in Church or Commonwealth, knowing how well-pleafing it will be to the Lord. that they should have Encouragement in their Places by our not grieving their Spirits, thro our fregularities.

WE refolve to approve ourselves to the Lord in our particular Callings, shunning Idlenes, as the Bane of any State; nor will we deal hardly or oppressingly with any, wherein we

are the Lord's Stewards.

" Promising also, to our best Ability, to teach our Children, and Servants, the Knowledge of God, and of his Will, that they may fertie him also; and all this not by any Strength of our own, but by the Lord Christ, whose Blood we defire may sprinkle this our Covenant made in his Name.

AFTER this they chose out from among themves the Reverend Mr. Skelton for their Pattor. h. Higginson their Teacher, and Mr. Houghton heir Ruling Elder, who were separated to their yeral Offices, by the Imposition of the Hands some of the Brethren appointed by the Church that Work. The Church being thus form'd. weral others were admitted into it; fome on the state of th riting an Account of their Faith and Hope, nd others by making a verbal Declaration of it the Church; but none were admitted ithout fufficient Testimonies of their sober lives and Conversations. The only Term of heir Communion was, giving Satisfaction to be Church concerning their Faith and Manners. But

ey car onies,

in in

lace to

ald, no sposition with the

ers A

isfied

mong y the

em: 01

THE

olony P

h. Ho

nd Mr able of

ent.

nered

MR.

tar I

nd was

re Par

n exac nonies c

uaintan

e alter

B Livi

ance of

ontinue

ifhop

em:

high Con

be fe

recei

VOL.

how this was to be done was left entirely to a Direction of the Elders. They agreed with a Church at Plymouth, That the Children of the Fail are Church-Members with their Parents, and it their Baptiss is a Seal of their being so: On before their Admission to the Lord's Supper, the were to be examined by the Officers of a Church, and if they were tolerably acquains with the Principles of Religion, were free so Scandal, and willing publickly to own the Ovenant, they were received. Accordingly Members and they were received. Accordingly Members and Members and Scandal, with the Principles of Religion, were free from Scandal, and willing publickly to own the Ovenant, they were received. Accordingly Members and Members an

and admitted into it.

Some of the Passengers who came, over wi these first Planters observing, that the Ministe did not use the Book of Common-Prayer, that the administred Baptism and the Lord's Supper with out the Ceremonies; that they refuled to adm diforderly Persons, and resolved to use Disciplin against all scandalous Members of the Church fer up a feparate Affembly according to the .Ulage of the Church of England of these M Samuel Browne, and his Brother, were the chie the one a Lawyer, and the other a Merchan, bo of them Men of Estates and Figure, and of the Number of the first Patentees. The Governor perceiving the Disturbance that was like to an on this Occasion, fent for the two Brothers, wh accused the Ministers, as departing from the Orla of the Church of England, adding, that they we Separatifis, and would shortly be Anabaptists, h for themselves, they would hold to the Orders of the Church of England. The Ministers replied, The they were neither Separatifts, nor Anabaptists, the they did not separate from the Church of England nor from the Ordinances of God there, but only from the Corruptions and Diforders of that Church; the

. 162

to t

ith t Fail

ind i

On r, th

of t

e fro

he Co y M Yea

by d

hurd

inifte

et the

with

adm

cipli hurd

to t

fe M

chie bot

of d ernor

o ari

, wh

Orda

y wa

of the

gland

from

; tha

the

by came away from the Common-Prayer and Cereomies, and had suffered much for their Nanconfority in their native Land, and therefore being in a
lace where they might have their Liberty, they neither
ald, nor would use them; because they judged the
aposition of these Things to be sinful Corruptions of
a Word of God. The Governour, the Council,
and the People generally approved of the Minices Answer; but the two Brothers not being
sissied, and endeavouring to raise a Mutiny
mong the People, were sent back to England,
or the Return of the same Ships that brought
tem over.

THE first Winter after the Arrival of this show proved a very fatal one, for it carried off most 100 of their Company, among whom was in Houghton the ruling Elder of the Church; and Mr. Higginson himself, who, not being cashle of undergoing the Fatigues of a new Settlement, fell into a Hectic Fever, of which he

gred till Midsummer, and then died.

Mr. Francis Higginson, M. A. was born in the tar 1587, and educated in Emanuel-College in ambridge, where he proceeded Master of Arts, was afterwards chosen Minister of one of the re Parishes in Leicester: For some Years he was exact Conformist to all the Rites and Cereonies of the Church of England, but upon Acvaintance with Mr. Hildersham and Mr. Hooker, alter'd his Sentiments, and was deprived of Living for Nonconformity; but by the Conniance of Dr. Williams Bishop of the Diocese, he Intinued to preach a Lecture in the Town, till shop Laud and his Party carried all before em. He was then informed against in the igh Commission Court, and expected every Hour be sent for up to appear before them, when received an Invitation from the Massachuset-KOL. Maride de la Come Come Contraction Co Company

<sup>\*</sup> Mather, B. III. p. 70.

THE HIST OF Y STAR 1630. 146 Company to withdray from the Storm, and lettle in New England; he lived there about Months, and died of a Hectic Fevor in the Month of Augult, 1630, in the 42d Year of he Age. He was a good Scholar, of a Iweet and all ble Behaviour, and having a charming Voice, wone of the most acceptable, and popular Freshers in the Country. Electic behing him two Sons, Frances and John, the last of which he ceeded his Father in the Church of Salem in the Year 1650, and was alive there in the Year 1650, and was alive there in the Year 1650, a most valuable and vietal Mainther Christ, between 80 and 90 Years of Age. Christ, between 80 and 90 Years of Age. has prefix'd an Attestation to Dr. Cotton Mai Church-History of New-England, wherein the are these remarkable Words. "As for myle" having been by the Mercy of God now about "68 Years in New-England, and served the Low and his People 60 Years in the Ministry the Gospel, I may now lay in my Old Age, have seen all that the Lord has done for a page of the Daniel of the Dan "! People in New-England, and have known to Beginning and Progress of these Chutches this Day; and having read over much of the Hiltory, I connot but in the Love and for God bear Witness to the Truth of it, w that this prefent Church-History of N " England compiled by Mr. Gotton Mather, the Substance. End and Scope of it, is, as fut I have been acquainted therewithal, according " to Truth" Spine Cor Noncontol hiny 13 Bur the Governour and Company of

noprii
puty,
Counc
milies
of Shi
who,
m hos
hard
with fi
above

Calenda II Son

lemen

Mon,

auth acrea

iter ti all'd, abjetts New-I

of the C Proyers

Bio

m. se

orego conflan

I their

( far

" Apo

the -

fron

YOU.

mem

And

this

מעוב בוום

Hem

By T the Governour and Company of a Massachuset-Bay in London thinking it for a Advantage of the New Colony, that the Governour himself should reside among them, as Mr. Cradock not being willing to undertake a Voyage, they choic John Wintbrop, Etq.; Governous the Colony of the Colo

\* Matter, B. III. 2 79.

Attofation to C. Mather's Ecclefiaftical History, 203

## di.MEWIBNGLAND. 8147

1630.

a an

out i

io th

of a

der Caber

abor

for h

ches

of the

s far

0

for t

Gove

1,111

ke-

on no

PO3

DISCU

nour in his room, and Mr. Thomas Dudley his Deouty, with feveral other worthy Perfons for their Council, who embarked themselves and their Families for New-Empland, with a Fleet of ten Sail of Ships, whereof the Admiral was called the Ara-Lila in Honour of the Lady Arabella Johnson, ho, with her Husband Isaac Johnson, Esq; was hoard of her. With thefe embarked Sir Rihard Saltonstall, Theophilus Eaton, John Venn, Esqs; ich several other Genelemen and Ministers, and bove 200 Paffengers, whom the Heat of Perfemion forced out of their native Country. Mr. Colender fays there were 1500 People aboard with Sorts of Necessaries, who made effectual Setlements at Charles Town, Water-Town, Dorebeffen, Idon, &c. which is hardly credible, for the Ply-Colony, after nine Years Sertlement, was oreafed but to goo Inhabitants". A few Days for their Embarkation, a Paper was published, all'd. The bumble Request of his Majesty's loyal siletts, the Governoun and Company lately gone for len-England, to the rest of their Brethren in and the Church of England, for the obtaining of their ropers, and the Removal of Suspicions and Miscon-Bions of their Intentions. Printed at London, in m. 1630. Wherein they entreat their reverend others and Brethren of the Church of England, recommend them to the Mercies of God in their mant Prayers, as a Church now springing out sheirlawn Bowels: 44 For you are not ignorant (far they) that the Spirit of God ffirred up the Apostle Paul to make a continual Mention of the Church of Philippi, which was a Colony from Rome & Let the same Spirits we beseech you, put you in mind, that are the Lord's Remembraneers, to pray for us without ceafing. And what Goodness you shall extend to us in this, or any other Christian Kindness, we your the sud buster a to DL 2 and smoth & Brethrene

<sup>\*</sup> Hifter. Difcourfe, p. 12.

7148 . TACH I STORY OF 3[An. 1630

Brethren in Christ shall sabour to repay

0.011

ajor d

nd em

ering

hom 1

ntees.

e Nun

GRE

lanters

the

rought

nem ;

he up

Win

ers. In

ghty,

des, ir

iled;

hem a

emour

tmost

d Ext

fuffic

kemain

lears 1

hey ha

Head

n the

and wi

he latt

Robinson

nd the

y the

Expend

550 l.

ind Fo

hey h

hem v

what Duty we are, or shall be able to perform

promiting; fo far as God shall enable us,

" Heads and Hearts may be Fountains of To

of for your everlafting Welfare, when we shall to

in our poor Cottages in the Wildernels, over

se fhadowed with the Spirit of Supplication

thro the manifold Necessities and Tribulation

" we hope, unprofitably befalus," 1 004 svo

I HE Fleet arrived at Salem in the Month July, in a very fickly Condition; the Lady hi bella Johnson died foon after the came afhore, a her Huiband follow'd her within a Month. The Planters divided themselves into two Bodies; or fertled at a Place which they called Charles To on the North Side of the River which goes that Name, and incorporated themselves into Church, after the Manner of that of Salem, wi Falling and Prayer, and a Sermon preached the Reverend Mr. White; after which they cho the Reverend Mr. Wilfon for their Pattor, who cho' an ordained Minister of the Church of Ly land. Submitted to a Re-ordination by the Impo fition of fuch Hands as the Church invited to pu for a Bleffing on his Labours - The other Bod fettled at a Place called Marapan, by the no Planters Dorobester, about the Bostom of the Ma facbufet Bay, and chose the Reverend Mr. J Wareham, formerly Preacher as Exeter, and the Reverend Mr. John Maverick; their Ministers but afterwards, upon a better Acquaintance will the Country, both these Ministers and their Friends changed their Situation for others that were mon commodious for Trade and Commerce. The Fleet was filled with Pallengers of all Trades and Occupations proper for planting a new Colony! fome came from the West of England, but the major mar Desert, 2 :c.

1.1630

ay,

us, ing q

FT

hall

Ove

Cati

ation

, no

SVou

onth o

y Are

e, an

into

Wit

ed b

chol

Eg Inpo

Body

new

Mal

John d the

with

ends,

more

The

s and

ony i

t the

najor

and Part from the Neighbourhood of London, and embarked at Southampton, some of the Ships wing two hundred Passengers aboard, among hom was the Governour, Mr. Winthrop, the Pantees, and several Gentlemen and Ministers, to be Number of fifteen hundred.

GREAT were the Hardships that these new lanters were exposed to, on their first Arrival the Country! The Fatigues of the Voyage ought the Scurvy and other Distempers upon em; and when they came alhore, being forced he up and down in Booths and Tents, exposed Wind and Weather, they died in great Nums. In the first three Months, they buried above ehty, or an hundred of their Company. Beis, in the Depth of Winter, their Provisions iled; and the Colony of Plymouth gave em all the Affistance they could, and the Goemour divided out the publick Stores with the most Frugality, yet they were reduced to the A Extremity, all the Corn they had, being harddifficient to ferve a Fortnight; fo that the tmains of 180 Servants they had fent over two lears before, being in Want of Provision, they tre obliged to give them all their Liberty, tho ley had cost them from fixteen to twenty Pounds Head, furnishing and fending over; when, upin the 5th of February, a Ship arrived from Engand with a Supply of fresh Provisions. About be latter End of May, another Company of Mr. Robinfor's Friends from Leyden, arrived at Salem nd the Bay, who were received and entertained the Planters at New Plymouth, who paid the spences of their Freight, which amounted to 50 l. gratis, and provided them with Lodging nd Food for fixteen or eighteen Months, till hey had a Harvest of their own; which kept hem very poor, and obliged them to great Hard-

Prince's Chron. p. 240.

The HISTORY of Antibio thips, Another Thing that gave them the hin Concern; was the Fear of the Indians, who three ened to drive them out of the Country ; m which the Governour of Plymouth fentro Salem Shot and Powder, but the Indians about Charle Town endeavouring to fortify themselves People of Salem dispersed them with the Noise their great Guns : But the Small-pox made in miserable Havock among them, that though English gave them the best Affistance they could yet nine Parts in ten died of it and the reft fi ing from the Infections left the Country in manner defolate One Inflance of the Civili and Justice of the Planners to them, was this, th notwithstanding the Patent which they had a the Country from the Crown of England, the fairly purchased of the Natives t, the feveral Ind of Land which they afterwards poffeffed. In m

632

ropr

sbe c

C brior

mje b Lown

ribula ricus roud

Coupti

More

uppor priat

lears;

TH

Palleng

mong

Ellato S

ented

Anoft

or with

in du

mindi

TH

dhis

Riotife

farilasis

tweel t

theyb h

prelane.

with g

Priend

the falm

dener :

of the

Reign 4

Towa ans the latter End of the Year, a Pa of the Colony of Charles Town removed to a Par fulo, which lies in the very Bottom of the Ma chuset Bay, called by the Indians SH AW MUS and by the English, on account of direct contigue Hills appearing in a Range to those at Charle Town, at first TRIMOUNTAIN, and afterwar BOSTON, in Compliment to the fantous M Cotton, the Purious Minister of Boston in England of whose coming into those Parts they were daily Expectation; and is the most commodical firtuated for Trade and Commerce of any Place the Country. It is about two Miles in Lengt and one in Breadth, and appeared in those Time at High water, in the Form of two Islands. He they built the Town of BOSTON, now the Me tropolis of the whole Province, after they ha given Satisfaction to the Reverend Mr. Blacklon an Episcopal Minister, who happening to see first in an Hovel on this Point of Land, claimed dune.

Prince's Chron. p. 206. + C. Mathers B. I. p. 22.

State NEW-ENGE AND. 151

1630

o hit

abrei Cape

bark es, t

aile

le fin

coul eft fi

y in

Civili is, th

ad f

, the

In

a Pa Peni

Malle

MUS

igua

bark

TWEI

as M ny lan

ere

dioul lace i

engt

ime

Ha Ma

y hal

ckfto

ned priet

. 22.

Interness came over from Magland, 652. Coming the home was the famous Mr. John of the film who spent his find Year at Button, and their that with his Friends at Resource. The was the knofile of the Indians, being one of the first that pushed their Gospet antong them, and lived to fee and success of whis Labours in the Conversion of

The following Spring the Governour and his Palker, Mr. Willow, travelled for 1632.

Root forty Miles through the Woods, as far as Plymouth to feeled Correspondence between the two Colonies for in those early Days they had not their Aposto and Attendants, as at prefere The Governour of Plymouth received them with great Honour and Respect, and a lasting Psiendship was established between them. About the same Time came over one Sir Christopher Gardiner, a Knight of Jerusalem, and of the Family of the famous Bishop of that Name in Q. Mary's

Reign He was a Citizen of the World, pre-

# 152 AbeaH I STORY of [An. 1632.

tending he had travelled over the greatest Panto it, and came now to New-England to spend to reft of his Days in Retirement; he brought or with him a Servant or two, and a pretty young Woman, whom he called his Couling he wenter for a Puritan, but was in Reality a Roman Culin lice; and having been guilty of some Misseness nours soon after his Arrival, he fled from Justice and took Sanctuary among the Indians of Plymouth Calany. The Governour of the Massachustis published a Proclamation, promiting a Reward to those that should apprehend him : The Indian hereupon came to the Governour of Plymouth, and asked if they might kill him ; he sold them, no but if they could take him alive, they floud have the Reward. Some Time after they found him by the River sides and would have laid hold on him, but he got into a Canoc, and putting of from the Shore, presented his Piece at them gibut the Stream driving the Caupe against a Rock plunged him over Head and Bars in the Water, the Knight however made a Shift to get afford and defend himself with his sword, tild the law ans had so bruised and beat him with their long Poles, that he could hold it in his Hand notlong er; he then yielded, and was brought to Pimouth, and put into a Surgeon's Hands for the Cure of his Wounds. The Servant who made his Bed, found a Jittle Packet-book under his Pillow, in which was a Memorandam, what Day he was reconciled to the Charch of Rome, and in what University he took his Scapula and his Dogrees From Plymouth he was fent to the Govern nour of the Maffachulets who inflicted no other Punishment upon him, than the fending him back to England; but when he came thither, he railed bitterly against the Plantation, complaining of the arbitrary and tyrannical Proceedings of the Governour against himself and others of his Majesty's faithful New-England Medicin p 25.

ithful inger, ing at

16.9

le to the the tinon

At th

rthe

Sign and Poand of and Vision and Bis

ord Co W inform order

inerical true, a Dishort that P

to the been g Royal Majest

honour
into Co
first Pl
of this

Matter called that P

's plainant

1632,

arto

id th

t ove

/On

Wen Catho

ema ofice

C Ply

bulet

and to

ndian

and

ioud found

bold e off

ribut

Ock.

attr;

hore

Jan.

long

ong.

the

made

ship

Day:

din

Do-

WEI-

cher

nack

isled

fthe

Go-

ty's

hful

inful Subjects, and joined with Sir Ferdinando men, Captain Majon, &c. in a Petition to the ingagainst them. The Cause was heard before a Privy Council; but the Petitioners not being the to make good their Allegations, and many the principal Adventurers appearing in Favour the Plantation, the Council reprimanded the minimers, and published the following Order the Encouragement of the Adventurers.

At the Court at Whitehall, January 19, 1632.

Mr. Trevers,
al of Dorset,
Mr. Vice Chamberlain,
Mr. Vice Chamberlain,
Mr. Secretary Cook,
ad Bishop of London, Mr. Secretary Windebank,
and Continguon A.

to on cheerally with their Unit "WHERE'AS his Majesty hath lately been informed of great Diffraction and much Diforder in the Plantations in the Parts of Aminica call'd New England, which if they be the and fuffer'd to run on, would tend to the Dishonour of the Kingdom, and utter Ruin of da Plantation; for Prevention whereof, and for the orderly fettling Government, according to the Intention of those Patents, which have granted by his Majesty, and from his late Royal Father King James; it hath pleased his Majelby, that the Lords and others of his most bohoured Privy-Council, should take the same? into Confideration. Their Lordships, in the first Place, thought fit to make a Committee of this Board, to take Examination of the Matters informed which Committee having alled divers of the principal Adventurers in that Plantation, and heard those that are Complainants against them, most of the Things in-66 formed 1

"Government, or principal Adventurers, which " in due Time is further to be enquired in " have thought fit in the mean time, to deck " that the Appearances were fo fair, and blin of fo great that the Country would prove ! " beneficial to this Kingdom, and profitable the Particulars, as that the Adventures " Cause to go on cheerfully with their Und " takings, and neft afforce, iff Things were d ried, as was presended; when the Potential granted; and accordingly; la by the Park is appointed, his Majery would not only " tain the Liberties and Brivileges therete Togranted, but Supply any! Thirty farther Limight tend to the good Government, Pro " sity and Comfort of his People there, of a Place, Ge. einen Printe Parents .. 18 ort maille his Majetty, and from his late loyal Father King James, it bash pleased his In the Flees mentioned in this Order, the came over shree famous Nonconformilt Minita the Reverend Mr. John Catton, Mr. Thomas Hosh and Mr. Samuel Stone; Mr. Catton's Wife ! brought to-bed of a Son while they were out Sea, whom he called Sea-born, in Memory of Place of his Nativity: He was afterwards a mous Minister in New-England. Mr. Cotton, up his Arrival, was immediately chosen Assistant

beamof ..

THE HISTORY JAB. 16:

formed being demod; and resting to be provided by Parties, that must be called from that Plan which required a long Expense of Time; at their Lordships finding, they were upon Dette of Men. Victuals, and Merchandises

that Place, all which would be at a Stand

or take Sufpicion that the State here had

" be) of fome particular Men upon the gene

the Adventurers should have Discouragement

good Opinion of that Plantation to their Lo

thips not laying the Faults or Fancies (if a

Ar. M hurc Bolton, he la he F

evited ot be niniA ardly rowde

Mr. ritain Church p cert emme

ed ou ppen nd Con eived 1 nce wi ave k ipline

wed Church bout th Church her in

ent from end to phole: od or

637, 2 nd Co action Church

roper Colony, 1633

Prov

dife

and, carren

Lon

(if a

which

d and

eck

Hos

e la

able

Under

to mi

A) (

100

onekl onekl syo

nista

Tooks

e 1

out

of the

Soa d

ant

M

Mr. Wilson at Boston, and continued with him till is Death. Mr. Hooker was chosen Pastor of a thurch at New-Town, about three Miles from the fight, since known by the Name of Cambridge, there some of his Friends had begun a Settlement he last Year, and Mr. Stone was his Assistant. The Fame of these Mens settling in New-England, with over vast Numbers of Puritans, who could not be easy under Archbishop Land's severe Administration; insomuch, that, for several Years, ardly a Vessel came into these Parts, but was movided with Passengers for New-England.

Mr. Collier, in his Ecclefiaftical History of Greatritain, fays, that these Diffenters formed a hurch this Year upon Calvin's Model, and drew certain Canons and Constitutions for the Goemment of it, a Copy of which he has transcried out of the Paper-Office, and placed it in his appendix, (Numb. CXI.) with this Title, Comons of Constitutions of the Church of New-England, refixed 1634. But this Writer had no Acquaintace with the Affairs of New-England, or he must ve known that Calvin's Model of Church Difpline was never yet received, or generally folwed in that Country. Tis true, there were surches erected in feveral Parts of the Country. bont this Time; but 'tis no less true, that every, hurch, or Society of Christians that met togeer in one Place look'd upon itself as indepenou from the others, and therefore could not preend to make Canons and Constitutions for the shole: Befides, there was no fuch Thing as a Syod or Convocation in the Country, till the Year 637, and that was called, not to make Canons nd Constitutions, but to suppress an Antinomian action that had like to have overturned both hurch and State, as the Reader will fee in its roper Place. The Churches of the Massachuset olony, in their first Settlement, managed themfelves

156 The HISTORP of [An. 1634.

erdra

being Sheep TH

of the

and C

from

edice murde

hy alle

nd no

Powde

effel.

ben k

x Me

The P

nece of

f thei

e Riv

elcue

ompa

e Ca

prize their nknow

t the

elation

eir C

nemy'

OW LI

wever

laft.

On amuel S

, diec

ire for ind; w

lessacht

bexa :

and a

felves very much according to Mr. Cotton's Model, in his Book of the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven which was agreeable to the Practice of the Ind. pendents; but they had no Scheme of their own, either recommended, or received by all their Churches, till the Year 1648; and how different that was from these pretended Canons and Confitutions, the Reader will observe by comparing them together. I am at a Lois to think who the Authors of these Canons should be, and how such a fourious Paper thould come to be recorded in the Paper Office. I am latisfied they were neither drawn up, nor received in New England; but be cause they relate to the Affairs of the Country, and fome curious Persons on that Side of the Wa ter may have a mind to see them, I have copied them from Mr. Collier, and given them a Place m the Appendix, Numb. 11. 2 and lo suo la

THE Summer proving very hot, produced fort of malignant Fever in the Colony of Plymouth of which many fell fick, and above twenty died, among whom was the Excellent Mr. Samuel Paller, the only Physician, and Surgeon of the Place, he was a good Man, and very fuccessful in his Profession, which made his Loss fo mud the greater. The Indians fuffered extremely by the Fever, for want of Medicines, and other Con or Society of Christians that Esinatry

But the next Summer the Small-pox prove more fatal to them, a Disease which the Indian dread more than the Plague itself, and not with out Reason; for they are usually very full of them, and for want of Beds, Linnen, and other Necessaries, they fall into a most lamentable and loathfome Condition; for having nothing but hard Matts to lie upon, when the Pustles break they flick to the Matt, and every time they turn themselves, some of their Skin sleas off, till at length they are all of a gore Blood, and then being

being fore, they eateh cold, and die like rotten

Cheen

634.

Inde

OWI.

their

Con-

raring

o the

v fuch

led in

either

ut be-

intry

Wa

opid

Place

0 13

eed a

nouth

died.

amin

fthe

efsfu

mud

ly by

Con-

אושונ

rov'd

edians with-

them,

Ne-

and

but

oreak

turn

ll at

then

THE Indians on the Borders murdered several of the English this Summer. Captain Stone nd Captain Norton, failing in a small Barque from New-England to Virginia, went in at Con-ufficus River, where the Indians surprized, and indered them in the Night, Stone was killed as he afleep in the Cabbin, but Norton made a long ad noble Defence in the Cook-Room, till the owder which he had fet before him in an open estel, blew up and put out his Eyes; he was n killed with the rest of the Crew, which were Men, and the Goods were fold to the Pequets. The Pequots had the Affurance to vindicate this ecof Barbarity, alledging that the Indians did it their own Defence, the Captain having feized two their Men, and obliged them to pilot him up River against their Wills; That, in order to cue their Men, they ordered nine of their ompany to watch the Barque, who observing c Captain to go ashore with two of his Men, prized them in the Night, and killed them their Sleep, then going to the Barque, by an known Accident it blew up, and was burnt. there is little Credit to be given to this elation, for 'tis not likely that the Captains, and er Crew would lie ashore all Night in an nemy's Country, nor that the Barque should ow up, without being attacked; the Pequots wever kept the Goods, but paid dear for them

On the second of August, the Reverend Mr. anuel Skelton, first Pastor of the Church at Samuel Skelton, first Pastor of the Church at Samuel Skelton, first Pastor of the Church of Lincolnine for Nonconformity to the Church of Engine which enclined him to engage with the sessions of Planters; he came over accordingly with

\* Mather, Book VII. 4 7.

moderate New-England Memer. Pr 92: wo aid to

\* Mather, Book VII. p. 7.

163

in Cl

n wh

utho

Colour

Govern led fr

car s that

itgan

e Las

reatif fall v me re

ross, 1

hers co

off off

anners

ellary ;

t was

moduc

gainst

was in

.163

and fe

els u m w

who o Nea

join

retir

Smil

Dilmi

to t

fs, a

ns, t y cho

Settle

ar No

enera Fam

T

Mag glan fed h

whi es w

a;

yet I

o de

xact

oers !

Church at Salem, to communicate occasionalwith the Church at Boston, and because they ald not agree to it, he withdrew from them, of fer up a feparate Meeting in his own Ploule. which many of his zealous Admirers reforted. he Ministers of the other Churches took a great of Pains to convince him of his Errors, but no Purpote ; whereupon the Magistrates interand banished him the Massachuset Colony, a Disturber of the Peace of the Church and mmonwealth. I'll give the Reader but one sample of the feditions Tendency of Mr. Wil-Principles, and the Influence they had on e publick Peace: \* One of his Admirers, in the at of his Zeal against Superstition, by his own hithority cut the Red Cross out of the King's Colours, for which he was reprimanded by the overnment, turn'd out of his Place, and difaled from bearing any Office in the State for one ear but the the Action of tearing the Colours that publick Manner was univerfally disapov'd, as riotous and seditious, yet the People an to be divided in their Opinions concerning Lawfulnels of the Crofs in the Banner; nay, the patroverly got into the Prefs, several learned tratifes being writ on both fides; but the worst all was, that the Trained Bands were divided, me refusing to follow the Colours which had a ross, lest they should do Honour to an Idol; oers complying with it, left they should feen to of their Allegiance to the Crown of Engand But to make all Sides easy, it was agreed last that the Gross should be kept in the enners of Castles and Ships, where it was ne-Mary; but in the Banners of the Trained Bands was generally omitted, till it was very lately troduced. Sentence of Banishment being read gainst Mr. Williams, the whole Town of Salem was in an Uproar; for he was effected an ho-Mather, Book VII. p. 11.

160 The HISTORY of [An-16: nest, difinterested Man, and of popular Tale in the Pulpits and such was the Compassion the People; occasion d by his Followers raising Cry of Persecution against him, that he won have carried off the greatest part of the Inhabita of the Town, if the Ministers of Boston had interposed, by sending an Admonition to Church of Salem, with a Confutation in Write of Mr. Williams's Errors, shewing their Tenden to disturb the publick Peace both in Churcha State, tho' he always opposed what he called Bloody Tenet; that is, every kind and degree Perfecution for Confcience fake; but by means the greatest Part of the People were fa fied, or content at least to abandon their d Mr. Williams, to whose Opinions and Doctrin they were but too much devoted.

cco

Cbi

Provid

rerno Divin

nd w

A

hom

firou

minft

ting in to

as to

the Ar

mme

the r

y am

Got

red

lays c

3 1

ntinom

ent to

ifed th A amo

te to 1

mmo

ains.

nd co VOL.

Bur after all, a confiderable Number of Friends refolved to hazard their Lives and Fo tunes with him , with thefe he travelled town the South, and fettled in the Spring of the Ti 1634-5, at Moofbafick, without the Jurisdid of the Massachusets, which they called Providen here they incorporated into a Church, but p ceeding from one Whimfy to another, the foon crumbled to pieces, every one following own Fancy, till at last Religion it felf grewi Contempt, and the publick Worthip of G

was generally neglected, de Boodl world les

M'R. Williams lived in these Parts above le ty Years afterwards, and acquirted himfelf well in many Things, that he regained the go Opinion of his Countrymen, and held a Corre spondence with many worthy Persons in the C lony from whence he had been banished; he w recommended to the Favour of the Massachu Government, by some of the English Nobiling but they could not be prevailed with to take o the Sentence against him; he writ very handsome again neft.

Mather, Reak VII

n-161

Tal

affor

railing

e wou

had

to

Want

ender

iệch a

alled

egree

by t

re fa

eir d

octri

ruolo

of

nd Fo

towar he Yo Ididi

viden

ut pr

erid.

ing !

ew in

ve le

rfelf

ie goo

Corre

the Co

he w

Tachul

obilin

ake o

forme

again

gainst the Principles and Practices of the Quilers, and was very diligent in converting the Indians in his Neighbourhood, of whose Maniers, Customs, and Languages, he published an account: He was very serviceable in obtaining Charter for the Government of Rhode-Island; which was in the Neighbourhood of his Town of Providence, and was sometimes chosen their Government. In a Word, if he had never dabbled in Divinity, he would have been esteemed a great and useful Man.

A Fleet of no less than 20 Sail of Merchantnen, arrived at New-England this Summer with ds and Passengers for the Plantation, amongst nom was Mr. Henry Vane, afterwards Sir Henry line fun. a warm, hot-headed young Gentleun whose Zeal for pure Religion made him frous to come into these Parts; his Father was minft his making the Voyage, but the King, ing informed of his Son's Inclinations, obliged into confent to it for three Years. His Delign s to have begun a Settlement upon the Banks the River Connecticut, but the People, upon Arrival, complimenting him with the Gomment of the Maffachusels for the next Year. the room of Governour Hains, he resolved to among them: He was no fooner advanced to Government, in the Year 1636, but he apared to be a Person of no Conduct, and no lys equal to the Post he was preferred to; bea trong Enthuliaft, he openly espoused the tinomian Doctrines, and gave fuch Encouragethe to the Preachers and Spreaders of them, as ifed their Vanity, and gave them fuch an Inteamong the People, as the very next Year had to have prov'd fatal both to the Church and ommonwealth. It was not in the Power of Mr. ani, during his being Governour, to put an nd to the Antinomian Tenets, the he stifled VOL. I

289

How How

in the later of th

ke a

ntion.

In

Re

k in

durch

itatio

ovage

e Pin

anner

ater,

Piece

wet

ept N

Tha

lying.

by th

m aft

s thro Wife

ind w

e Rock

ATI

t. Rick

lather,

orth Cl

at D

re a B

above

them for the present; but as foon as Mr. Van was chosen Governour, they burst out into Flame, one Party branding the other as Antin. mians and Familifts; the other reproaching their Opponents with being Legalits, or for a Covenant of Works; but when Mr. Winthrop was recholed Governour the Year following, he exerted all his Power to crush the Sectaries in the Bud, which be accomplished in a great Measure, by calling Synod at New-Town, or Cambridge, to fettle th Differences, and banishing some of the chief of them out of the Colony, as will be feen in in proper Place.

" MR. Vane's Election (fays a New-English Me " nufcript) will remain a Blemish to their Jude

" ments " who did elect him, while New-Em " land remains a Nation of for coming from En

" land a young unexperienced Gentleman, by the

"Industry of some who thought to make a Too of him, he was elected Governour, and before

4 he was scarce warm in his Seat, fell in with

" the Sectaries, and facrificed the Peace of it " State to them, thereby leaving us a Cawat

that all good Men are not fit for Government" Some Time after he returned privately to Es land, and was chosen a Member of the Long Pa liament; and being an active Statesman in tho Times, and an Enemy to all Sorts of Monarchy he was excepted out of the King's Pardon, as executed as a Traitor, June 14, 1662, about the goth Year of his Age. Dr. Kennet, Bishop Peterborough, fays, He submitted to the Block in very discomposed Manner to But if this were true

the Treatment he met with on the Scaffold, w enough to have discomposed a Man of bette Principles than his; for as foon as he began

speak, the Drums and Trumpets were ordered in his or appropried good at some drow Mather, Book III. p. 77. + Complete Hifton

England, Vol. III. p. 298.

534.

Vane

to s ntim. their enani holen

ll his

ch he

le th ief o in in

5 Ma Jude. -E80

En

oy the

Too

before

With

aveat

nent' En

Par

archy

put th

op o

ck in

e truc

d. Wa

bette

gan

ered t

drow

tifton)

204

Hown his Voice with their Note; wild the Sheif offered to fratch his Papers one of his Hunds, but he tore them in Pieces, and seconding to the Report of foune that were prefent at his Execution, and those none of his Friends neither, he died le's Roman, with the atmost Bravery and Refor refired into the Woods.

In the fathe Fleet with Mr. Pane, came over Reverend Mr. Avery, who, upon his Arrival, is invited to Marble Bead, But there being no nurch formed in the Place, he declined the inand went to Newbert but the Magis ites triging the common Good, he as last connied, and embarked with Mr. Thebery and our cwenty-three more in a Pinnee for Marble Upon the Tath of August, as he was on his vage, there atole as great a Storm as ever was win in those Parts of the World, which drave Pinnace upon a Rock, and tore ic in fuch a laner, that it was in an littlene half full of ater, and in a very few Minutes hattered will Pieces; aff the Company got upon the Rocky were fuccessively washed off and drowned, ment Mr. Thacher and his Wife, Mr. Avery and Thatber held one another by the Hand, relying to die together; Mr. Avery was walked by the next Wave, and drowned; Mr. Thacker n after followed him, but by another Wave thrown afhore very much bruifed, and found Wife a Sharer in the like Deliverance. The ind was from hence called Thacher's Woo, and Rock Avery's Fall

Ar the same Time came over the Reverend Richard Mather, Grandfather of Dr. Cotton lather, at present the worthy Paster of the orth Church in Boston , he succeeded Mr. Warat Dorchester in the Year 1636, and continued re a Bleffing to all the New-England Churches above thirty four Years.

## The HIST ORY of [Au, 1625. 164

THE Indians on the Borden Still continued their Excursions against the English, they surprised a Bark about this Time sailing from the Massach. fet-Bay to the Southward, which by Stress of Wes ther was drove ashore at Long-Illand, and plus dered it, killed several of the Sailors, and the retired into the Woods.

A Project having been formed the la 1636. Year, for making a Settlement on the Banks of the River Gonnesticut, as well no give a Check so the Infolence of the Poquot is dians, as to enlarge the English Frontiers, Agent were fent to view the Country, who made he an advantageous Report of the Fruitfulnels of the Soil, and Largeness of the River, as made man of the Planters belonging to the Towns of New Town, Dorchester, Water-Town, and Roxbury, who began to be straightned for Room, entermine Thoughts of transplanting themselves think Mr. Thomas Hooker, Minister of New-Town, po himself at the Head of these new Adventure who were about 100 in Number; they let out the Month of June, and travelling on Foot wit their Children and Baggage about nine or to Miles a Day, they arrived at the Banks of the River Connecticut in somewhat less than a For night: They pitched on the further Side of the River, and began a Town which they calls Hertford. After these another Detachment wa from Dorebester, and built a little Town, which they called Windfor. A third Party went from Water-Town, and built Weathersfield; and a found from Roxbury, and built Springfield. They be agreed to be supplied with Provisions for the fir Year from the Bay, but the Weather coming very hard on a sudden, the Vessel which w freighted with their Provisions, was frozen up the Mouth of the River fixty Miles below the Plantation, by which Means they were exposed inconceivab

14 2

Tuk

incon velle and t Deat them Groui of Ma they c cefs. 1

0,0

fibfift their from for the ome i them fe

ney ea Magifi after t hey if oratio by and hey ob oyed b

Son ettlen England ity, w

ome I in thro Brook's om R Charles,

ll that ends it the Spa he Sea

outh o ia, acco

d their

ifed 1

Machy-

We

plun-

d tha

he h

on the

well n

tot In

Agent

e fuc

of th

man

New

Z, WX

tertair

hitha

turen

out i

or to

of th

For

of th

calle

WC

whic

from

fourt

ey ba

e fir

ingi

h w

nb

w th

fed

ivab

inconceivable Hardships. Many of them travelled back to the Bay in the Depth of Winter, and others who attempted it, were frozen to Death by the Way; but the greatest Part of them had Courage enough to maintain their Ground, in Defiance of those two great Enemies of Mankind, Hunger and Cold. The next Spring they carried on their Plantations with such Succels, that they were not only in a Capacity of fiblifting themselves, but of making Head against heir Enemies. They had a fort of Commission from the Government of the Maffachuset-Bay, or the Administration of Justice, till they could ome to a more orderly Settlements but finding themselves without the Limits of their Jurisdiction, bey entered into a voluntary Affociation, chufing agiftrates, and making Laws for themselves, fer the Example of the Colony from whence bey issued. Thus they continued until the Repration of King Charles II, when, by the Indury and Application of Mr. John Wintbrop, jun. ey obtained as ample a Charter as was ever enyed by any People. The party of The Line Lands

Som a few Years after the Beginning of this ttlement, George Fenwick, Elq; was fent to Newingland, on Account of Several Persons of Quamy, who had bought of the Lord Say and Brook. me Lands on the Banks of the River which In thro' Connecticut Colony, The Lord Say and wik's Title to that Territory, came by a Grant om Robert Earl of Warwick, to whom King barles, about the Year 1630, made a Grant of that Part of New-England which lies and exends itself from a River called Narrhaganset, for e Space of 40 Leagues upon a trait Line, near be Sea-shore towards the South-west, and by outh or West, as the Coast lies towards Virgir in, accounting three English Miles to the League; nd also all and fingular the Lands and Heredita-

M 3

ment

redr

biddir

God t

habita

Parts

ned,

**lende** 

his H

Indian

Oldbar

fendec him

was fo

on hin

fets re

Nation

TH

grow1

profec

opprei

and er

Inform

Minif

hione

Sacrat

Eccles

himfel

were n

Hardf

of the

ccedim

Suffere

ferings

very 1

in th

Books

becauf

the A

would

to be

tence

ments lying and being within the Lands afore faid. North and South, in Latinide and Breadth and in Length and Longitude of and within all the Breadth aforefaid, throughout the main Land there, from the Western Ocean to the South Sea and all Lands, Go, which Grant the Earl of War. wick made over to William Vifcount Say and Seal Robert Lord Brooks, Robert Lord Rich, Charles Fiennes, Big; Sie Nathaniel Rich, Sir Richard Sal. ionfeall, Richard Knightly, Efg; John Lym, Eig John Hampden, Elq, John Humpbry, Elq; and Herbert Pelban, Efq. as appears by a Copy of the Patent bearing Date Anno rogs. Which I men tion the rather, because it confirms what has been reported by feveral Historians, that Mr. Pm. Mr. Hampden, Mr. Pelbam, and other great Men in the Long Parliament, were about to remove to New-England before the Alterations which have pened at home kept them here to I have I

Mr. Farboire feated himself at the Mouth of the River, and built the Down called Say Brok. Your Wintbrop, Esq., assisted him in his Undertaking, and had Thoughts of settling there himself; to which End he obtained a Grant of some of the Land, but neither he, nor Mr. Farbies finding the Encouragement shey expected, by Confert of their Principals, they fold all their Right and Title to their Land to the Colony of Connession; who were the more willing to purchase it, because they had no manner of legal Title, as yet, to any of the Lands they possess without the Eine of the Massachuset Charter.

the Diffurbance they could, which obliged them to keep together in a Body for their Defence the Indians however picked up feveral Stragglers, as they were going about their Buliness, and put them to the most cruel and barbarous Death

Oldmixon's Brit. Emp. Vol. I. in Pref. p. 12.

536,

orc.

dth 1

n all

and

Sea.

Wat.

Seal.

perks

1 8al.

Efe

and

fthe

men

been

Men

nove

hap

h of

track.

nder-

him-

it of

Fen-

acd.

their

ny of

pur-

legal

lefs'd

s all

them

nce :

elers,

and

eath.

dipg

linquent

bidding them in their Torments call upon their God to deliver them. Mr. John Oldham, an Inhabitant of the Massachusets, going into those Parts with a small trading Vessel slenderly manned, they pick'd a Quarrel with him on some slender Pretence, seized his Vessel, and cut off his Head with a Hatchet, at a Place which the Indians call Manisses, but the English, Block-Island. Oldham was a brave Man, and would have defended himself, if his Men would have frood by him, but being overpowered with Numbers, he was forced to submit to the Death they inslicted upon him; but it was not long before the Massachuses in revenged his Murder upon the whole Pequot Nation, as the Reader will see in the next Chapter.

THE State of Religion in England was still growing worse and worse; for the Archbishop profecuted the Puritans with the utmost Rigour, oppressing them in all Quarters of the Land, and encouraging the Scum of the Reople to turn latermers against them; if a fober conscientious Minister eventured to reprove one of his Parihimers for Drunkenness, or refused him the Sterament, he was certainly fent for up into the Exclesiastical Court, and deprived of his Living, himself imprisoned, and his Family ruined. Men were not suffered to complain, nor publish their Hardships to the World; to express one's Fears of the Growth of Popery, to Ceffure the Procodings of the Stan-Chamber; may to pity the Sufferers was an unpardonable Crime The Suftrings of Dr. Baftwicky Burton and Prynne, this very Year, are a proof of this p they were tried in the Star-Chamber, for publishing Libellous books against the Hierarchy of the Church, and because the Defendants Council would not fign the Answers which they had drawn up, the Court would not receive them, but order'd each Person to be proceeded against pro Confesso: The Sentence of the Court was 500% upon each De-

" felv

Maj

Cle

out

Can

ere w

feek

he XI

i Nan

Time t

he Arc

happ

lere mo

ingdo

But

Govern

emfelv is Sun

nced a

arts of

olony rend 1

very g

aded th

formed

dicut ]

ble to

urchafed

tween

vides th

w-York

End o

the B

ey buil ves Na

ded they be the

linquent to the King, standing in the Pillor with the Loss of Ears, and the very Remainder of Ears, after which they were committed close Prisoners to several remote Islands, no Access of

Friends being allowed them.

The Ecclesiastical Authority being screwd up to such a Height, and the Point of it directed chiefly against the Puritant, 'tis no Wonder that vaft Numbers, both Ministers and People, transported themselves to New England at it, and published a Proclamation bearing Date April the 30th " "To restrain the disorderly "Transporting of his Majesty's Subjects to the " Plantations in America without a Licence from his Majesty's Commissioners, because of the many idle and refractory Humours, subofe only w orincipal End soas to live without the Reach of " Authority," And the next Day an Order was made in Council, A That the Lord Treasurer of England should take speedy and effectual " Course for the Stay of 8 Ships now in the \* River of Thames prepared to go for Now-England, and should likewise give Order for .15 the putting on Land all the Paffengers and Provisions therein intended for the Voyage." In thefe Ships were + Sir Matthew Boynton, Sir William Conftable, Sir Arthur Hazlerig, Mr. John Hampden, and Oliver Cromwell, who with several other Gentlemen were removing to New-Eneland and because several of the Clergy under Ecclefialtical Centures were willing to accept of the fame Protection and Refuge, therefore and other Order of Council was directed to the Lord Admiral " To ftop all Ministers unconso formable to the Discipline and Geremonies of # the Church, who frequently transport them-

Compl. Hift, of Engl. Vol. III. p. 83. A Mather, Book L. p. 23. Bates Elench. Mot. Nup. Par. II. p. 219. Dugdale , View of the Troubles of England, p. 459.

37.

low

nder

close

fs of

ben

wed

Von-

and

land

rage

Date

derly

the

of the

aly or scb of

was furer

ctual

the New-

refor

and

, Sir

veral En-

ander

ccept

e an-

the

COD-

es of

bem-

elves

ather,

, 219

Gives to the Summer Mands, and other his Majesty's Plantations abroad; and that no Clergyman should be suffered to go over without Approbation of the Lords Archbishop of Canterbury and Bishop of London." So that me was a double Perfecution of the Puritans; hey were not suffered to live at Home, nor yet feek Peace and Refuge Abroad, When Lewis k XIVth, King of France, repealed the Edick Nants, he allowed his Protestant Subjects a Time to go into Banishment, and shelter themeves among those that would receive them; but he Archbishop's Zeal carried him farther, for he wild neither let those poor People, that were so shappy as to differ from him in a few Rites and remonies of human Institution, live in the ingdom, nor out of it.

Bu T notwithstanding the watchful Eye of the overnment, fo many Paffengers transported emselves and their Families to New-England is Summer, as over-stock'd the Bay, and proiced a fourth grand Settlement on the South-west arts of Connecticut River. The Leaders of this olony were Theophilus Eaton, Esq; and the Resend Mr. John Davenport, who came over with very great Retinue of Acquaintance and Folvers. The Massachusets would fain have peraded them to fettle in the Bay, but they being formed of a large Bay to the South-west of Condicat River, commodious for Trade, and cable to entertain those that were to follow them, inchased of the Natives all the Land that lies tween that River and Hudson's River, which wides the Southern Parts of New-England from w-York, and removed thither towards the lat-End of the Summer. They feated themselves the Bay, and spread along the Coast, where built first the Town of Newbaven, which wes Name to the Colony; and then the Towns

The HISTORN OF JAN. 1637 of Guilford, Milford, Stamford, and Brainford After some Time they crossed the Bay, a made several Settlements in Long-Hand, erecting Churches in all Places where they came, after the Independent Form, of which Mr. Davenpart was very great Patron. But the Newboven Colon lay under the fame Difadvantage with Connellin as to a Charter, they were without the Mal bujet Jurisdiction, and were therefore under Government, nor had any other Title to the Lands, but what they had from the Native They entred therefore into a voluntary Combin tion, and formed themselves into a Body politic after the Manner of those of Connecticut. The they continued till the Year 1664, when Kin Charles II. united the two Colonies, and by Charter fettled their Liberties on a folid Found tion. pm 963

WHILE the South-west Parts of New-Engla were thus filled with Inhabitants, the North-Parts of the Country were not neglected. The were ample Regions on this Side, beyond the Li of the Massachuset Patent, where new Settlemen were attempted by some that were made und under the Massachuset Government, in the Tim of their Antinomian Quarrels , and by others, the had no other View but enriching themselves b the Fishing Trade at Sea, and the Beaver Tra ashere. Thus were the Provinces of East-Han bire and Main peopled, and continued a separa Government, till being wearied out with Que rels and Divisions among themselves, they pe tioned the General Court of the Mossachujel-Be to be taken under their Protection, and were a cordingly received this bevomer bus the Col

of the Rife of the four Settlements that were made in New-England within the Compass of seventer Years. There was another small one made son

rime he Ju hat w braine ation Govern

imits
ave in
rovin
Som
onden

a disp wa Su ne Na neviou New-E

Intrand and Int and Al

hem h relcome n take : ut giv: leed be

nt a ve night g Dwners hat La

reference Fish would not

darfhes leat Ca lone in

dds, Tl

Tim

infor

si/an

rectin

ter t

Was

Colon

ecticu

Maf

der i

the

ativo

ditick

The

Kin

pund

ingla

th-e

The

ie Li

emen

Tin

6, 1

ves b

Trac

Ham

epara

Qua

y per

et-Bo

ere a

CCOU

e mag

enter

e 108

Tim

time after in Rhede Island, upon the Borders of the Jurisdiction of Plymouth, by the Antinomians hat were banished from the Massachuset Bay, who brained a Charter for themselves upon the Restonion of King Charles II. and are still a distinct overnment from the Massachusets; but as the limits of their Country are very narrow, they are no Influence upon the publick Affairs of the province.

Some of the good People of New-England have ondemned these Settlements, as contrary to the aw of Nature, no foreign Prince having a Right dispose of a Country already inhabited, to his un Subjects, nor to give a Commission to drive vious Forfeiture ?: But in Answer to this, the led-England Gentlemen have declared, that their farance upon the Land was not with Violence d Intrusion, but free and fair, with the Consent nd Allowance of the People; the chief Sagares of all that Part of the Country entertaining em heartily, and professing they were all very clome; that none of the English were suffered take an Acre of Land from the Natives, with at giving them Satisfaction for it. It must ined be allowed, that the first Purchasers paid ta very Trifle for their Lands, and yet they hight give as much as they were worth to the luners at that Time; for it must be confidered. at Land was of little Use to the Natives, and erefore but of little Value; They lived chiefly Fish and Fowl, and Hunting, because they ould not be at the Pains to clear and break up Ground, And as for their Meadows and larshes, they were of no Use at all, for want of cat Cattle to feed them, of which there were one in those Parts of the World. Dr. Mather dds, That the English did not claim one Foot of Ground

<sup>\*</sup> New-England's First-Fruits, 1643, p. 8.

the

Eng

Ule

of t

babi

Col

Met

Pal

of th

of th

the.

Eng

Eff

slem

wbo

in ]

gran

Dea

Com

T

TIME

ion, o Miles I

undi

Ground in the Country, till they had fairly chased it of the Natives; nav, fo cautious w they of doing them any Injultice, that after for Time they made a Law, that none fould purch or receive any Lands of the Indians, without A lowance of the Court; and some Lands which is convenient for the Indians, they made a Law hou never be purchased out of their Hands. It w further enacted, That if any Indian should be cir lized, and defire to live among the English, should have an Alorment of Land, as they then Selves had; and if a competent Number of the should agree to live together, they should be in corporated, and the General Court should ga them Lands for a Plantation, as they do the En tiffs, the they had already bought their Claims them, It was further enacted. That if any of the English Cattle should do any Damage to the Con of the Indians, the Owners of them should be obliged to make good the Damage, and that the should give the Indians all friendly Assistance fowing their Fields, After all this, the Doctor thinks it very strange for Secretary Randolph t affirm. "That the barbarous Savages were never 45 civilly treated, but that the Government of 16 New-England were continually encroaching of their Lands, till at last they would turn then "hour of all." And if the Doctor's Allegation are true. That the Lands were purchased with a w buable Consideration from those Natives, who bad Right to dispose of them, according to the Customs the Country, Tuch an Objection must be very un reasonable, but if not, the New-England From holders must fatisfy themselves with this, the they have as fair a Title to their Estates, as an of the Europeans that have made Settlements upo the Continent of America, fince the first Discovery of it by the Spaniard. CHAP Ground

Men Bugland's Figh Francisco, 1646, p. 8.

11.162

005 W

purcha purcha hout A hich la

w tho It y

be cir

lifb,

7 the

of the

be in

d gran

aims of the

e Con

old b

at the

nce i

Dodo

olob t

neve

ent o

ng o

then

6 50

oms 9

ry us

tha San

upo

overy

A P.

## 

## CHAP. V.

Academies to defice the Preschiet has Pequet War. Disturbances occasioned by the Antinomians. The first Synod of New-England, with an Account of the Nature and Ul of Synods, according to the Principles of the Independents. The Story of Mrs. Hutchinson. Of Rhode-Island, and its Inbabitants. The Foundation of Harvard-College, and of the publick Library. The Method of Education, and of taking Degrees. Of the New-English Verfion of the Pfalms. A Stop put to the further Increase of the Colonies from England, by the Eclipse of the Episcopal Power. A Computation of the Number of Planters that settled in New-England before the Year 1641; with an Estimate of the Charges of the several Set-Hements. A List of the filenced Ministers who left their native Country, and settled in New-England. The Union of the four grand Settlements of New-England. The Death and Character of Mr. Brewster. The Commotions at Hingham. 200000 7000 400000

the defensive against the Indians, who watched all Opportunities to distress them in their Settlements. The Pequots, a politick and sierce Na-

lon, on the Banks of a fair River, about 12 liles East of Connessions-River, had been accessary

to

76 HISTORY of [An. 1637 to the Murder of Capt. Stone and his Ship's Crew as we have observed before, in the Year 1634 but being at War with the Dusch and Narrhagan at that Time, they were unwilling to come to an open Rupture with the English, but sen Messengers with Presents to the Governour of the Massachusets to defire his Friendship: Mr. Wit throp, however, difmis'd them without any politic Answer, but the Pequets preffing the Governor by a fecond Embaffy, he at last concluded a Peace with them upon these Conditions on That the " should deliver up those Men who have bee guilty of Stone's Death; that if the English thould have a Mind to plant at Connections they should yield up their Right to them, and that there should be a free Trade between the To this they agreed and deline the Bogliffs to mediate a Peace between them and the Narrbagonfeld, and for the facilitating of it to give them Part of the Prefent of Wangen and Beater that they had brought with them for they flood to much upon their Honour, in they would not have it known, that they brite their Enemies to make Peace; But the the Pequets yielded to the Demands of the English with Relation to Capt. Stone, yet they still justi fyed the Action, faying, That he was killed in just Quarrel, because be surprised two of the Indians and forced them to pilot his Vessel up the Rive of dinst their Wills. They added, That all that had any Share in the Action were fince dead, encept ho whom they would deliver up. But when a Bark was lent to receive the Criminals, and open Trade, they amused them with fair Words, bu nover performed a Tittle of their Contract, which broke off all further Correspondence.

Soon after this they murder'd Mr. Oldban and before the English had perfected their Settle ments on Connecticut-River, they fell openly upon them,

dis

hemi, oung

Dea

ancy and:

l, an d Co

e M

m ; W

troy the

Bro Hicut.

y'd,

Wot.

nd, u their

yet-I

ur of Co

hich

eir, P

ove THE

g up

tepara

hey u d joir

tellir ing

to g it in

affilte

they

for w lifb :

Crew

1634 Ganja

me to

of th

Wi

ofitiv

ernou

Poac

as the

a bee

Engli

efficu

D, an

en th

defire

m a

of it

ampu

them

, the

bribe

o' th

English

julti

din

idiahs.

Rive

rat ba

pt Pw

Bark

oen :

s, bu

which

ldbam

Settle

upon

them,

ent, killed o Men at Weathersfield, and took awa oung Women Prisoners, who had been somured Death, if the Suchem's Wife had not taken a ancy to them; and begged them of her Husand: Upon this, the Captains Endicest, Unders and Turner, were lent by the Governour Council of Boston with 120 Men to demand Murderers, but they refused to furrender em; the English therefore pursued them into Woods, kill'd one of their Men, and having droyed their Corn and Huts, returned home the Spring of this Year the Pequots affaulted Brook-Fort at the Mouth of the River Conficut, but wishout Success, it being well for h'd, and garrison'd with 20 Men however killed several of the People as they were Work in the Fields; this made the Plattere nd upon their Guard in all Places, and fend their Friends and Confederates in the Moffelet Bay for Affiltance Mr. Vane the Gouetw of that Jurisdiction write to the Governous Council of New-Plymouth to join with them. high they promifed, but were to dilatory the eir Proceedings, that the War was in a Man over before their Forces began to marchining THE Pequots, feeing the Storm that was com g upon them were not wanting in their reparations to make the best Desence they coulds ey urged the Narrhagenfess to make Peaces d join with them against the Common Enemy telling them that the English were overspreading their Country, and if they were fuffered to grow and encrease, would deprive themoof it in a little Time : That if the Narrhaganfets affilted the English in destroying the Pequoto. they did but make way for their own Ruin for when one Nation was destroyed, the Englifb would foon take Occasion to enslave the acrosimus braked bloom in " other:

<sup>\*</sup> New England Memorial, p. 100.

176 THE HISTORY OF [An. 1637

627.

many

were the

nick F lowers Raglift

nd h

n the

of the

THI

ne of

er Mi

was th

g, H

im. he first

ians to mas. Night,

f the I

lreak c

ofted 1

West;

ed to f

fthe A

f the

Centine

ut, Wa

aly blo

aptain

and a

ull the

b were

d; but

othing

VOL.

cheir Advice and join with them; they need not fear the Strength of the English, for the would not come to a pitch'd Battle with them but fire their Floules, kill their Cattle, and lie in Ambush for them as they went abroad upon their Oceasions; in which Case it was easy to foreste that the English could not long substift, but must either be starved with Hunger or forced to quit the Country." But the Defire of Revenge upon an old Enemy, who has offer'd them a thousand Injuries, made the Narrhagansers renounce all Proposals of Accommodation with the Pequets, and affish the English in

cheir Profecution of the War.

I'm the Beginning of May the Colony of Co mellicut fent out ninety Men under the Comman of Captain John Majon, afterwards Deputy Governour of the Colony, attended by Uncas an In Sachen, lately revolted from the Pequeti, i Garrison of Saybrook joined them with nineted Men under Captain Underbill; and the Maffach Ge Colony railed 160 Men, under the Comman of I/rael Strongbion, Efq: forty of which they di patched away immediately under Captain Patrick ne before their Arrival, the Colony of Comedia had thipped off their Forces, and landed them the Norrhaganiet Port. Captain Majon marche his Men immediately to the chief Sachem's Re dence, and acquainted him with the Reasons of their coming into his Country with an armo Force, defiring only a free Paffage through h Country; the Sachem yielded to their Request, bu told them their Army was too weak for the End my. Next Morning they marched to Niantick ewenty Miles up the Country, and were joined by 500 of the Natives, who drawing into a Ring made folemn Protestations, one by one, how ga lantly they would behave themselves, and how exist Arivered bushad

Tice

the

them

ė, an

bro

t wa

unger

ie De

O had

Na

moda

lifb i

of Con Outhan

y Go

an li

54 th

netec

Hach

iman

ey dil

atrick

rection

iem i

arche

Reli

ons o

armo

gh hi

At, bu

e End

antick

ned by

Ring

w gal

d how

many

any of the Enemy they would kill; but no fooner were they come to the Frontiers of the Pequot Counry, but the greatest Part of them, struck with a panck Fear, returned home; only Uncas and his Folowers declared, they would live and die with the English. However, tis observable, that even Uncas nd his Men, who had always hitherto marched the Van, now fell into the Rear, such a Dread the Pequets had they upon their Spirits.

THE Pequots were retired into two ftrong Forts. me of which was lituate on the Banks of the Rim Mistick; the other, about eight Miles farther, as the Head Quarters of Sassacus their Sachem, whose Name the Narrhagansets trembled, sayng, He was all one as a God, no Body could kill The Council of War determined to attack first Fort they should come at, which the Inhans took Care should not be that where Sassacus They made their Approaches to it in the Night, and fent an Indian to observe the Posture the Enemy, who found them all in a profound lep. The Army came up to the Fort about reak of Day; Captain Mason with his Company ofted himself on the East, and Underbill on the West; but the Narrhagansets, like Cowards, retind to fuch a Distance, as to be only Spectators the Action. When the Army came within a Rod the Fort, a Dog barked, and awakened the entinel, who immediately ran away, and cried ut, Wannux, Wannux, i. e. English, English; the oldiers entred the Fort at a Passage, which was block'd up with Bushes about Breast-high; aptain Majon was the first Man that leaped into and made good his Ground till his Men could ull the Bushes away. Upon this followed a harp Engagement, in which several of the Engwere wounded, and many of the Indians kills but the Houses in the Fort being made of othing but combustible Mats, joined close to Vol. I.

upon were

marc

order

noon

them

ng fo

ook (

of the

mrrow

n Ad

Army

AB

orces, ie *Peg* 

olony,

ictory being

illing

nt Car

iteer-(

as conc aemy ad alrea

n: H

eried the very one wards

my wa

afted al

lled fev

ners: T

ird his I

t Safface

dged ; t

New E

one another, the English fer them on Fire, and retired, posting themselves at all the Avenues, to hinder the Enemies making their Escape. The Fire, by the Advantage of the Wind, carried all before it; many were burnt to Death, which the Narrhaganiets, from a diftant rising Ground when they had posted themselves, beheld with infinite Pleasure and Satisfaction, dancing and hooping all the while, and infulting over the dying En-Some of the Pequots were that as they were climbing over the Pallifadoes; and they who had the Courage to fally out at the Gates in order to break through the Enemy, were either cut off by the English or the Narrhaganset; is that of four or five hundred Indians that were in the Fort, not above seven or eight made their Escape. This memorable Action happened on the 20th of May, and cost the English but two Men killed, and about twenty wounded. We qualb, the Guide that the English made Use of was struck with such Admiration at this Victory, that he embraced the Christian Religion, and a ter some Time became a Preacher of it to hi Countrymen; but they insulted him, and at last poisoned him, for it. The Reverend Mr. Shepberd of Cambridge, gives this Account of him:

Wequast, says he, the famous Indian at the River's Mouth, is dead, who leved Christ, and " preached him up and down, and then suffered "Mantyrdom for him. When he died, he gave his Soul to Christ, and his only Child to the English,

" in this Hope, that the Child should know more

" Christ than its poor Father did."

But the English had been so successful in destroying one of the Forts, they were far from thinking themselves out of Danger, for they were a great Way from Home, in want of all Necessaries, and assaid of the mighty Sassacus's falling upon

New-England's First-Fruits, 1643, p. 7.

were their Fears groundless, for as they were marching to the Pequet River, where they had ordered their Pinnaces to meet them, Sassacus fell men their Reer with 200 Men, which obliged them to march in close Order, and retreat, fighting for almost six Miles together; but the Indians took Care to keep pretty much out of the Reach of their Bullets; and when they saw them pass a marrow Passace, where they hoped to have gained a Advantage over them, they retired, and the

Army returned home in Safety.

537.

and

s, to

The

d all

h the

when

finite

ping

E.ne-

they

they

Jates.

either

s ; lo

re in

their

ed on

t two

m.

fe of

Story,

nd af

to his

at laf

Shep

him

at th

, and

effered

eve bi

glif

sore 9

fol it

from

y were

Vecel

falling

upon

ABOUT fourteen Days after, the Massachuset orces, to the Number of 120 Men, arrived in Pequot River , under the Command of Capt. ughton, which put new Life into the Connecticut olony, and made them resolve to pursue their idory, tho the Narrhagansets were gone home, being glad to see the Pequets humbled; but not lling to have them destroyed, they therefore nt Capt. Major with forty Men, and some Vonteer-Gentlemen, to join the Massachuset Forces the Pequot Harbour. Upon their Arrival it sconcluded to scour the Woods, and drive the memy out of the Country; for Saffacus's Men dalready mutinied, and had it not been for the atreaties of his Counsellors, had certainly killed n: However, they abandoned their Fort, diffled themselves into small Parties, and resolved try one to thift for himfelf. Many of them fled wards the Dutch Plantation, upon which the my was ordered to march that Way. They afted along the River, and scouring the Woods, led several of the Pequots, and took some Prioers: They beheaded two Sachems, and gave a and his Life, upon Condition that he would find Saffacus, and give them Advice where he was ged; but Saffacus suspecting him to be a Spy.

New-England Mem. p. 103. Incr. Mather, ib, p. 36.

after he was gone, fled to the Mobawks, and his Followers dispersed themselves in several small Parties up and down the Country, which the Eng

lish pursued till they broke to Precest

On the 13th of July they met with a Body eighty Men, and two hundred Women and Chi dren, in a small Indian Town close by a hideou Swamp, which they all flipped into before the English could come at them. The Army w then separated into several small Parties, the be ter to look out the Enemy; but upon the di charging of a Musket, they prefently joined an furrounded the Swamp, which was about a Mi in Compass; but Lieutenant Davenport, with 1 Men, coming in, after the Orders were give instead of joining the Army, marched directly to the Swamp among the Indians, where he as all his Men had like to have been loft; for the Swamp being boggy and full of Shrubs, they stud fast in the Mud, and were forced to receive the Shot of the Enemy, without being capable doing any Thing in their own Defence. Lieux nant Davenport was dangeroully wounded abo his Armpit, another of his Men was that in the Head; and they must all have perished, if & geant Riggs, and Sergeant Jefferies, with for Men, had not come in to their Relief, and draw them out.

THE Indians, after this, defired a Parley, which being granted, the Sachem of the Place, with for old Men, and their Wives and Children, can out, and having conferred with the English about two Hours, returned to their Company with last Resolutions of the English, which were a Pr mise of their Lives, provided they laid down their Arms, and delivered up all fuch amou them, as had killed any of the English. Stanton the Interpreter was fent the fame Night receive their Answer, which was this, That the

dear as fee the Arrow s he tertain.

would

Part of cooped pals, t Thicke

furroun from O let fly t

that the receive ing it g

Men a furrend nine M

feveral . Dipped Pursuit.

Woods puted t The P

vided. to the 1 away to disperse

the Pri chusets. an India

modest her Inte Weather

one of they wo

dren fr

would stand by one another, and sell their Lives as

and hi fmal

1637

e Eng

ody o

1 Chi ideou

re th ly wa

he be he di

ed an

a Mil rith 1

give tly in he an

for th y stud

ve t ible (

Lieute abo

in th

if Se

fon draw

2011

which n for

Can

abou ith th

a Pn

dow amou

M

ight at th

TOOU

dear as they could: And that Mr. Stanton might fee they were in Earnest, they sent such a Flight of Arrows after him, that if he had not run as fast s he could to get out of their Reach, he had ertainly been killed. The English then cut off a Part of the Swamp with their Swords, and having moped up the Indians within fuch a narrow Compals, that they could differn them through the Thickets, they flood to their Arms all Night, urrounding the Swamp at about 12 Foot Distance from one another; the Indians on the other hand et fly their Arrows so thick among the English, hat they pierced the Cloaths of feveral, but none eccived any confiderable Hurt. Towards Morning it grew very dark, which gave most of the Men an Opportunity to make their Escape, but he Women and Children, about Break of Day, furrendered at Discretion. In searching the Swamp nine Men were found dead upon the Ground, and leveral others buried in the Bog: Of those that lipped by the English, some were killed in the Pursuit, and others were afterwards found in the Woods dead of their Wounds, so that it is computed that not above twenty or thirty got away. The Prisoners, which were about 180, were divided, some to those of Connecticut, and the rest to the Massachusets; the Male Children were sent away to Bermudas, and the Women and Girls diperfed up and down in feveral Towns. Among the Brisoners that fell to the Share of the Massachildren of Mononetto an Indian Prince; the was a Woman of a very modest Countenance and Behaviour: It was by her Intercession, that the English Maids taken at Weathersfield, had their Lives given them; and one of her first Requests to the English was, That they would not abuse her Body, nor take her Childen from ber: The Governour therefore took

N 3

ibi

Bicat

House

of the

fame rous.

Wom

Dray.

emlai

of her

rofe at

County

" the

" Sale

" latio

" egya

der a God

nd ope

one obt

Arcenin Mr. Co.

People Admire

they in and und craftily

Ministe Men the

Gospel;

felf. T

but ibat

Charge of her, and made her Captivity as easy as

he could.

This Expedition against the Pequots struck such Terror into the rest of the Indians, that they came from all Parts, and begg'd the Protection of the English: Two of the Sachems of Long-Mand came to Mr. Stoughton, and desired to be under his Protection, and two of the Napannet Sachems submitted to Mr. Winthrop: 700 Pequots perished, and were taken Prisoners the Summer, among whom were 13 Sachems; the rest sled into distant Parts, or submitted them selves to the Mercy of the Conquerors, who divided them between the Narrhagansess and the Mobegins, whose Sachem Unicas had proved a very faithful Ally. Sassacus the mighty Sachem of the Pequots sled to the Maqua's, who at the Request of the Narrhagansets cut off his Head; his Country became a Province of the English, and was governed by such a Person as the English from Time to Time appointed to that Office.

While the Army was thus employed in the Field, the Commonwealth was almost torn in pieces by intestine Divisions, occasion'd by the spreading of Familistical and Antinomian Errors among the People: That the Reader may have a full View of the Controversy, I'll trace it down from its Original. The Members of the Church of Boston used to meet once a Week to repeat the Sermons which they had heard on the Lord's Day, and to debate upon the Doctrines contained in them, whereby they were sometimes entangled in Points of Divinity too high for them; these Meetings being peculiar to the Men, at least none else being allowed to debate in them; some of the zealous Women thought it might be useful for them to have such Meetings among themselves: Accordingly Mrs. Hutchinson, a Lincolnsbire Gentle-woman,

C. Mather, Book VII. page 14.

1637.

afy as

**Aruck** 

that

Pro

efire

e Ne

700 s this

e the

chem.

d the

very

of the

oun-

Was

from

n the

rn 19 the

rs a-

ve a own

urch

peat rd's

ined gled

hele

one

e of for

res:

tle-

woman, of a bold and masculine Spirit, and a great Admirer of Mr. Cotton, fet up one at her House grounding her Practice on these Words of the Apostle, that the elder Women are to teach the younger: The Novelty of the Thing, and the Fame of the Woman quickly gained her a numerous Auchence; the had no less than 60 or 80 Women at her House every Week to hear her pray, and repeat Mr. Cotton's Sermons, which the explained, and afterwards made fome Reflections of her own upon them. From these Meetings ame all the Errors that foon after overforead the Country , Mrs. Hutchinfon taught her Disciples. "That Believers in Christ are personally united with " the Sprit of God; that Commands to work out our "Sakvation with Fear and Trembling, belong to none but fuch as are under the Covenant of Works; bat Sanctification is not a sufficient Evidence of " a good State: She likewife fet up immediate Revelations about future Events, to be believed as equally infallible with the Scriptures;" and a great kny other Chimera's and Fancies, which unet, a Pretence of exalting the free Grace of hod, destroyed the practical Part of Religion. and open'd a Door to all Sorts of Licentiouspess. Tas incredible to think, how eafily these Notime obtained among the People; the good Women infinuated them into their Husbands, beening them under the venerable Name of Mr. Cotton, by which Artifice many unthinking People were deceived: Mrs. Hutchinson and her Admirers were indefatigable in spreading them; they infinuated themselves into all Families, and under a Shew of Humility and Self-denial, traftily undermined the Reputation of the best Ministers in the Country, calling them Legalists, Men that were not acquainted with the Spirit of the Cospel; nay, that were unacquainted with Christ bimfif. The whole Country was distinguished by N 4

LIG

ways

ready t

TH

n high

nd O

made b

Antinon

mght y

he Or

nd dis

o fuch

efired 1

nothe.

ondern

roneou

u to s ado e

otton w

timoro

tincipl

oblick, of all

arty in

nt of

him,

mult.

ime.

one fuc

Ways I

oubts ith his

open'

nemy b

cep.

e Party

tire to

one, if

this Criterion, fuch as were for a Covenant of Worth and fuch as were for a Covenam of Grace , thefe D. visions crept not only into Families, but in Churches, and into the Legislature itself ; its Colony of Plymouth was infected to fuch a De gree, that they starved away all their Old M. nifters, and let up Mechanics in their room There was fuch an Interest made against the made Election of Magistrates for the Massachuset Co. lony, to get in Gofpel-Marifirates, as they called them, that they were forced to adjourn the Com to New-Town, for Fear of a Riot. The Paci tried all Methods to keep in their old Governor Vane, they presented a Petition to the Court of the very Day of Election, with a Defign to his der their proceeding to a new Choice, where Course have kept in their Governour Vane and ther Year; but when they could not obtain the and the fober Party made a Shift to early h Election for Mr. Winterop \*, yet such was the fuence of the Faction among the inferior Of cers, that the Sergeants, whose Place it was attend the new Governour, laid down their Hi berts and would not act! The Governour however, like a wife Man, took no further Notice of the Behaviour at prefent, than to order his own So wants to take up the Halberts, and march before him; but when he was fettled in his Goven ment, he made them feel the Weight of his Di pleafure. Nay, the marching of the Army again the Pequots was retarded by these Men upon the very Account, because the Officers and Solden were too much under a Covenant of Works ! In Word, both Church and State were in the utmost Confusion, the Affections of the People were strangely alienated from one another; they were events nay, that eache undequark .. ...

## ONEW-ENGLAND.

537.

日言意

De

M.

000

言語語言

7 00

100

ld di ans-

19.7

21

01

as b

eva,

their Ser

efor

ven

Di

emt

Pth

diers

Int

in.

were

were

Ways

of the Raign and I what

the rest was consigned we

lways quarrelling, and upon every Occasion eady to come to Blows.

THE Reverend Mr. Cotton was at this Time high Reputation and Effeem for his Learning od Orthodoxy all over the Country, which made both Parries claim him for their own; the frinemians affirm'd, that the Doctrines they meht were regularly deduced from his Sermons : he Orthodox replied, that Mr. Cotton denied nd disavowed cheir Principles : Things came o fuch an Extremity at last, that Mr. Cotton was fired to declare himself freely upon these Heads the Pulpic, which he accordingly did, and ordenned most of the new Positions as false and roneous. But the Adversaries were advanced too to retreat with Honour, and therefore inad of being fatisfied, they perfecuted Mr. atton with the bitterest Reproaches, calling him timorous Man, that durst not abide by his own finciples; a Deceiver, that taught one Thing in which, and another in private; and one that had stall his Infight into the Gospel. One of the my more witty than the rest, sent him a Prent of a Pound of Candles, bidding his Servant him, that it was because be wanted Light. And mult be confessed, that Mr. Cotton had too an Opinion of Mrs. Hutchinfon for a long me, never imagining that the would have ne fuch Lengths ; for in his Company the was ways modest in her Discourse, proposing her oubts to him, and feeming highly fatisfied ith his Answers; but now his Eyes began to open'd, and he confessed with Tears, that the nemy bad been forcing Tares whilf be bad been The ill Treatment that he met with from e Party, made him resolve to leave Boston, and tire to New-Haven, which he had certainly ne, if the Civil Magistrate had not interposed,

and took fome effectual Measures for the real ing of Peace. " awold or owner or vis Pro

the

pest

Rin

eliver

e Cer ith ab

s of

ajorii

verely

TH. as the

CI

udgmo

eing t

r wil

ture rincip

to to Chur

calio

ales P

d L

osen de is

tha esent

pprob

orce ;

burcha of

ut onl

eir A

noth hurch

s, no ind M

Depriva

nder th

priv

A Falt had been appointed for this Purp as long ago as December laft; when Mr. O preached a very healing Sermon from dis will but Mr. Wheelwright, the other Preacher, link of following Mr. Cotton's Estample, filled his mon with bitter Invectives squint the M strates and Ministers of the Country, selling People, " " That they walked in Justo a Way M Salvation, as was, no better than a Covenan Morks: He compared them to Yours He Philifines, and exhorted fucly as were under " Covenant of Grace to combat them as a of greatest Enemies." The Magistrates heren fent for the Preacher o next Court day, and wing heard what he could fav in Defence of Sermon, they contembed with beife detions, tending to diffurb the publicks Beace of thousand deavoured to convince Mr. Wheelfaright of both fence, but could make no Impreffions apondin however, they gave him Time gill the news Sons, to confider whether he would make Submittion, or abide the Sentence of the Court Ens Antinomian Parcy were to alarm'd aid Arrack upon their Preacher, blat they metitog they the very fame Night, and dieserup @ Petiti on Remonstrance against the Proceedings of Court, wherein they declare it as their Opinion That Mr. Whatteright had northern guilty of all

" feditions Eact; that his Duttrine was not be tious, being no other than the Expressions

Scripture that it had produced no feeling Effects, for his Fellowers had not drawn the

" Swords, nor endeavoured to refcue their ime

" cent Brother; they defired the Court therefor "to confider the Danger of meddling with the of the civil Marshrase had now interpolled,

T. Welde's Account of the Rife, Reign, and Ruin of the Autinomians in New-England, 4to. 1692. † In Pres § Ibid. p. 24.

o rea

ndy t

Put

Giil.

ligh

his

Mc

ing

Wat

nant

Ho

unide

150 th

reu

nd l

of

S May

bio t

ME S

ry y

OUTW

atrid Ditog

ain

ofin

HOIR

ofar

stafe

nythe

inne

crefor

theth

Pro

n of the

n Pref

Advice.

Prophets of God, and to remember, that even the Apostle Paul himself had been called a pestilent Fellow, a Mover of Sedition, and a Ring-leader of a Sect." This Petition was elivered into Court within a Day or two after a Censure of Mr. Wheelwright's Sermon, sign'd ith above 60 Hands, whereof some were Memas of the Court; but it was rejected by the ajority, and the chief of the Petitioners were verely punished for it the next Sessions.

THINGS growing still worse and worse, it s thought adviseable to call a Synod of all Churches in the Country; to give their algments upon the controversed Points: This ing the first Symod of New-England, the Reawill not be displeased to understand the aure and Use of Synods, according to the inciples of the Independents. A Synod, accordto them, is not necessary to the Being of Church, but is only to be called on special calions, for giving Advice and Counfel in de of Difficulty. It consists of the Ministers d Lay-Meffengers of the feveral Churches ofen from among themselves, whose Busiis to debate and determine the feveral Matthat are brought before them, and then to fent them to their feveral Churches for their pprobation, without which they are of no once; no Symod is allowed a Power to pass surch-Censures upon Persons, or put forth any d of Authority, Jurifdiction, or Discipline, t only to declare their Sentiments, and give or Advice. In a Word, an Independent Synod nothing elie but a Council to the feveral surches, called together upon proper Occasis not to make Laws and Decrees which shall nd Men upon Pain of Excommunication or eprivation, but to advise them how to act ider their present Difficulties; and if a Church private Person refuses to hearken to their

redi

AT

ere c

the

onde

ut M

the

em -

the

m, th nd in

ime I

f the

diffi

fome

in he

imony Davens

ontinu

n Phil

ready

aind th

penly

relation

p, not

oined,

Text of

Church

of the S

ONI

Voice c

eneral

Minds o

tion We

and Rea

Advice, the last Remedy is, to declare the will no longer hold Communion with them Magistrates have Power to call a Synod when the publick Welfare of the Country requires it; and may send to the Churches, to commission the Elders and Messengers to meet together, and assistant them with their Advice; but if the Magistrat neglects, or is of a different Religion, any particular Church may send to the rest, and desired their Advice in the same Way.

Such a Synod as this was now appointed

to meet at Newtown, August the 30th, in white

were present not only the Ministers and Messen gers of the feveral Churches, but the Mag strates for keeping the Peace, who were allowed not only to hear, but to speak, if they had Mind; a Place was likewife appointed for the Favourers of the new Opinions, and the Door were fet open for as many of the People pleased to come in and hear the Debates: The first Day was spent in choosing the Reveren Mr. Thomas Hooker, and Mr. Peter Bulkley Mode rators, and reading over a Lift of 82 erroncon Opinions which had been maintain'd in fever Parts of the Country, some of which were the most monstrous and absurd that ever wer heard ; the following Days were taken up i debating upon the feveral Points, in which the observed this Method win the Morning a Com mittee was employ'd in forming Arguments gainst the Errors to be confuted that Day, which

in the Afternoon were produced in the Synod

next Day the Defendants gave in their Reply

and produced their Arguments for the Support of

their fide of the Question; the third Day, the

Opponents made the last Reply. But the Anti

nomian Party were infufferably rude; they broke

in frequently upon the Order of Disputation and were so clamorous that the Magistrate

were obliged fometimes to filence them.

\* Ibid. in Pref.

e the

them

nen th

t ; an

n the

nd affi

gillia

7 parti

defin

1919

pointe

which

Aeffer

Mag

llowe

had

or th

Dog

ple

: Th

veren

Mode

oncou

leven re th

wen

up i

1 the

Com

nts a

which

ynod

Reply

ort o

y, th

Anti

brok

ation Arate

Ar length all the new Opinions in general ere condemned as contrary to the Word of God \*. the universal Suffrage of the Synod, and the ondemnation was figned by all the Members ut Mr. Cotton, who, tho' he express'd his dislike the major Part of them, refused to condemn em in the Lump; he differed from the Synod the Article of Justification, being of Opinithat Union to Christ was before Faith in bir. d in three or four other Articles relating to the me Head. The Synod endeavour'd to convince im of his Mistakes, but in vain; as for the rest the new Opinions, "He declared that he difliked them, as being some of them Heretical, some of them Blasphemous, some of them Erroneous, and All of them incongruous;" and promis'd to in heartily with his Brethren in bearing his Tefmony against them. Then the Reverend Mr. Devenport put an End to the Synod after it had mainued three Weeks, by preaching a Sermon Phil. iii. 16. Nevertheless whereto we have alundy attained, let us walk by the same Rule, let us and the same Things. After Sermon, he read openly the Determinations of the Synod with elation to the new Opinions, which were drawn p, not in the Form of Anathema's, but the Opion was recited, and this short Resection subpined, This we apprehend contrary to such and such Text of Scripture. He then exhorted the Miniers and Messengers to persuade their several churches to conform themselves to the Sentiments of the Synod, and so dismiss'd them.

ONE would have thought, this unanimous voice of the Synod, which was published for general Satisfaction, should have quieted the Minds of the People, but the Heads of the Faction were not to be vanquished with Scripture and Reason; for Mr. Wheelwright continued still

his

<sup>.</sup> C. Mather B. VII. p. 17.

M

bmilli

mfelf

ehe ( omise

ahin ilone

peifer

ípole Imer

ifer, 1 God

pole,

ful I

THI

n of

beelw

r. Fol

fon,

Cou

If the

mon Wor

to ti 12"

Mem

hat t

embe

loceed

o' he

chaved

an fo

piled.

MR.

es, wa

emon

nd har

his Preaching, and Mrs. Hutchinfon, her Affen bly, and their Followers were to influenced b their Doctrines, that when Mr. William went into the Pulpit, half the Congregation would out ; the Court therefore at their next Seffici which was on the fecond of Ottober, refolved have recourse to the last Remedy, which was the Sword of the Magistrace. They met at New Town; for the Town of Boston was to infecte with the new Opinions, that they were afraid a Riot; one of the Boston Deputies having fign ed the late Remonstrance in favour of Mr. Whit wright, and two of the others having spoke Vindication of it, were expelled the Court, in an Order fent to Boston to choose new Represen eatives, which the angry People could hardly be

perfuaded to comply with.

Bur the Court refolving to go through with their Work, \* furnmented Mr. Westwright give in his peremptory Answer, whether he won acknowledge his Offence in preaching his la feditious Sermon, or abide the Sentence of the Court; his Answer was, "That he had been guilty of no Sedition, nor Contempt ; that he " had delivered nothing but the Truth of Christ, " and for the Application of his Doctrine, that " it was made by others, and not by himfelf." The Court then defired him, out of a Regard to the publick Peace, to leave the Colony of his own Accord; which he refuting, they fentence him to be disfranchifed, to be barrished the Ju risdiction, and to be taken into Custody imme diately, unless he would give Security to depart before the End of March. Mr. Wheelwright ap pealed from the Sentence of the Court to the King of England, but was told, an Appeal did not lie in his Case: He refused, however, to give in Bail, and was therefore taken into Custody of the

Welde's Rife and Ruin of the Antinomians, p. 28, 29.

1.1637

Affen

ced b

rent u

tild !

effion

lved

vas th

New

nfecte raid

g fign

Whee

oke i

t, and

dly b

h wit

bt t

would s lat

of the

bear

hat h

hrift

s that

ifelf."

egan

enced

e lu

nme

ерап

ap-

the

did give

y of the Marshal; but the next Day he was more buildive, and relinquished his Appeal, declaring mells willing to submit to a simple Banishment; the Court gave him Leave to go home, upon smile, that if he departed not the Jurisdiction thin 14 Days, he should surrender himself isoner at the House of Mr. Stanton, one of the agistrates, and abide there till the Court should spole of him. Mr. Wheelwright continued in Baliment about 7 Years, but then being grown for, he renounced his Errors, begged Pardon God and his Country, was restored to his tople, and lived 30 or 40 Years afterwards an each Minister of Christ in the Town of Hamp-

THE Court proceeded next to the Examinam of the feveral Petitioners in Favour of Mr. belwright, and the first who was sent for was r. John Coggefhal . a Deacon of the Church of m, and one of their late Deputies in Court; Court charged him with Contempt, for faying, If they expelled Mr. Afpin for figning the Remonfirance, they had better make but one Work of all , for the his own Hand was not to the Remonstrance, yet his Heart was in it." Mr. Cogge/bal pleaded his Privilege, as Member of the Court; but was answered, hat the Court knew no Liberty any of its embers had to reproach and affront their loceedings in fo publick a Manner; however, o' he would not acknowledge his Offence, he theved himself with more Modesty and Respect an formerly, and was therefore only disfranifed.

Mr. Aspin, another of the late Boston Deputs, was called next, who had not only signed the tmonstrance, but was himself the Author of it, and had carried it about Town to get Hands to

<sup>·</sup> Welde, &c. p. 29.

192 The HISTORY of [An. 1637

ncou

ill th

ainin

Houf

Doctr

Temi

nonw

Condi

Offen

uture

Reflec

Propl

ould

di, th

f bis

denou

Acrity

he) b

this yo

wur I

on wit

ed he

being

diction

No

y the

he w

n ma

ed by

Charg

to fup

this P

Opinio

but th

Face,

excom

full C

about

V

it. He justified the Action, and by his haught Carriage provoked the Court not only to disfranchife him, but to banish him the Colony. The gave him till the last of March, upon his given Security for his quiet Departure by that time which he immediately gave, and so was dismissed.

AFTER these, William Baulson and Edward Hutchinson, two of the Serjeants of Boston appeared. Both their Hands were to the Remonstrance, and the Court took a great deal of Pain to make them acknowledge their Offence; but they continued obstinate, and uttered a great many affronting Speeches against those Magistrates who were not of their Opinion; so the were both turned out of their Places, disfranchised, and fined, William Baulston 20 Pounds, and Edward Hutchinson 40; but Hutchinson acknowledging his Fault next Day, was released of his Fine, and only disfranchised.

ANOTHER Day four or five more of the leading Petitioners were fent for, and not acknowledging their Fault were disfranchifed; Capt. John Under bill had his Commission taken from him, and Marshal the Ferry-man, lost his Place. Many others whose Names were to the Remonstrate were fent for, but it appearing that most of them were drawn in by the Subtilty of a few leading Men, and all of them acknowledging their Offence, and desiring their Names might be blotted out, the Court pardoned them, upon promise of their good Behaviour for the time to come.

Bur Mrs. Hutchinson having been at the Head of all these Disturbances, the Court could not pass her by, especially considering that she still continued her Weekly Meetings. Upon her Appearance, she was charged with being the Authors the late Disturbances; with countenancing and encouraging

Welde, &c. p. 25.

1.1637 haugh

disfrar

The

givin

t time

**Imilla** 

Edwar

appea

Remo

f Pair

ce ; bi

a gra

Mag

fo the

franchi

ds, an

cknow

of hi

leadin

ledgin

Under

i, and Man

Atrano

f then

leading

eir Of

blotte

nise o

e Head

o hand

ot pall

II con-

ppear

thor o

g and

raging

ncouraging feditious Persons; with reproaching ill the Ministers in the Country, and with mainaining weekly and publick Meetings in her House, wherein the had taught those erroneous Doctrines, which had given occasion to the late Tumults and Diforders both in Church and Comnonwealth. Mrs. Hutchinson justified her whole conduct, and instead of asking Pardon for her Offences, and promising to live peaceably for the mure, made a long Harangue, full of bitter Reflections on the Court, comparing her Cafe to the Prophet Daniel's, when the Presidents and Princes uld find nothing against him, because he was faithall, they fought matter against him concerning the Law bis God, to cast bim into the Lion's Den. She then enounced Destruction upon them and their Poherity, if they meddled with her; Take beed (fays he) bow you proceed against me, for I know that for his you go about to do to me, God will ruin you, and our Posterity, and this whole State. She was going with her Predictions, when the Court commandd her to be filent, and feeing no Hopes of her king reclaimed, ordered her to depart the Jurisliction within fix Months.

No fooner was Mrs. Hutchinson condemned by the Court, but the Church of Boston, of which he was a Member, charged her with Heresy, in maintaining twenty-six of the Errors condemned by the Synod; she seem'd at first to deny the Charge, but a Cloud of Witnesses being produced to support it, she subscribed a Recantation, with this Protest, that she never had been really of any Opinion contrary to the Declaration she had now made; but the Witnesses proving the contrary to her sace, her Recantation was rejected, and she was excommunicated as a Notorious Liar, with the full Consent of the whole Church. There were about 8 or 9 more excommunicated out of the

Vol. 1. Churches

Churches of Roxbury and Bolton after the fame manner, not so much for their Erroneous Opi nions (fays my Author) as for their Miscarriages

Mrs. Hutchinson, being thus turned out in the wide World, went first with her Disciples to Rhode-Island, but not liking to stay there, she removed with her Family into one of the Duty Plantations called Hebgate, where, within a little while, the Indians murdered her and her who Family, to the number of sixteen Persons. See ral strange Things are reported concerning the Mrs. Hutchinson, and her Companion Mrs. Dynas that the former was deliver'd of a great man monstrous Births at once, and the latter we brought to Bed of such an ill-shapen thing frighted and astonished all the Spectators; which I forbear to relate, as being uncertain in themselves, and of no Weight, as to the Merits of the Cause.

We may easily imagine that the Magistrat of the Massachuset Colony would not have pare with so many useful Hands in the Infancy of the State, if the publick Sasety had not required a but these Men were for turning the Government up-side-down, and excluding the present Serve Magistrates, not because they were unqualified for their Offices, or unfaithful in the Discharg of them, but because they were Men of a legal sparit, and too much enclined to a Government Works.

THE Heads of the Party being obliged to remove, confulted with themselves where settle. Mr. R. Williams entertained them in friendly Manner at Providence for some Time, an affished them in purchasing the Island of the Indian Sachems, and having heard of an Island beyond Cape-Cod, near the Narrhaganset Bast they purchased it of the Natives, and settled them selves and their Familes in it, with as many other

The Sache purch of the Settle Mand. and i the In Aquet lies i Miles ful So fore a invited Mand (warm chased Town: they o cond v fents cl Antino

as we

niftry, to prea fters of Expense or two

want o

try, a

They

further MR. to have nomian

openly the N

fam

Opi

1420

int

ies u

, A

Duts

litt

whol

Seve

g thi

man

f w

ing 1

Whic

then of th

istrat

parte

f the

red K

n mèn

Set 'c

palifie

Charg

ral Sp

rant

ged

ere

n in

ne, an

of th

Islan

et Bay

d then

v other

were willing to attend them, in the Year 1639. The Grant of the Island was figned by the Indian Sachems, March 24th, 1637-8, and the Planters purchased Quit Claims of the Heirs and Successors of the Sochems, at a confiderable Expence. The Settlement began at the North-east End of the Mand, then called Pocallet, and now Portimouth; and in the Year 1644, the Island was called the Isle of Rhodes. It was called by the Natives southet, but by the English, Rhode-Island. It les in the Narrbaganset Bay, being 14 or 15 Miles long, and about 4 or 5 broad. Tis a fruitful Soil, and the Garden of New-England for Pleafore and Delight; the Agreeableness of the Place invited over to many Planters, as overstock'd the Mand in a few Years, and obliged some of them to fwarm over to the Main Land, where they purchased a Tract of Land, now covered with the Towns of Providence and Warwick; for all which they obtained a Charter of King Charles the Seand with ample Privileges . Dr. Mather repreless them as a Generation of Libertines, Familifts, Intinomians, and Quakers, whose Posterity, for want of Schools of Learning and a publick Minitry, are become fo barbarous, as not to be capable of speaking either good English or good Sense: They have an extream A version to a regular Minitry, and would never, till of late, allow any fuch to preach among them, tho' the Massachuset Minihers offer'd to do it without putting them to any Expence ; but at present there is a Meeting-house or two in the Island, which gives hopes of a wither Reformation.

MR. Lenthal, Minister of Weymouth, had like to have undergone the same Fate with his Antimomian Brethren, for he had not only declared openly for their Doctrines, but began to oppose the New-England Discipline; affirming that all that

<sup>\*</sup> Mather, Book VII. page 21.

38.

tha

Ful

amp

nam

pany

vide

The

Ami

gethe

have

have

the I

Gorto

fined

Color

his go

Plymo

where

wards

him to

Knight

vidence

dians is

to have

Mr. W

they br

under a

teers, a

him, ar

house fi

Country

emplary

on three

Narrhag

dence: I

been a S

THE

that were baptiz'd had a Right to the Communion, without any further Trial; many of the People fell in with him, and would have crected a feparate Church upon that Foot, but he was immediately fent for up to Boston, where he confessed his Errors, sign'd a Retractation in open Court, and read it openly (by Order of the Government) in his Church at Weymouth; which was all the Punishment inflicted on him.

But of all the Enthufiafts that infefted New-En land at this Time, none was more impudent that Mr. Somuel Gorton, who was carrying on the fame Delign in the Colony of Plymouth, as Wheelwrigh and Hutchinfon had been doing in the Maffachuld He came to Rhode-Island in June 1638, and flave there till the Beginning of the Year 1640, who he retired to Providence, where being complained of to the Maffachufet Governours in 11642, and refuling to obey their Summons, as being out their Jurisdiction, he was apprehended and brought Prisoner to Boston, where, after a fair Trial, he and his Friends were banished the Colony. Upon which three of them went to - England, and obtained an Order from the King August 19,01644, that they should be suffered peaceably to enjoy the Lands they had purchase of the Indian Sachems; and the Lands aforemen tioned, being incorporated by the Name of Provi dence Plantations in the Narrhagansets-Bay, the returned, and carried on their Improvement naming their chief Town Warwick, in Honou of the Earl of Warwick, who became their Patron Gorton, after this, returned to his Plantations, and lived to a very great Age, but had no fettled Principles of Religion, having disowned the Principles of the Puritans, and embraced none that I know of in the room of them. Their \* Form of Government was like the other Colonies, like

<sup>\*</sup> Calender's Hift. Difc. p. 38, 39, 43.

637.

mmu-

fiche

rected

e was

e con-

Open

e Go

ch wa

-Eng-

t that

e fame

wrigh

chufel:

Raye

when

laind

2, and

out o

and

a fair

d the

ent to

King.

1ffere

chalee

emen

Provi

they

ments

onout

atron

s, and

fettled

1/ the

e that

Form

, like

that

that of a Commonwealth; and in the Year 1662. July the 8th, King Charles II. granted them an ample Charter, whereby the Province was made Body Corporate and Politick, in Fact, and named by the Title of, The Governour and Company of the English Colony of Rhode-Island and Providence Plantations in New-England, in America. The Governour, Deputy-Governour, and ten Affiftants chosen annually by the Freemen, together with 30 Deputies, chosen every half Year, have the Administration in their Hands, and have Power to make Laws not inconsistent with the Laws of England . Mr. Mather adds, that Gorton, being an obnoxious Man, was not only fined for his Offence, but ordered to depart the Colony within 14 Days, and to find Sureties for his good Behaviour in the mean Time; that from Phynouth he went to his Affociates in Rhode-Island. where he behaved himself with such Insolence towards the Infant Government, that they fentenced him to be whipp'd and banished the Island; the Knight-Errant then went to Mr. Williams at Providence, and entred upon the Lands of some Indians in his Neighbourhood, whereby he had like to have drawn upon the English a new War; but Mr. Williams fending to the Massachusets for Help, they brought him and his Companions to Boston, under a Guard of two or three Files of Musqueteers, and after a fair Hearing, they condemned him, and about fix of his Disciples, to the Workhouse for fix Months, and after that to depart the Country, from the state Streets to be been

THE Government of Plymouth did a very exemplary Piece of Justice about the same time upon three of their Subjects, who had murdered a Narrhaganset Indian, in the Woods near Providence: The Fact was this; Arthur Peach, who had been a Soldier in the Pequot War, being returned

O 3 . Tame to the home.

<sup>\*</sup> Calender's Hift. Difc. p. 46,

home, and not willing to lettle himself to Work resolved to run away from his Master to the Duti Plantation, he enticed three of his Acquaintance to go with him, who, as they were travelling thro' the Woods, met a Narrhangefet Indian, and having taken a Pipe of Tobacco with him, Peach with the Confent of his Companions, withou any Provocation from the Indian, run him thro and left him for dead; but he made a shift to crawl home and tell his Story before he expir'd the Indians purfu'd and overtook three of the Murderers, and brought them to the English Aquetnet Island, who delivered them up to the Governour of Plymouth, as belonging to his Juril diction: When they were brought upon the Trial, the Evidence that came in against them was very full, and they chemfelves did in Sub stance confess the Fact; so they were all three condemn'd and executed: Some of the People thought it very hard that three English Men should die for one Indian; but besides the Justice of the Thing it felf, the Necessity of their Affairs is quir'd itat this Time, for the Narrhaganfets threat ned them with a general Infurrection, which by this Means was prevented, a such as the

Upon the Second of June there was a very great Earthquake, which came on gradually; a first there was no more than a rumbling Noise like remote. Thunder, but as the Noise came nearer, which was from North to South, the Earth shook with such Violence that the People could not stand in the Streets; most of the Moveables in their Houses were thrown down and tis thought that if it had continued a little longer, the Houses themselves must have been demolished. About half an Hour after there was another Noise and Shaking, which revived the Peoples Fears, but it was neither so loud, nor vio

lent as the former.

IHT . Calender : HIA. D.

T

Yout

recte

Boston

Name

eld a

bout

hat t

lance

hem

lept.

pard 1

aft W

toen I

and troo

Upon

manag

Encour

eral I

Prob

rge S

eing 1

actor,

EGE.

or the

ertain

as'd b

" W

us, t

the (

lege,

Cour

the ]

Town

and

great

"IT

the A

Depu

1638. Work. Dutch ntance velling z, and Peach rithou thro rift to pir'd of the lesh a to the Juris thei then 1 Sub thre Peopl froul of th urs re chreat ich by a very y ; a Noile came

h, the People f th

down a little been re was

d the r Vio

HI

THIS Year a College for the Education of Youth in all the liberal Arts and Sciences was meeted at New-Town, about 6 or 8 Miles from Boston to which upon this Occasion changed its Name for that of Cambridge; the General Court eld at Boston, September 8th, 1630, had advanced bout 400 Pounds towards fuch a Delign, but hat not being fufficient, and the low Circumlances of their Affairs at that time not allowing hem to advance a greater Sum, the Project lept, till the Death of the Rev. Mr. John Harpard lately come from England, who, by his M Will and Testament bequeath'd the Sum of ven Hundred seventy-nine Pounds seventeen Shillings nd two Pence towards the carrying on the Work: Joon his Decease, a Committee was chosen to mage the Undertaking, which now met with incouragement from the other Colonies; and fetal private Gentlemen finding that there was Probability of carrying it through, contributed rge Sums of Money towards it. The College eing built, was, in Honour of their great Beneactor, called by the Name of HARVARD COLice. It was no better than a Schola Illustris or the first ten Years, under the Direction of train Overseers, as appears by the following Act as'd by the General Court at Boston, Anno 1642. "Whereas, thro' the good Hand of God upon us, there is a College founded in Cambridge in the County of Middlefex, called Harvard-College, for the Encouragement whereof this Court has given the Sum of 4001. and also the Revenue of the Ferry between Charles-Town and Boston; and that the well ordering and Management of the said College is of great Concernment.

"IT is therefore ordered by this Court, and the Authority thereof, that the Governour and Deputy-Governour, for the Time being, and

0 4 + C. Mather, Book IV. p. 126.

200 The HISTORY of [An, 1639. " all the Magistrates of this Jurisdiction, togo. ther with the Teaching Elders of the fix new adjoining Towns, viz. Cambridge, Water-Town Charles-Town, Boston, Roxburg, Dorchester, and the Prefident of the faid College for the Time " being, shall, from Time to Time, have ful Power and Authority to make and establish all fuch Orders, Statutes, and Constitutions, a they shall see necessary, for the instituting guiding, and furthering of the faid College and the feveral Members thereof, from Tim " to Time, in Piety, Morality, and Learning As also to dispose, order, and manage, to the " Use and Behoof of the said College, and the " Members thereof, all Gifts, Legacies, Bequests "Revenues, Lands, Donations, as either have " been, are, or shall be conferr'd, bestowed, a " any Way fall, or come to the faid College And whereas it may come to pais, that many of the said Magistrates, and said Elders, ma " be absent, or otherwise employed about other " weighty Affairs, when the faid College may " need their present Help and Counsel; it is therefore ordered, that the greater Number of " Magistrates or Elders which shall be present with the President, or in his Absence, the Fe lows that are refident shall have the Power of the Whole; provided that if any Constitution Order, or Orders, by them made, shall be " found hurtful to the faid College, or the " Members thereof, or to the Wealth publick then on the Appeal of the Party, or Partie " aggrieved, to the Company of Overseers fin " mentioned, they shall repeal the faid Order of " Orders, if they shall see Cause, at the nex " Meeting, or stand accountable thereof to the took hi er next General Court in abito and and are Ti

The Authority thereof, that the Governour and The Jusy-Governour, for the Time being, and

t C. Macher, Book IV

his Des

100

TH

Year 1

from t

he Ho

Gover

It

Fellow

Provin

ters c

for the

ers !;

er Ar

Treasu

he Pr

upon 1 n Old

toward forty S

for Tu

able to

Tutors Gry.

SOM

the for

at the

propag

was ca

verted

of the

icable

of Lea for the

be adn

were at

and bu

the In Church 1639.

toge.

r next

Town

r, and

Tim

ve ful bablif

ons, a

tuting ollege

Tim

rning

to th

ad the

quests

have

ed, a

ollege

many

, may

othe

e may

it i ber o

oresen e Fel

wer of

all b

r the

blick Partie

s firl

der o

nex

to the

Tail

This was the Constitution of the College till the Year 1650, when it was incorporated by Charter, from the Government of the Massachusets Colony, he Honourable Thomas Dudley, Esq. being then Governour, as will appear in its proper Place.

It confifts at present of a President, five fellows, and a Treasurer; the Governour of the Province, his Majesty's Council, with the Miniters of the fix or feven neighbouring Towns, in the Time being, being appointed as Over-ers; the Prefident's Salary, which is 150 Pounds er Annum, is still paid out of the publick freasury, by Order of the General Court; but he Profits of Charles-Town Ferry being fettled mon the College, and several Gentlemen both n Old and New-England contributing very largely owards the Revenues of it, together with the ony Shillings a Year which every Student pays or Tutorage into the College Stock, it is now ble to fubfift of itself, the Salaries of the several Tutors, &c. being paid out of the College Trea-

Some time after, another College was built near he former, for the Education of the Indians, the Charge of the Honourable Corporation for propagating the Gospel in New-England, and was called the Indian College, but 'tis now converted into a Printing-House, by the Direction of the faid Corporation; it being found impracicable to persuade the Indian Youth to a Love of Learning. There is still due Provision made for the Accommodation of such Indians as shall be admitted into the College, but there never were above four or five of them educated there; and but one, namely, Caleb Cheeschaumnek, who took his Degrees in the Year 1665. For Eleazar the Indian Youth mention'd in Dr. Mather's Church History, B.III. p. 153, who should have taken his Degrees in the Year 1679, died that Year before the Commencement came, and he was the last that was educated in the College to

ection wit in

dly th

World.

TH. N

his ]

wo M

eat h

hich 1

nd ext

rards

hich I

nd from

ntely t

en co

ns pro

Devon (h

he Di

trava;

y, and

His

rere.

M

M

Dr

M

M

Dr

THI

Governi

othe Q

ed into

dray, an

ng; wh

Standing

Morning

In the Year 1698, there was another addition Building made to the College, which is calle after the Name of its generous Benefactor, Stoughts Hall; and fince that Time, there is a third Ha added to the two former, facing the old College with a double Front three Stories high, besides the Roof.

HARVARD College being built, a Foundame was laid for a Publick Library, which was a Wor of absolute Necessity, Books being so scarce the Country that it was impossible for the Si dents to purchase them. The first Furniture this Library was the Books of Dr. William Am the famous Professor of Divinity at Francoun whole Widow and Children, after the Dodor Death, transported themselves, and their Effects into these Paris. Several Gentlemen likewise England, made very valuable Prefents to it, for of Books, and others of Mathematical Infin ments; as Sir Kenelm Digby, Sir John Maynord the most Reverend Archbishop Ulber, the Rev Mr. Richard Baxter, Mr. Joseph Hill, and other but the most considerable Accession to this Libra ry came by the Death of the Rev. Mr. Theophila Gale, an Independent Minister in London, a learn ed Man, as appears by his Books of the Court of the Gentiles, who by his last Will and Testament bequeath'd his large and valuable Collection of Books to the Library of Harvard College in New England; fince which time it has only received some small Additions, from private Hands, and yet before the End of the Century, it was encreased to between three and four Thousand Volumes. So that the' the Cambridge Library in New-England, must not pretend to rival the Vatican or Bodleian, or the Libraries of most of the Universities of Europe, yet it contains a Collection

+ MS. Letter from Mr. Thomas Brattle.

1639

ras th

lition

calle

upblo

d Ha

ollegi

des th

datin

Wor

rce

e Su

ure d

Ame Deguli

ctor

ffect

rife

fom

nftru

nard Rev hers ibraibraphilus earnurt of ment, on of New-

eived inds

was

fand y in

the

t of

Col-

tion

ction of the most valuable Authors that have rit in the learned Languages, and is undoubtedly the best furnished of any in those Parts of the World.

THE first President of Harvard College was Mr. Nathaniel Eaton, a learned Man; but cruel his Nature, and lewd in his Morals; he hired Men to hold one of his Pupils, till he had eat him almost to Death with a Cudgel; for hich the General Court fined him 100 Marks, d expell'd him the University; he was afterards excommunicated for Immorality, upon hich he left the Plantation, went first to Virginia, d from thence to England, where he lived priately till the Restoration of King Charles II. and in conforming to the Church of England, he as preferr'd to the Parsonage of Biddiford in from hire, and became a violent Perfecutor of be Differenters, till at last, by his wicked and aravagant Courses, he brought himself to Mise-, and died in Goal for Debt.

His Successors to the End of the Century

Mr. Henry Dunstar, elected	1640
Mr. Charles Chauncey	1654
Dr. Leonard Hoar,	167F
Mr. Urian Oakes	1675
Mr. John Rogers,	1682
Dr. Increase Mather,	1684

THE President's Province, besides the general Government of the whole College, is to examine into the Qualifications of all who desire to be admitted into the College; to inspect their Manners; to pray, and expound a Chapter Morning and Evening; which the Under-graduates, who were of some standing, read out of Hebrew into Greek in the Morning; and the Fresh Men, out of Latin into

Greek

the Lord's Days.

THE Fellows that refide in the College Tutors to the feveral Classes of Students, a lead them through the liberal Arts and Sciences Years in which Time they have their week Declamations, and publick Disputations, the Pa fident, or one of the Fellows, being always Mod rator. The Students are divided into 4 Classes, Junior Class are talled Fresh Men the first Ye and are a kind of Servitors to the whole Colle out of Studying Hours, to go of Errands, & from which none are exempted, unless they admitted Fellow Commoners, of which Numb (as I am informed) was Sir Harcourt Mafter late Alderman of the City of London: The cond Year they bear the Title of Sophimore the third of Junior Sophisters, and the foun of Senior Sopbisters, when they are admitted the Degree of Bachelor of Arts. Those who fide in the College after they commence Back lors, are distinguished for the next three Year by the Title of Sir added to their Sirnames to they go out Masters of Art, as, Sir Chauncey, S Rogers, Sir Oakes.

WHEN a Student is admitted into the College he is required to subscribe the College-Law and to keep a Copy of them in his Chamber when he stands for his Degree, the President in presents him to the Honourable the Overseers to their Grace or Licence, which being obtained, is to attend in the Hall on certain Hours ever Monday and Tuesday during the 3 Weeks of Visit tion, that all that have a Mind may examine int his Skill in those Languages and Sciences, that h pretends to be Master of; this is called the Sitting of Solftices, and is in the Month of June; upon the

public Stone oft of nd Ger ith a ates P

ay of

d of

Qua ompli oft re at the heles, bilosopk

reek,

e Dej Pape dions e Pref reeable th the lands,

r a Brtibus, cademi na cum uam pr eris.

y con cars ft indum Anglia le pro

ocatus umissed y one c THE

rs any its M n. 163 ay of Commencement, which was formerly the a Ver d'of August, but now the first Wednesday in July. zest; imes ege ts, a ences Week the Pr Mod ffes, t t Ye Colla ds, 8 hey a Jumb Master The f imores four tted

vho n Bach Yea nes ti ey, S ollege

-Law imber nt fir ers fo ed, h

ever Vifile ne int hat h

Sittin on th Day

publick Act is held in the Church, which is about Stone's Throw from the College, to which of the neighbouring Magistrates, Ministers, d Gentlemen are invited; the President opens it th a short Prayer; then one of the Candiates pronounces an Oration, either in Latin. reek, or Hebrew, wherein all Persons of Rank Quality present, are addressed with proper ompliments, and Reflections are made on the of remarkable Occurrences of the last Year; t the chief Exercises are Disputations on heses, or Questions in Logic, Ethics, Natural hilosophy, and most of the liberal Arts, which Defendant publishes before-hand in a Sheet Paper, and obliges himself to answer all Obfions brought against them; when this is over, e President, having pronounced an Oration amable to the Solemnity, gives him his Degree, th the Ceremony of putting a Book into his ands, and pronouncing these Words over him; a Bachelor; Admitto te ad primum gradum in ribus, scilicet ad respondendum Quæstioni pro more lademiarum in Anglia, tibiq; trado bunc librum n cum potestate publice prælegendi in aliqua Artium am profiteris, quotiescunq; ad boc munus evocatus tris. For a Master of Arts, which is not usur conferr'd upon any, but those who are of seven ears standing in the College; Admitto te ad seudum gradum in Artibus, pro more Academiarum Anglia, tradog; tibi bunc librum una cum potefthe profitendi; ubicung; ad boc munus publice matus fueris. After which, the Assembly is missed with a Valedictory Oration pronounced y one of the Graduates. THE University of New-England never con-

is any Degree above Master of Arts upon any

its Members; for the Charter, by which they

were

were incorporated, in Governour Dudley's Time about the Year 1650, and by which they still ad gives them no further Powers: Some Attempt were made in the Beginning of the Reign of King William and Queen Mary, to obtain a ne Charter, whereby their Powers might be enlarged and they might be capable of conferring the Degrees of Bachelor and Doctor in Divining after the Manner of the Universities of Europe but without Success; as I shall observe hereafter

in its proper Place.

SEVERAL useful Persons both in the Chur and in the State have been educated in the College; Sir George Downing, employ'd first the Parliament, and afterwards by K. Charles the Second, as his Envoy Extraordinary in Holland was the second Person that was enter'd a Stude in the College; Sir Henry Mildmay sent his so William Mildmay, Esq; the Esder Brother Henry Mildmay, Esq; of Shawford in Ham shire, to study here. William Stoughton, Esq; seph Dudley, Esq; and many other Gentlement principal Note in this History, owe their Education.

tion to this Seminary.

Or the Clergy, there were several that may a considerable Figure in England, under the Puliament, and among the Diffenters in the Reign of K. Charles II. and K. James II. as Mr. Bay min Woodbridge of Newbury, Mr. John Colling Mr. Samuel and Nathaniel Mather, Mr. John Chauncey, besides the whole Body of the present Clergy of New-England, among whom there as some of as good Learning and Sense as in an Parts of Europe.

But to make the College as compleat as possible, when the Building was finished, and Apart ments for the Students fitted up, they set up Printing-Press, which was absolutely necessary to the dispersing small practical Treatises up and down

Places : nd con Divines levere Dorcheft ared t he who he Box meeta ad b ty, it herefor Hand, niform follege ith th Sie L loufe,

.01dr

lown

hat th

mide

nd the

f the

David's

or fati

hey ha

ance in the action of the acti

tars at

e New

at har

inglish

ney say

ON ONE W-ENGLAND. 201 1640 Time hown the Country ; for it can't be imagin'de till ad hat they could carry off an Edition of any very confiderable Work while the Colony was to finall, ttemp nd there were to few Men of Letters in it. One ign o the first Books printed was, A new Version of a ne large Devid's Platms, the Ministers, it seems, were a fatisfied with Sternhold and Hopkins, not fo ng t such on the Account of their Poetry, as because vinin ey had perverted the Text in a great many urope reafte Places; they refolved therefore on a New Version, d committed the Care of it to some of the chief Chan livines in the Country, among whom were the in th leverend Mr. Elias of Roxbury, Mr. Mather of irst b brebeften, and Mr. Welds; who having comrles t red their several Performances rogether, printed Tollan whole at Cambridge in the Year 1640: When Book was published, it did not fatisfy the Studen mediations of judicious Men, for being comnis So aid by Persons of a different Genius and Capaher Ham in it was far from being of a Piece; and was 9: 9 effore after some Time committed to One lind, to be corrected, and made a little more men ( niform; Mr. Henry Dunstar, President of the Educ lollege, was the Man chosen to this Work, who th the Affiftance of Mr. Richard Lyon, Tutor mad Sir Henry Mildmay's Son, then boarding in his e Par Reig Benji buse, reduced it to the Form in which it apas at prefent; but after all, if we compare Colling e New-England Version of the Psalms with those Ifa at have fince been published to the World, it prefer will be acknowledged to be but a mean Perere at mances it keeps pretty close indeed to the in an wish Prose, but has very little Beauty or Elence in it, the Lines being frequently ek'd out ith a great many infignificant Particles for the is po ake of the Rhime; and 'tis but a weak Apolo-Apar t up y, that the Translators offer for themselves, when

by lay, That we must consider, that God's Altar

nds not our Polishings: As if it were more eli-

ary to

p an

dow

Verse, than in more exact and elegant Compositives; so that how commendable soever this Personance might be in the Time when it first appeared, I think, with the Leave of the learner Men of that Country, it wants now to be revised and corrected by the more beautiful Version or Paraphrases of Dr. Isaac Watts, Dr. Patrick Tate and Brady: And I heartily wish, that some judicious Person among them would attempt it.

A sour this Time the Inhabitants of Lybeing straitned for Room, went over into Long Island, and having agreed with the Lord Starling's Agent, and with the Indian Proprietors they began a Settlement at the West End of it but the Dutch giving them a great deal of Disturbance, they deserted their Plantation in the Parts, and settled, to the Number of an Hundred Families, at the East End of the Island where they built the Town of Southampton, and by the Advice of the Government of the Major chaster Bay, erected themselves into a Civil Government.

LONG-ISLAND is a noble Spot Ground, of about an hundred and fixty Mile in Length, and twelve in Breadth, off the La Coast lie several Defart Islands, and at the We End lies Staten-Island 10 Miles long, and 5 or broad; when the Dutch were in Possession Long-Island, they made Earthern Ware there good, or better than that at Delft; but when fell into the Hands of the English, with the re of New-York, that Trade was loft; and the li glish Inhabitants deal chiefly in Furrs, Skins, Il bacco, and all forts of Grain. There is a Plan towards the middle of the Island 16 Miles lon and 4 broad, which yields very fine Grass. The Government of this Island is annexed t New York; 'tis divided into three Counties, Queen's Suffolk Suffolk Churc a Too has 50 Hempfi from

a Year is no chiefly Town Year fo

T H
great †
Mooana
tember
ired,

made might md M. heir Si Articles lefty other

and any what out to of P

Gove Condition of their aid We demfely ally pro-

hole Cond for Vol.

Atlas (

640.

arou

mpo

Per

It ap

arne

eviled

er fion

atrick

fom

it.

f Ly

Long Star

ietor

of i

Diftu

tho

Hon

Ifland

n, an

Maffa

ovem

pot o

Mile

he Ea

e Wa

5 01

lion (

here

when

he re

he b

ns, I

a Plai

es lon

. Th

ked t

Queen'

Suffolk

Suffolk, and Richmond Counties; there are two Churches in Queen's County, one at Jamaica, a Town of about 40 Houses, whose Minister has 50 l. a Year and 15 l. for Books; and another at Hempstead, whose Minister has the same Income from England raised by the Society for propagating the Gospel, and each of them have 60 l, a Year from New York: In Suffolk County there is no Church of England, the Inhabitants being hiesly Independents and Quakers, but Richmond Town and County has an Allowance of 40 l, a Year for a Minister.

THE Indians were now very quiet, and the reat + Sachem Woofamequen, alias Maffasoiet, and Mooanam his Son, came to New-Plymouth, Sepmber 25, in their own proper Persons, and deled, that the ancient League and Confederacy made with the Government of New Plymouth night be confirm'd, and the said Woosamequen nd Mooanam his Son, did for themselves and heir Successors promise to observe the following articles, namely, "That they would not needlelly raife any Quarrels, or do any Wrong to other Nations, so as to provoke them to War: and that they would not give, fell, or convey any of their Lands Territories, or Possessions whatfoever to any Person, or Persons, without the Privity and Consent of the Governour of Plymouth, other than to such as the said Governour shall fend or appoint." These onditions, together with an Acknowledgment their Subjection to the King of England, the ud Woosamequen and Mooanam his Son, for temselves, and their Successors, did then faithby promise to observe, and keep. And the hole Court, in the Name of the Government, d for each Town respectively, did then like-VOL. I. P

Atlas Geograph. V. 5. p. 735. + New-England Memo-

the

ma

por

cain

Ma

Lau

ings

Kin

with

Year

in at

great

yard,

this

" Su

" fee

" mu

" La

" the

" cau

" mer

lower

" A c

of s

" Chu

" and

" ferei

" bave

Wha

" Chri

" defer

" bas

" I kno

" but ti

a Gent

the Ro

Speeche

Confci

" for R

wise ratify and confirm the aforesaid ancient League and Confederacy, promising to the said Woosamequen and his Son, and their Successors, That they shall, and will, from Time to Time, defend the said Woosamequen and Mooanam his Son, and their Successors, when Need and Occasion shall require, against all such as shall unjustly rife up against

them, to wrong or oppress them unjustly.

ABOUT the same time the Inhabitants of New. Hampshire which lies without the Line of the Maffachuset Charter, near the Province of Main petition'd the Massachusets to receive them under their Protection. This Part of the Country was planted about the fame time with the Maffachulus but the first Planters were so far from being reli gious Persons, that they were the Reverse: The had fublished hitherto by a fort of voluntary Affociation among themselves, but as they en creased in Number, they found the Want of Courts of Justice, and being apprehensive at the fame Time of Danger from the Indians, the defired to incorporate with the Massachusets; the Maffachusets accordingly received them, and no only took Care of their civil Government, bu fent them several pious Ministers, as Mr. Mood to Portsmouth, Mr. Cotton, Father and Son, to Hampton; Mr. Dudley and Mr. Clerk, to Exeter Mr. Reyner, Father and Son, to Dover; and after them Mr. Pike; by whose Care and Diligence th People were very much civilized and reformed The two Provinces remained united till the Year 1679, when the Province of New-Hamphir was violently torn from the Massachusets, as wi be related in its proper Place.

THE Civil War which broke out in England this Year between the King and Parliament, plant a full stop to the further Increase of the Colonic of New-England; for the Star-Chamber and the Ecclesiastical Commission Court being put down, and

the Episcopal Power eclips'd, the Puritans were made easy at home, and thought no more of transporting themselves into foreign Parts. But cerminly never was Country more obliged to a Man, than New-England was to Archbishop Land, who by his cruel and arbitrary Proceedings drove Thousands of Families out of the Kingdom, and thereby flock'd the Plantations with Inhabitants, in the Compass of a very few Years, which otherwise could not have been done in an Age. This was the Sense of some of the greatest Men in Parliament; Sir Benjamin Rudwird, in one of his Speeches in the Year 1641, has this Passage. " A great Multitude of the King's " Subjects striving to bold Communion with us, but " feeing bow far we were gone, and fearing bow " much farther we would go, were forced to fly the " Land, very many into savage Wildernesses, because " the Land would not bear them: Do not they that " cause these Things cast a Reproach upon the Govern-" ment?" Mr. Fiennes, in a Speech made in the lower House, upon the same Occasion, says, that " A certain number of Ceremonies, in the Judgment " of some Men unlawful, and to be rejected of all "Churches; in the Judgment of all other Churches, " and in the Judgment of our own Church, but indif-" ferent, yet what Difference, yea what Distraction " bave these indifferent Ceremonies raised among us? "What has deprived us of so many thousands of "Christians, who defired, and in all other Respects " deserved to bold Communion with us? I say, what " bas deprived us of them, and scattered them into " I know not what Places and Corners of the World, " but these indifferent Geremonies?" My Ld. Digby, a Gentleman who afterwards fuffered deeply in the Royal Cause, complains, in one of his Speeches in Parliament, "That Men of the best "Conscience were then ready to fly into the Wilderness " for Religion." Mr. Pym, in his Speech at the Bar P 2

641. cient

e faid fors, defend

Son, all re-

re ainst New-

f the Main.

under y was busets

g reli They

untar y en

int o at the

the

; th nd no

t, bu Mood

on, t xeter

d afte ice th

ormed e Yea

mpsbir 29 WI

Englan at, pr

oloni and th

n, an

.I.L

107

pute

upia

tions

9500

T

**fmal** 

them

Tto

Subfi

Coun

T

1800

which

IN

BE

Adve

partic

them,

Tranf

this [

Upon

the for

the Lo

dom c

vast Si

the Pe

or 12

fourth

have b

\* C. .

the Numi

England

and yet. England,

Bar of the House of Lords, when he carried up the Commons Impeachment of the Arcbbifbop, has these Expressions, " You have the King's loyal " Subjects banished out of the Kingdom, not as Elimelech, to feek for Bread in foreign Countries, by reason of the great Scarcity that was in Israel, but " travelling abroad for the Bread of Life, because they could not bave it at bome, by reason of the siritual Famine of God's Word, caused by this Man and bis Partakers: And by this means you have the Industry of many thousands of his Majesty's Subjects carried out of the Land." And at last, the whole House of Commons agreed to insert this Article in their Remonstrance to the King, The Bishops and their Courts did impoverish many " thousands, and so afflict and trouble others, that great Numbers, to avoid their Miseries, departed out of the Kingdom, some into New-England, " and other Parts of America." This was really the Case, and tho' it must be allowed, that when the Puritans were in Power, they carried their Resentments too far; yet Archbishop Laud and the rest of the Court-Bishops can never be cleared from being the principal Authors of the Civil War, which involv'd both Church and State in Confusion, and drew such a Train of Calamities after it, as wasted the best Blood and Treasure in the Kingdom, and at last, brought the unhappy King himself to the Block. But the Scene of Affairs being now changed, in Favour of the Puritans, and the Plantations left to shift for themselves, I will set before the Reader in one View, a general Computation of the Numbers of People, both Ministers and others, who were driven out of their native Country, chiefly on the Account of Religion, during the Administration of Archbishop Laud; with an Estimate of the Charges of the several Settlements. THE PAY. Pres. 14 the Species of the

. . .

New-England before the Year 1640°, are computed at about 4000, who dispersed themselves up and down the Country, and laid the Foundations of the several Towns and Villages in it §. Their Rassage with their Moveables cost at least 95000.

THE Transportation of their Cattle great and small, 12000 l. besides the Price of the Cattle themselves.

The Provisions which they carried over for Subfishence till they could have a Harvest in the Country, 45000 L

THE Materials for their first Cottages, &c.

THE Arms, Ammunition, and great Artillery which they brought over with them, 22000 l.

In all, 192000 l.

I.

up hop,

oyal Eli-

by

but

au/e

spi-Man

bave

fty's

laft,

lert

ing,

nany that

arted and,

eally

vhen

their

and

ared

Civil

te in

nities

afure un-

cene

f the

t for

one

bers

were

y on

istra-

te of

Гнв

Adventurers laid out in Wares to merchandise with the Indians, and the Value of Effects that particular Persons and Families carried over with them, which was very considerable; about 200 Transports were employ'd, at several Times, in this Undertaking, of which one only was lost. Upon the whole, we may venture to say, that the sour grand Settlements of New-England, besides the Loss of so many Inhabitants, cost the Kingdom of England no less than 4 or 500,000 l. a. vast Sum of Money at that Time of Day; but if the Persecution of the Puritans had continued 10 or 12 Years longer, I am apt to think, that a sourth Part of the Riches of the Kingdom would have been carried out of it.

So Proposed to resure P 3

\* C. Mather, Book I. page 17, 23.

i Mr. Josselyn's Computation is very extravagant, who says, the Number of Men, Women and Children transported to New-England were, according to the nearest Computation, 21,200; and yet the Number of Transports but 298. Voyage to New-England, p. 258.

Som s of the first Planters were Gentlemen of confiderable Fortunes, who spent their Estates in the Country, and were at the Charge of bringing over feveral poor Families, who were not able of themselves to bear the Expence: Such were William Bradford, Elg: Edward Winflow, Efq; John Wintbrop, Efq; Thomas Dudley, Efq; Simon Bradfreet, Eig; and a great many others, who at feveral Times were Governours of the respective Provinces to which they belong'd.

Bur the chief Leaders of the People into New-England were the Puritan Ministers, who being filenced at home, went thither for the Liberty of their Consciences, and drew vast Numbers of their Friends and Favourers after them. I'll fet before the Reader, a Lift of their Names in

the following TABLE. I Tovo in the

A LIST of the NAMES of fuch Puritan Ministers, who were in Orders in the Church of England, but being diffurbed by the Ecclefiaftical Courts, for the Cause of Nonconformity, transported themselves to New-England, for the free Exercife of their Ministry, before the Year 1641; together with the Names of the Places where they fettled.

THO. Allen, at Charles-Town, John Allen, at Dedham, Avery, at Marblebead, Adam Blackman, at Stratford, Richard Blinman, at Glocester, The Rev. Mr. - Brucy, at Brainford, Edmund Brown, at Sudbury, Peter Bulkeley, at Concord, Jonathan Burr, at Dorchester, Charles Chauncey, at Scituate, Thomas

The 1

Thomas Cobbett, at Lynne, John Cotton, at Boston, Tim. Dalton, at Hampton, John Davenport, at Newbaven, Richard Denton, at Stamford, Henry Dunstar, at Cambridge, Samuel Eaton, at Newbaven, John Eliot, at Roxbury, John Fifk, at Chelmsford, Henry Flint, at Braintree, -Fordbam, at Southampton, Green, at Reading, John Harvard, at Charles-Town, Francis Higginson, at Salem, William Hook, at Newbaven, Thomas Hooker, at Hartford, Peter Hobart, at Hingbam, Epbr. Huet at Windsor, --- Hull, at Isle of Sholes, James, at Charles-Town, --- Jones, at Fairfield, - Knight, at Topsfield, - Knowles, at Water-Town, Leverick, at Sandwich, John Lothrop, at Barnstable, Richard Mather, at Dorchester, Maud, at Dover, -Maverick, at Dorchester,

John Mayo, at Boston, John Millar, at Yarmouth,

--- Moxen, at Springfield, Samuel Newman, at Reboboth,

Norris, at Salem,

John Norton, at Boston, James Noyse, at Newbury, Thomas Parker, at Newbury, Ralph Partridge, at Duxbury,

Hugh Peters, at Salem,

The Rev. Mr.

at Centillers,

Santostat

L TOTAL V

THE SHOP OF

at Apprecia

an Suttention

dend in

as Paracidad

Cosel To

on,

ad,

41.

a of

s in

ing-

not

uch

aw,

ifq;

ers,

the

nto

who

Li-

ım-

III

in

ri-

in

rb-

the

m-

er-

ear

b

as

WE SEINTSFILL

Trevellaner :

- Caption

A 30 PASS

Thomas Peters, at Say-Brook, George Philips, at Water-Town, -Philips, at Dedham, Abrabam Pierfon, at Southampton, Peter Prudden, at Milford. - Reyner, at Plymouth, Ezek. Rogers, at Rowly, Nathaniel Rogers, at Ipswich. - Saxton, at Scituate, Thomas Shepherd, at Cambridge, Zach. Symmes, at Charles Town. -Skelton, at Salem, Ralph Smith, at Plymouth, -Smith, at Weathersfield, The Rev. Mr. Samuel Stone, at Hartford, Nicholas Street, at Newbaven, Walliam Thompson, at Braintres. - Waltham, at Marblebead, Nathaniel Ward, at Ipswich, John Warbam, at Windsor, -Weld, at Roxbury, - Wheelwright, at Salisbury, Henry Whitfield, at Guilford, Samuel Whiting, at Lyn, John Wilson, at Boston, - Witherel, at Scituates William Worcester, at Salisbury,

Young, at Southold, In all 77.

BESIDES these, there were about 20 that had no Settlements in the Country, or were turn'd out of them again; some for their Immoralities, and others, because they would not comply with the receiv'd Opinions of the Country; among these were several Episcopalians, and Anabaptists, as Mr. Miles of Swansey, and good old Hanserd Knowles of Dover, who returning to England, fuffer'd deeply in the Cause of Nonconformity under King

King C elov'd I wil o'd in earnin better g Cle reat So onate' octrine reat de lanners Vorld 1 those ilty of diced spended n of th

onies, differen cy, wh ir Cor ould be WITH

Divini being s Coun oliderab

> M M Mi Mi Mr Mr

Mr Mr Mr

Mr

NEW-ENGLAND. 217

King Charles II. being universally esteem'd, and

glov'd by all his Brethren.

641.

wn,

pton,

ridge.

wn,

n,

ntree, bead.

ry,

ry,

1 77.

d no

and h the

these,

inserd

land, inder King I will not fay, that all the Ministers mentin'd in the Table were Men of the first Rate for earning, but I can affure the Reader, they had better Share of it than most of their neighbourg Clergy at that Time; they were Men of reat Sobriety and Virtue, plain, ferious, affec-onate Preachers, exactly conformable to the octrines of the Church of England, and took a teat deal of Pains to promote a Reformation of famers in their several Parishes; I know the forld has called them weak Brethren, as we all those who differ from us; but, who were ilty of the greatest Weaknesses, let all unprediced Persons judge, their Adversaries, who pended, deprived, and in Effect forc'd them tof the Kingdom, for a few Rites and Ceremies, which, by their own Confession were ey, who, after their best Enquiries, thought in ir Consciences, that a Compliance with them oild be finful.

With these came over several young Students Divinity, whose Education for the Ministry being finished in England, was perfected in Country; some of whom afterwards made a

siderable Figure in both Englands; as,

Mr. Samuel Arnold, of Marshfield,
Mr. John Bishop, of Stamford,
Mr. Edward Bulkly, of Concord,
Mr. —— Carter, of Woburne,
Mr. Francis Dean, of Andover,
Mr. James Fitch, of Norwich,
Mr. — Hunsord, of Norwalk,
Mr. John Higginson, of Salem,
Mr. —— Hough of Reading

Mr. — Hough, of Reading, Mr. — James, of Eastbampton,

Mr. Roger Newton, of Milford, Mr. John Shermon, of Water Town, Mr. Thomas Thacher, of Boston, Mr. - Woodbridge, of Newbury.

SOME of the Gentlemen abovemention'd re turn'd to England in the Time of the Civil War and ferv'd the Parliament, as, Edward Winflow Efg. who was one of the Commissioners of the Navy; Edward Hopkins, Elq; who was one Commissioners of the Admiralty; Georg Downing, afterwards Sir George Downing, and som few others. About 10 or 12 of the Minister also return'd, among whom was Mr. William Hook, of Newbaven, who was made Mafter of the Savoy; Mr. Robert Peck, Mr. Samuel Mather Mr. Blinman, Mr. John Knowles, Mr. Sam. Eaton Mr. Saxton, Mr. Giles Firmin, Mr. Thomas Alla Mr. Henry Whitfield, Mr. Woodbridge, and the famous Mr. Hugh Peters, who made a great F gure under the Protectorship of Oliver Cromwell but meddling too much in State-Affairs, wa excepted out of the General Pardon, and exc cuted with the King's Judges in the Year 1660 So that the New-England Colonies, instead having any Accession from England, manifest decreased for the next 20 Years, till the Perse cution of the Diffenters in the Reign of King Charles II. turn'd the Tide again.

THE Diligence and Industry of the first Plan ters in bringing their Affairs to fuch a Confile ency, in so thort a Time, is very remarkable, so they had already planted fifty Towns and Vil lages, built thirty or forty Churches, and more Ministers Houses; a Castle, a College, Prisons Forts, Cart-ways, Causeways, and all this a their own Charge, without any publick Affift ance; the Planters had built themselves com fortable Houses, they had Gardens, Orchards

Ground

THE etty W think Coaff refore as) M

N

ounds

the C

fett HON og a y r fom n lervi the Re May

> ded th ves to: on the dan ork, w

Illand

Ed, t ult Inc ligion t Nanta ele Ina

the Gov he's-Cos Lands, wed an

ts mad us of th ording the Go

arter gr in t liom ar

by Na

642

נייוו

d re

War

nflou

f th

ne o

COTT

fom

nulter

Illian

ter o

Cather

Eato

Allen

id th

at Fi

mwell

Wa

exe

1660

ead o

nifeltl

Perie

King

t Plan

Confift

le, fo

d Vil

d more

risons this a

Affift

s com-

round

ounds fenced in Corn-Fields, &c. and Laws the Government of the whole Plantation.

THE Continent of New-England being now ety well fleck'd with Inhabitants, it was Time mink of taking Possession of the Islands upon Coast. The Worshipful Mr. Thomas Maybew refore having obtained a Grant of Capaweck. as) Martha's Vineyard, Nantucket, and Elizabeth settled his Son in the former of these with a Number of Planters this Summer; who ng a young Man of good Learning and Piery, fome Time became their Minister, and was derviceable in the Conversion of the Indians, the Reader will see in its proper Place. After Maybew's untimely Death, his Father vifited Mand, and the he was no Minister, he perded the Indians of the Gaybead to fuffer themis to be instructed in the Christian Religion. on the Father's Death, his Grandson, who was a Minister, succeeded him in this good ok, whose Labours have been so wonderfully Ed, that Dr. Muther fays, the Number of Ill Indians who have embraced the Christian igion upon the Mands of Martha's Vineyard . Nantucket, are no less than three Thousand. the Mands were for some Time after annex'd be Government of New-York, by the Name of les-County; and the Properties and Titles of lands, upon the faid Islands respectively, were wed and founded upon feveral Grants and Pamade and granted by the fuccessive Govers of the faid Province, and fo became legal, ording to the Constitution, Usage, and Custom the Government of New-York; but by the arter granted to the Colony of the Massachusetin the third Year of the Reign of King liam and Queen Mary, they are expressly, by Name, annexed to the faid Colony, toge-Leas box penatical

Mather, B. VI. p. 54.

as was before by Law provided. But to return

the Year 1642. Sign dissell a today I offine ABOUT the latter End of the last Year, Mr. Bennet, a Gentleman from Virginia, arin at Boston, with Letters from some of the Peo to the Ministers of New-England, bewall their want of a Gospel Ministry, and entrean a Supply of Ministers from hence. After due O fultation, it was agreed that the Churches of h ter-Town, Braintree, and Rowly, having each t Ministers, should fend one upon the intend Service; but Mr. Miller of Rowly being an infi Man, was excused, and Mr. James of Newbon went in his room, with Mr. John Knowles Water-Town, and Mr. Thompson of Brainte They began their Voyage October 7, 1642, W Letters recommendatory from the Governour the Massachusets to the Governour and Coun of Virginia; but thro' Strefs of Weather, contrary Winds, they were eleven Weeks in the Passage; upon their Arrival they began to prea in feveral Parts of the Country, and the Peop flock

e the ms hav Engli e Hi Know pland. THE lians of vate Q g it is g had rards 1 oyed, Engli on of an to concer us to 1 ir Pow fuch

N

ck'd t

from

ß'd an

the Cer

part th inisters

ople, 1 venge antonin rate D oks, hi the

mo cui inst U owerfu

Force: many e to t

Dr. In

n. 16

Leag

luded

Lands d Ti

ffem

e Y

inn

cnad

and

Det

y, tho

Jame

7 Cou

e to

ymout

ed, A

t Bol

etun

פוז נון:

ar, (

arm

Peo

waili

creati

ue C

of M

ich t

ntend

n infil

ewbat

rules

aintre

2. W

nour

Coun

er, a

in the

Peop

ck'd to hear them; but the Governour was so from giving them Encouragement, that he si'd an Order, That all such as would not conform the Ceremonies of the Church of England, should sort the Country by such a Day; whereby the inisters were obliged to return home: But bethe Time six'd for their Departure, the Instant having entred into a Confederacy against English, rose up in Arms, and massacred above the Hundred of the poor Inhabitants; but Knowles and his Brethren got safe to New-land.

THE fame bloody Defign was carrying on by the ions of New-England at this time, but their own rate Quarrels and Divisions hinder'd their putgit in Execution; for the Narrbagansets hag had Time to reflect upon the late Conduct ards the Pequots , whose Nation was deyed, and their whole Territories seized by English, and not being fatisfy'd with the Dion of Plunder that fell to their Share, they in to express their Dislike to the English, and concert proper Measures with their Neighin to shake off the Yoke, and put it out of Power to prescribe to them for the future; fuch was the Unhappiness of this miserable ple, that they always fuffer'd their private venge to take Place of the publick Good. mionimo King of the Narrhagansets, upon a rate Disgust against Uncas King of the Moks, hired a Villain- privately to murder him; the Affassin failing in his Attempt, Mianmo cut off his Head, and declared open War inft Uncas, by invading his Territories with owerful Army. Uncas took the Field with all Forces he could muster, which were not half many as Miantonimo's, and had the good Forto take him Prisoner in Battle, and cut off

Dr. Increase Mather, New-England Froubles, p. 56.

his Head. The Narrhagansets engraged at a Death of their Prince, refolved to push on War till they had destroy'd Umeas and his Na on. Uncas hereupon fled to the English, who pr mis'd to support him effectually against his En mies §; when the Narrhagansets heard this, th were struck with such a Panick Fear of under going the same Fate with the Pequots, that the immediately laid down their Arms, fent Me fengers to Boston, and begg'd a Peace; while was granted them, upon Condition of their d fraying the Charges of the War, and delivering up the Sons of their new Sachem, as Hoftag for the Performance of it: They promis'd a but when they return'd home, took no furth Care of the Matter, till Capt. Atherton, with small Party of English made an Inroad into the Country, and entering the Wigwam or Palace the old Nyantick Sachem Ninigret, took him the Hair of the Head, and clapping a Pistol his Breaft, told him he was a dead Man, if did not immediately deliver up the Hostages, a give Orders for the Payment of the Mone Ninigret had his Servants and Guard about his but the Boldness of the Action surprized the to fuch a Degree, that not one of them durk up a Hand in their Master's Defence, whi oblig'd the Sachem to comply with the Captain Demands.

But they the Measures of the Indians we thus broken by their Divisions at present, it we to be fear'd that they would grow wifer in Time and sometime or other fall upon some of the Colonies with their united Strength; the Massach sets therefore to provide against such an Accident Messengers to the three Colonies of Plymout Connecticut, and Newbaven, to inform them the Plottings and Menaces of the Narrbagans.

2

nd to a atting i her, after in their

me'd it

lowing

RT: Plan Maß

> Gove under the Plan

> > dicti fever that the

dri. I.

Art. then

tual fenc

ing of Safe

Art tati be

" fets

. Ne

<sup>5</sup> Dr. Increase Mather, New-England Troubles, p. 59.

10.164

d at

on t

his Na

vho p

his Er

119, th

f under the

Whi

heir d

eliveri

Ioftag

is'd a

furth with

alace

him

iftol

io if

ces, at

Mone

at hin

d the

urft li

whi

aptair

is we

it w

Tim

he C

affach

ciden

mout

em !

canfel

59.

nd to argue from thence the Necessity of their string into a Confedrate Union with one anomer, after the Manner of the Provinces of Holland, in their mutual Security; the Motion was no somer made, but each Province immediately empac'd it, and an Instrument was drawn up in the sllowing Words.

RTICLES of Confederation betwixt the Plantations under the Government of the Massachusets, the Plantations under the Government of Plymouth, the Plantations under the Government of Connecticut, and the Government of Newhaven, with the Plantations in Combination therewith \*.

It. I. "IT is fully agreed and concluded, by and between the Parties or Jurif-dictions above-named, and they do jointly and severally by these Presents agree and conclude, that they all be, and henceforth be called by the name of the United Colonies of New-England.

Art. II. "THE faid United Colonies, for themselves and their Posterity, do jointly and severally hereby enter into a firm and perpetual League of Friendship and Amity for Offence and Desence, mutual Advice and Succour, upon all just Occasions, both for preserving and propagating the Truth and Liberties of the Gospel, and for their own mutual Sasety and Welfare.

Art. III. "IT is further agreed that the Plantations which at present are, or hereafter shall be settled within the Limits of the Massachusets, shall be for ever under the Government
of of

Newhaven's fettling in New-England. London, 1656, p. 2.

The HISTORY of [An. 1643 of the Maffachufets, and shall have peculia "Jurisdicton among themselves as an entire Body: And that Plymouth, Connecticut, an Newbaven, shall each of them in all Respect have the like peculiar Jurisdiction and Go " vernment within their Limits, and in Refe " rence to the Plantations which already at of fettled, or shall hereafter be erected, and sha " fettle within any of their Limits respectively " provided that no other Jurisdiction shall here " after be taken in, as a dictinct Head or Mem ber of this Confederation; nor shall any other either Plantation or Jurisdiction, in present be " ing, and not already in Combination, or under " the Jurisdiction of any of these Confederates, b received by any of them; nor shall any two " these Confederates join in one Jurisdiction " without Consent of the rest, which Conse to be interpreted as in the fixth enfuing A " ticle is express'd. IV. " IT is also by these Confederates agreed that the Charge of all just Wars, whether of " fensive or defensive, on what Part or Member of this Confederation soever they fall, shall bot in Men, Provisions, and all other Disburs ments be born by all the Parts of this Confe deration, in different Proportions, according to " their different Abilities in manner following " namely, that the Commissioners for each Juri " diction from time to time, as there shall be 00 " casion, bring a true Account and Number of a " the Males in each Plantation, or any way " belonging to, or under their several Jurisdic "tions, of what Quality or Condition foever the be, from fixteen Years old to fixty, being Inha " bitants there. And that according to the di " ferent Number which from time to time that " be found, in each Jurisdiction, upon a true an just Account, the Service of Men and a Charge

" ·G

" E

" th

" fe

"Q

se the

" fue

" di

" tat

" it

" web

" tha

" Co

N.

" the

" in

any

què

dia

rate

latio

dera

man

fuffi

Serv

lefs:

this

may

exce

may

for 1

this !

to be

Shot

that

them

ceed

VOL.

164

eculia

entir

t, an

esped

d G

Refe

dy ar

d sha

tively

here

Mem

other

ent b

unde

tes, b

two

dictio

Conser

ig Ar

greed

her o

embe

ll bot

fbuild

Confe

ling t

wing

Juri

oe Od

rofa

way

rifdie

er the

Inha

he dit

e sha

ue and

nd al

harge

"Charges of the War be born by the Poll: Each Jurisdiction or Plantation, being left to their own just Course and Custom of rating themselves and People, according to their different Estates, with due Respect to their Qualities and Exemptions amongst themselves, tho' the Consideration take no Notice of any such Privilege. And that according to the different Charge of each Jurisdiction, and Plantation, the whole Advantage of the War, (if it please God so to bless their Endeavours) whether it be in Lands, Goods, or Persons, shall be proportionably divided among the said Consederates.

Val LT is further agreed, that if any of " these Jurisdittions, or any Plantations under, or in Combination with them, be invaded by any Enemy whomsoever, upon Notice and Request of any three Magistrates of that Jurisdiction fo invaded, the reft of the Confederates, without any further Meeting or Expoltulation, shall forthwith fend Aid to the Confederate in Danger, but in different Proportion, namely, the Massachusets one hundred Men. fufficiently armed, and provided for fuch a Service and Journey; and each of the reft, forty-five Men to armed and provided, or any less Number, if less be required, according to this Proportion. But if fuch a Confederate may be supplied by their next Confederate, not exceeding the Number hereby agreed, they may crave Help there, and feek no further for the Present; the Charge to be born as in this Article is express'd; and at their Return to be victualled and provided with Powder and Shot (if there be need) for their Journey by that Jurisdiction, which employed or sent for them. But none of the Jurisdictions to exceed these Numbers, till by a Meeting of the VOL. I.

226 The HISTORY of [An. 1643. " ar u fe " Commissioners for this Confederation, a greater "Aid appears necessary And this Proportion " Po " ſp to continue, till upon Knowledge of the Num-" re " A bers in each Turisdiction, which shall be brough to the next Meeting, forme other Proportion be ordered. But in any fuch Case of fending " W Men for prefent Aid, whether before or after " fee " fuch Order or Alteration, it is agreed, that a " the meeting of the Commissioners for this Con " an " lik " federation, the Caufe of fuch War or Invalid " tar " be duly confidered, and if it appear that the "Fault lay in the Party fo invaded, that the " on " ter that Jurisdiction or Plantation make just Said "Ju " faction both to the Invaders whom they have " injured, and bear all the Charges of the Wa " eig 56 themselves, without requiring any Allowand from the reft, of the Confederates towards the " all " the my Enemy whomfoever, upon Noticemal 199-AND further, if any Jurisdiction fee an " and " if - 15 Danger of an Invasion approaching, and the " tio be Time for a Meering; that in fuch Cafe the " bee -5 Magistrates of that Jurifdiction may fummor " Ge " a Meeting, at fuch convenient Place as them " mo " felves shall think meet, to confider and pro " all vide against the threatned Danger Provide " refe " when they are met, they may remove to wh " by " Place they please s only while any of these for " It "Confederates have but three Magistrates " fior " their Jurisdiction, a Request or Summons from " ext any two of them shall be accounted of equ " Ar " Force with the three mention'd in both the " all "Clauses of this Article, till there be an Increa " wh of Magistrates there. and a malery add " day VI. " IT is also agreed, that for the managin " afte and concluding of all Affairs proper to, an " be " concerning the whole Confederation, two Con " Bof " missioners shall be chosen by and out of t four Jurisdictions, namely, two for the Maj " fora chusets, two for Plymouth, two for Connecticu

643

pr

643.

reater ortion

Num-

ough

ion be nding r afte

hat a

Con

valion

at the t the

Satif

r hav · Wa

wand

ds th

e an

ther

thre

nmon

them d pro

ovide

wh

le for

tes s froi

equ th th

ncrea

12910

, 20

Con

of t

Ma eEticu

66 21

" and two for Newbaven, being all in Church-" fellowship with us, which shall bring full "Power from their several General Courts re-" spectively, to hear, examine, weigh and de-" rermine all Affairs of War or Peace, Leagues, "Aids, Charges, and Numbers of Men for "War, Division of Spoils, or whatsoever is gotten by Conquest, receiving of more Con-" federates or Plantations into Combination with " any of these Confederates, and all things of "like nature which are the proper Concomi-" tants, or Consequences of such a Confederati-" on, for Amity, Offence and Defence, not in-" termedling with the Government of any of the " Jurisdictions, which by the third Article is "preserved entirely to themselves. But if these preserved entirely to themselves. But if these "eight Commissioners, when they meet, shall not " all agree, yet it is concluded that any fix of " the eight agreeing, shall have Power to settle " and determine the Business in Question; but "if fix do not agree, that then, fuch Proposi-"tions with their Reasons, so far as they have "been debated, be fent and referr'd to the four "General Courts (viz.) the Massachusets, Ply-" mouth, Connecticut and Newbaven; and if at " all the faid General Courts, the Business so "referr'd be concluded, then to be profecuted " by the Confederates, and all their Members. " It is further agreed, that these eight Commis-" sioners shall meet once every Year, besides " extraordinary Meetings according to the fifth "Article, to consider, treat, and conclude of " all Affairs belonging to this Confederation, "which Meeting shall ever be the first Thurs-"day in September. And that the next Meeting " after the Date of these Presents, which shall " be accounted the fecond Meeting, shall be at " Boston in the Massachusets; the third at Hart-" ford; the fourth at Newbaven; the fifth at Plymouth ; Q 2

Plymant, the fixth and seventh at Boston, and the then Buriford, Newbaven and Plymouth, and so in Course successively. If in the mean Time

" fee

4 up

" the

" vai

4 Sei

TO P

" Cei

" Esc

" giti

ing och

two

mac

fend

of 1

pref

shall

Cafe

fuch

Han

if H

any 1

that

there

"IX

dang er Pl

agree

mouth

Time

them

therec

of ex

the

name

fome middle Place be not found out, and agreed on, which may be commodious for all

the Jurisdictions,

Meeting of these eight Commissioners, whether ordinary or extraordinary, they all, or any six of them, agreeing as before, may chuse their President out of themselves, whose Office and Work shall be to take Care, and direct for Order, and a comely carrying on of all Proceedings in the present Meetings, but he shall be invested with no such Power or Respect, as by which he shall hinder the Propounding, or Progress of any Business, or any Way cast the Scales, otherwise than in the precedent

" the Scales, otherwise than in the precedent Article is agreed.
"VIII. It is also agreed, That the Commis-

fioners for this Confederation, hereafter at their Meetings, whether ordinary or extraordinary,

as they may have Commission or Opportunity, do endeavour to frame and establish Agree-

" ments, and Orders, in general Cafes of a Civil
"Nature, wherein all the Plantations interested

for preserving Peace among themselves, and

preventing (as much as may be) all Occafions of War, or Differences with others, as

about the free and speedy Passage of Justice, in each Jurisdiction to all the Confederates equally, as to their own receiving those that

remove from one Plantation to another without due Certificates; how all the Jurifdictions

may carry it towards the *Indians*, that they neither grow infolent, nor be injured without

due Satisfaction, lest War break in upon the Confederates through such Miscarriages.

It is also agreed, That if any Servant run

643. and

d fo

ime

id a-

rall

each

ther

y fix

their and

for

Pro-

fhall

sect,

ing,

caft

dent

mil

heir

ary,

nity,

ree-

Civil

fled

and

cca-

as

tice,

rates

that

rith-

ions

they

hout

pon

tges.

run

Way

NEW-ENGLAND. 229 away from his Master into any of these con-" federated Jurisdictions; that in such Case, s upon the Certificate of one Magistrate in " the Jurisdiction, out of which the faid Ser-" vants fled, or upon other due Proof, the faid Servant shall be delivered either to his Master, " or any other that pursues and brings such "Certificate or Proof. And that upon the "Escape of any Prisoner whatsoever, or Fugitive for any criminal Cause, whether break-"ing Prison, or getting from the Officer, or otherwise escaping, upon the Certificate of two Magistrates out of which the Escape is made, that he was a Prisoner, or such an Offender at the Escape, the Magistrates, or some of them of that Jurisdiction, where for the present the faid Prisoner or Fugitive abideth, shall forthwith grant such a Warrant as the Case will bear, for the apprehending of any such Person, and the Delivery of him into the Hands of the Officer who pursueth him. And if Help be required for the fafe returning of any fuch Offender, it shall be granted to him that craveth the fame, he paying the Charges

thereof. "IX. AND for that the just Wars may be of dangerous Confequence, especially to the smaller Plantations in these united Colonies; it is agreed, That neither the Maffachusets, Plymouth, Connecticut, nor Newbaven, nor any of the Members of any of them shall at any Time hereafter begin, undertake, or engage themselves, or this Confederation, or any Part thereof in any War whatfover (fudden Exigencies with the necessary Consequences thereof excepted, which are also to be moderated as much as the Case will permit) without the Consent and Agreement of the forenamed eight Commissioners, or at least six of " them,

Confederates in Proportion, according to the " fourth Article, "X, THAT on extraordinary Occasions, when Meetings are summon'd by three Magistrates of any Jurisdiction, or two, as in the fifth Article, if any of the Commissioners come not, due Warning being given, or fent, it is agreed, That four of the Commissioners shall have Power to direct War, which cannot be delayed, and to fend for due Proportions of Men out of each Jurisdiction, as well as fir might do, if all met; but not lefs than fix shall determine the Justice of the War, or allow the Demands or Bills of Charges, or cause an " Levies to be made for the fame. "XI. IT is further agreed, That if any the Confederates shall hereafter break any o " these present Articles, or be any other Way " injurious to any one of the other Jurisdictions " the Breach of Agreement or Injury shall be duly confidered, and ordered by the Commi " fioners for the other Jurisdictions, that bot · Peace and this present Confederation ma " be entirely preserved without Violation. " LASTLY, This perpetual Confederation and the feveral Articles and Agreemen " thereof being read, and feriously considered both by the general Court of the Massachusel " and the Commissioners for Plymouth, Connect cut, and Newbaven, were presently and fully a " lowed and confirmed by three of the forename " Confederates, namely, the Massachusets, Con · necticu

The HISTORY of [An. 1643.

"them, as in the fixth Article is provided. And

" that no Charge be required of any of the

" Confederates, in Case of a defensive War, till

proved the Justice of the War, and have a-

greed on the Sum of Money to be levied, which Sum is then to be paid by the several

"the faid Commissioners have met,

230

" of

:Ekô

" 19 " ed

and ap-

" de " Co

" Me

" rat " Co " del

" dat
" tha
" app

" one " fcri " Day

Fro Coloni gard t Neigh Provin

Courts
WH
four gr
acting,
Church
Man,
England
Englif

State to over in

of great

" nesticut, and Newbaven. In Testimony whereof the General Court of the Massachusets, by " their Secretary, and the Commissioners for " Connecticut and Newbaven, subscribed them the " 19th Day of the third Month, commonly call-

" ed May, Anno Domini 1643.

643.

And

the

r, till

l ap-

ve a-

vied.

everal

o the

fions.

Ma-

n the

come

it is

fhall

ot b

ns o

as fix

fhal

w th

an

ny o

Way

tions

ill b

nmi

bot

ma

tion

men

erec

u fet.

meet

lya

ame

Col 7icu

Ď.

"ONLY the Commissioners from Plymouth. " having brought no Commission to conclude, "defired Respite to advise with their General "Court, which was granted, and at the fecond " Meeting of the Commissioners for the Confede-" ration held at Boston in September following, the "Commissioners for the Jurisdiction of Plymouth, "delivered in an Order of their General Court, " dated August 29, 1643; by which it appeared, " that these Articles of Confederation were read, "approved, and confirmed by the faid Court, " and all their Townships, and their Commissi-"oners authorized to ratify them by their Sub-" fcriptions, which they accordingly did the 7th " Day of September, 1643."

From this Time we are to look upon the four Colonies of New-England as one Body, with Regard to all the publick Transactions with their Neighbours, though the private Affairs of each Province were still managed by Magistrates and

Courts of their own.

WHILE this great Affair of the Union of the four grand Settlements of New-England was transacting, died Mr. William Brewster, Teacher of the Church of New-Plymouth, a wife and prudent Man, and deservedly called the Father of New-England. He had a learned Education in one of the English Universities, and from thence entered himself into the Service of Mr. Davison, Secretary of State to Queen Elizabeth, with whom he went over into Holland, and was entrusted with Affairs of great Importance, as particularly with the keeping the Keys of the Cautionary Towns. He after-

wards lived in good Esteem in his own Country, till the Severity of the Times forced him to return to Holland, where he became first a Member. and afterwards a Ruling Elder of Mr. Robinford Congregation at Leyden. Here he continued till the Year 1620, and then, at the Age of 60, had the Courage and Resolution to put himself at the Head of that Part of the Church which began the first Settlement in New-England. He lived their almost 22 Years, and bore his Part of the Fa tigues and Hardships of the Infant-Colony, wid the utmost Bravery. He was not an ordained Minister, but, being a Man of Learning and Pi ety, he preached to the Colony for above fever Years, till they could provide themselves with Pastor. The Magistrates and People paid him the greatest Respect, and after a long Life filled with Sufferings on the Account of Religion, he died in the Midst of his Friends in Peace, April the 18th, 1643, in the 84th Year of his Age and was buried with as great Honour and Solemnity, as the present Circumstances of the Colony would admit.

THE Town of Plymonth growing too 1644. Streight for the Inhabitants, and the Land thereabouts proving barren, and hardly worth manuring, some of the principal Gentlement agreed to look out another Settlement; and having viewed a Tract of Land near the Promontory of Cape Cod, called by the Indians Namses, where the Soil was rich, and the Situation pleasant, they purchased it of the Natives, and some of the best Families in Town removed thither with their Effects, and built the Town of East-Ham.

THE Peace of the Country had like to have been broken at the same Time by the following Accident: An Indian murdered an English Man in the Woods near Connecticut; the English demanded the Murderer, but the Segamore refused

at was forder BUT as pre forde felf; Minty eir chi overno lioters ve Bo on th T: T main V aties g lajority ilonme on to t iberty' a În

i Adl

deliv

wed fo

their

ainft

That is ment wording bjects occeded oprison unground ble Pre-

wing C

FIRST

Child's

erefore

1643.

intry,

to re-

mber.

in for

ed till

had at the

in the

e Fa

wich

arned

d Pi

feven

ith i

hid

filled a, he April

Age,

olony

z to0

Land

ardly

emen

hav-

itory

here

fant,

ne of

with

am.

have

wing

Man

de-

fused

to

deliver him up; whereupon both Sides premed for War: The furious Indians, in the Heat their Rage, committed fome Acts of Hostility painst the English; but when they faw the Storm at was coming upon them, they surrendered the lorderer, and so the Peace was continued.

But the the public Peace with the Indians
as preferred, the Commonwealth was in 1645.
Morder from intestine Commotions within

elf; for the Inhabitants of \* Hingbam, in the bunty of Suffolk, quarrelling about the Election of eir chief Military Officer, Mr. Wintbrop, Deputyovernour of the Province, proceeded against the loters in an arbitrary Manner, obliging them to we Bond to appear at the Quarter-Court, and on their Refulal, he committed them to Prin: The Accusation laid against them, was wer of the General Court, and their own Limes granted them by the faid Court. The pority of the Town were inflamed at the Imforment of their Friends, and figned a Petin to the General Court for a free Hearing, and berty of Speech to plead their common Liber-In this Petition they complain of the folwing Grievances: A A S C nwo stands noon haves

Frast, That they had not a settled Form of overnment according to the Laws of England. That they had not a sure and comfortable Enment of their Lives, Liberties and Estates, wording to their natural Rights, as free-born bjects of the English Nation.—From whence weeded Fears of illegal Commitments, unjust sprisonments, Taxes, Rares, Customs, Levies, ungrounded and undoing Assessments, unjustible Presses, undue Fines, &c. In a Word, of Uncertainty of all Things they enjoy'd.—They before pray, that there may be a more settled Rule

Child's New-England Jonas cast up at London, 1647, p. 3.

Rule of Justice in Cases of Judicature, from which if Men swerve, there may be some Power settled

to call them to Account to the most beautiful to the call them to Account to the call t

SECONDLY, That whereas there are many Thousands in these Plantations of the English Nation free-born, quiet, peaceable Men, righte ous in their Dealings, and forward to advance the publick Good, &c. who are debarr'd from all Civil Employments, not being permitted to bear the least Office, nor to have a Vote in chusing Magistrates, Captains, or other Civil or Militar Officers-They therefore defire that Civil Liber ty and Freedom be granted to all truly English without impoling any Oaths or Covenants on them which feem not to concur with the Oath of Alle giance formerly enforced on all; or at least, to detract from the Laws of their native Country they being willing to take fuch Oaths and Cove nants, as express their Defire to promote the Glory of God, and the Good of the Plantation their Duty to the State of England, and Love their Nation. But they intreat that their Bodie may not be impress'd, nor their Goods forcibl taken away, left they, not knowing the Julio of the War, may be ignorantly and unwilling forced upon their own Destruction.-

People, eminent for Knowledge, and no Wa scandalous in their Lives and Conversations, Menbers of the Churches of England, not different from the late and best Reformation of England and Scotland, who yet are prohibited the Long Supper, because they will not subscribe the Church Covenant, for which they see no Light in the Word of God; but notwithstanding are compelled under a severe Fine, every Lord's Day, to appear the Congregation; and Notice is taken of such who stay not till Baptism be administred to oth Mens Children, the denied to their own; and

nance into therefore Church Lives Church felves mation

Parlia Visito

hall b

the Consined liamen rity to though Affair by fent fined.

DR.

SIX

gard to the De open Co first pl how us Accourbut this from the

pleaded justifyir of the J 645. which

ettled

6964

many Inglif

ighte-

ce the

m al

rufing

ilitar

Liber

nglib

them

Alle

ist, t

intry

Cove

te th

ation

ove d

Bodie

rcibl

Tultid

lling

goo Wa

Men

entir

ngla

Lord

nurch

in t

pell'

appe

of fu

oth

and for

some Places forced to contribute to the Maintenance of those Ministers who will not receive them into their Flock; though they desire it — They therefore pray for Liberty to the Members of the Churches of England, not scandalous in their Lives and Conversations, to be received into the Churches; or else to grant Liberty to settle themselves in a Church-way, according to the Reformation of England and Scotland.—Or else, they shall be necessitated to lay their Case before the Parliament of England.

Sign'd by Robert Child, Tho. Fowle,
Samuel Maverick, Thomas Burton,
David Yale, John Smith, John
Daud.

Six of these seven Petitioners were cited before the Court, and charged with great Offences contained in this Petition; they appealed to the Parliament of England, and tendred sufficient Security to abide by their Sentence; but the Court thought themselves empowered to determine the Affair themselves, which they accordingly did, by sentencing the Offenders to be imprisoned and sined.

I the lists care care after The Checkens !

DR. Mather says, the Court had so much Regard to the Petitioners, as to order Mr. Wintbrop, the Deputy-Governour, to make his Defence in open Court before a vast Assembly of People, who first pleaded his Commission, and shewed them how unreasonable it was to call a Governour to Account during the Time of his Administration; but this not giving Satisfaction, he came down from the Bench, and, like a Criminal at the Bar, pleaded his Cause, and gave such Reasons for the justifying his Conduct, as raised the Indignation of the Deputies against the Petitioners, and made them

<sup>\*</sup> C. Mather, B. II. p. 13.

them not only acquit him, but lay a fevere Fine

on the Heads of his Profecutors. Many

He adds, further, that after the Trial was over, Mr. Winthrop refumed his Place of Deputy Governour upon the Bench, and spoke to the following Effect:

## GENTLEMEN, ON WAVE COMPANY

with the Charles and the state of the "Twill not look back to the past Proceeding of this Court, nor to the Persons therein concerned: I am fatisfied that I was publickly accused, and that I am now publickly acquit ted; but give me Leave to fay fomething of this Occasion, that may rectify the Opinions of " the People, from whom these Distempers i " the State have arisen. The Questions that " have troubled the Country of late, have been 44 about the Authority of the Magistrate, and the "Liberty of the People: Magistracy is certain " an Appointment of God, and I entreat you to confider that you choose them from among yourselves, and that they are Men subject to "Iike Paffions with yourselves: We take a " Oath to govern you according to God's Laws " and our own, to the best of our Skill; if w " commit Errors not willingly, but for Want " Skill, you ought to bear with us: Nor would " I have you mistake your own Liberty; then is a Liberty of doing what we lift, without " regard to Law or Justice; this Liberty is in " deed inconfistent with Authority; but civil moral, federal Liberty, which confifts in ever one's enjoying his Property, and having the Benefit of the Laws of his Country; this what you ought to contend for with the Ha zard of your Lives: But this is very confiften with a due Subjection to the civil Magistrate,

C. Midde, B. II. P. 13

and t

THE Par

hild ar hipping ale, ar his I the

one of all if a minft the would ade furnigers,

Woma lidnigh as any lited, i why had for

w-En

preffice like donother they at they at a Co

em to what

nt uried the

1645

e Fine

l wa

eputy

he fol

2511

3707

eding

herei

olickl

cquit

ing of

ons o

ers i

s tha

e bea

nd th

rtain

it you

mon

ect u

ke at

Laws

if w

ant o

would

then

ithou

is in

civil

every

ig the

his is

e Ha-

fiftent trate, and the paying him that Respect that his Cha-

THE Court and People were entirely fatisfied ith this Part of Mr. Wintbrop's Conduct, and fo ercome with his Condescension, that to make m Amends, they chose him Governour of the ovince every Year after as long as he lived . the Petitioners resolved to lay the Case before Parliament of England, and accordingly Dr. and Mr. Fowle took Passage in the first lipping that went for England, after their Reale, and carried authentick Copies of the whole fair with them. The Government was alarmed this Refolution of the Petitioners, and jealous the Confequence; infomuch, that Mr. Cotton, one of his Sermons, took Occasion to say, at if any shall carry any Writings, or Complaints inft the People of God in that Country to England, hould be as Jonas in the Ship. These Words de fuch an Impression upon some of the Pasers, that which they were in a Storm at Sea, Woman came up from between Decks, about lidnight, and begg'd Mr. Vaffel, that if there s any Jonas in the Ship, as Mr. Cotton had dittd, it might be thrown over-board. He alk d why she came to him? She reply'd, because had fome Writings against the good People of w-England. But not being able to make any pression upon him, she went to Mr. Fowle in t like distracted Manner, who told her, They nothing but a Petition to the Parliament, If they might enjoy the Liberties of Englishmen, da Copy of the Petition they had prefented to Court at Boston; and if she and others thought em to be the Occasion of the Storm, they might what they would with them. So the Woman med the Petitions to her Friends between Decks,

New-England's Jonas, p. 18.

who threw them over-board; but Mr. Fowle too care to preserve the Originals, which he pullished afterwards to the World, under the Title New-England's Jonas east up at London; but the Parliament of England were too busy at this Tim

hefore

F En

Part o

the B

and r

varnif

best T

ried a

of Re

fels n

Planta Virgini

we ma

been th

out of

betwee

ame f

therefo

more t

the Ne

Side, 1

least A

enjoyin

they or

which

to take Cognizance of the Affair.

OLD England was indeed in a dreadful Storn for the King and Parliament, having battled with Petitions and Remonstrances against one a other for fome Time, at last drew their Sword whereupon the Parliament deprived the Bifle of their Votes, and at length abolish'd the En copal Government itself; each Party raised Army, and garrison'd the chief Towns in the Possession : the whole Kingdom took Part on o Side or the other till every Corner of the La was filled with Blood and Confusion. The reign Protestants wished well to the Parliamen for they were to incenfed at the fevere Proces ings of Archbishop Land, and some other Pr lates, that they could not but be pleased at the Downfall. The Archbishop had laid the Du and French Churches in London, under severe R straints, as to the Exercise of their Discipline and Dr. Wren, Bishop of Norwich, had proceed ed against those of Canterbury, Norwich, and of Parts of his Diocefe, with fuch Warmth, the many of them left the Kingdom, and carri their Mystery into foreign Parts, to the lesseni of the Manufactures of the Kingdom. A whereas the English Ambassadors in Protest Countries used to frequent their Churchest, Aructions had been given to the Lord Scudama at Paris, not to go to Charenton; whereupon fitted up the Chapel in his own House, and fi nished it with Candles upon the Communic Table, to the great Offence of the Protestants that Country, who had never feen any fuch Thi befor

<sup>·</sup> Compl. Hift. of Eng. Vol. III. p. 72. + Ibid. p. 120

1.164 before; and declared publickly, that the Church England did not look upon the Hugonots as a Part of her Communion. These Proceedings of the Bishops begot ill Blood amongst Protestants, and made the foreign Churches unconcern'd at their Downfall; and the our Historians have varnish'd these Things over, and given them the belt Turn they would bear, yet certainly they carned a Face of a Reconciliation with the Church of Rome, whatever the Authors of these Counels might intend by them. All the foreign Plantations fided with the Parliament, except Virginia; the several Colonies of New-England, we may be fure, did fo; for the Bishops had en their implacable Enemies, and driven them out of the Land; and one Part of the Quarrel between the King and Parliament, was the very sme for which they left the Country. For them therefore to wish well to the Parliament, was no more than to wish well to themselves : But tho' the New-England Colonies were on the Parliament Side, they were not capable of giving them the

ENGHEN the English fielt con

Frances were absolute Masters of the Lives and

Fortunes of their Subjects | and their Print wa

a forc'of Conjurers, who precended to conven

Policinon of New-England,

Natives were a wild and h

vage Heople, without at

le too

e pul

**Fitle** 

butt

Storm

ttled

one a

word

Bifhe

e Ep

ifed

n the

On o

e.La

The

amen

rocce

er Pr

at th

e Dul

ere R

pline

rocee

nd oth

h, th carri esteni A otesta

s†, 1

udami

upon

and fi

nunio (tants

Thi

before

P. 120

least Assistance, but, like Spectators at a Distance, mjoying all the Bleffings of Peace and Plenty, they only looked on and beheld the Calamities in which their native Country was involved,

Straight Form of Civil Government A. P. Cearance of Religion : the



## CHAP.

Of the Conversion of the Indians Sever Conferences of the Reverend Mr. Eliot win Body of Indians agree to ente my into vivil Society, and make Laws by M Plioe's Direction for their Governmen The Confession of Faith of Ponampam Indian Convert. Two Exportations or Se mons of Indian Preachers on a Falt-Da Vingyard, under the Conduct of Mr. May hew . Hincoomes's Boldness and Confiant o lin the Christian Faith; the Reverend M Mayhew's Death and Character. Mr. le create Mathet's Letter to Professor Leufde at Utrecht, giving an Account of the Num ber of the Podian Churches, their Mame of Worship, and Form of Church Disciplin The Continuation of their History. Of the Society for propagating the Gospel in New England.

1646. COMES HEN the English first too Possession of New-England,th W Natives were a wild and a vage People, without an Form of civil Governmen

and very little Appearance of Religion; the Princes were absolute Masters of the Lives an Fortunes of their Subjects; and their Priests wer a fort of Conjurers, who pretended to conver , kill with Peop the I nor . Wor was fo his R

befel 1 fome at oth about to be Object

feldon becauf who iv they fi thor o

befel 1 Offerin Iri of New on the

Souls Error, wanted Knowle of Engli

the Cole " the ] and ( " viour

and t pal 1 Bishop o Mr. Wb

tling th much at VOL.

640

very

wit

ente

M

men

n a

Ser

Da

Viay

lam

M

· I

ufde

Nun

anne

plin

f th

New

t00

nd, th

nd fa

t an

the

es an

s wer

nver

wit

with familiar Spirits, but did not encourage the People's Devotion, nor instruct them in any of the Tocial Virtues; they had neither Temples, nor Altars, nor any stated Times of religious Worship. When a Person was sick, the Priest was fent for to make use of his Enchantments for his Recovery; and when any publick Calamity befel the Country, the Priests and People offered some fort of Sacrifices to appeale the Deity; but at other Times they never troubled their Heads about the Matter. One Thing further deserves to be taken Notice of, which is, that the chief Object of their Devotion was the Devil; they feldom worshipp'd the Supreme Being Kichtan, because they apprehended him to be a good Being, who would not hurt any of his Creatures; but they flood in great Awe of Hobamocko, the Author of all Evil; and upon every Mischief that befol them, loaded his Altars with their Burnt-Olderings with the second of the second

In moved the Compassion of the first Planters of New-England, who left their native Country in the Account of Religion, to fee fo many poor Souls wandering in the Paths of Ignorance and Error, who were Men as well as themselves, and wanted only Instruction to bring them to the knowledge of God in Christ. Besides, the King of England, in the Charter which he granted to the Colony, had declared, that " to win and incite " the Natives of that Country to the Knowledge " and Obedience of the only true God, and Sa-"viour of Mankind, was in his Royal Intention; and the Adventurers free Possession, the princi-"pal End of the Plantation." And the pious bethop of Bath and Wells, Dr. Lake, who affifted Mr. White of Dorchester with his Counsels in setting the Massachuset Colony, had this Work so much at Heart, that he declared he would have VOL. I. gone

gone over, and begun it himself, had it not been

the

all t

who

and

the

liker

Fait

He

of el

Thir

men

and a

in di

to kn

**flions** 

up, a

Christ

were a

Praye

fed the

ment ?

and th

Child:

be vili

aren?

Meetir People,

Mr. E. Answe

ference

UPC

found :

fore.

and tax

\* Day-

P. 7.

for his advanced Age.

THE Reverend Mr. Eliot, therefore, Minister of Roxbury, refolved to attempt this great Work and for this Purpose hised an Indian who could speak English, to teach him the Language. The Indian Language, as the Reader bath already ob ferved in the first Chapter, must be very difficult to learn, by reason of the excessive Length of the Words, which have not the least Affinity with any of the European Languages: The Pronuncia tion is harsh, and the Way of conversing in i very unpleasant, by reason of the slow Commu nication of Ideas: But Mr. Eliotis Zeal furmount ed all these Difficulties to that by conversing with his Indian Servant a few Months, the wi able to speak the Language intelligibly, and after fome Time, by his own indefatigable Pains and Industry, he became fo complete a Master of it as to be capable of reducing it to a Methodo which he has fince published to the World under the Title of the Indian Grammar. Same Same Same

Having thus fitted himself for his Work, he resolved to break the Ice; and accordingly, of the 28th of October, 1646, he went, with the more in Company, to the neighbouring Indian having given them Notice before hand of his Defire to instruct them in the Christian Faith. Want bon, a wife and grave Man, tho' no Sachem, will five or fix Indians, met them at some Distance from their Wigwams, and bidding them welcome conducted them into a large. Apartment, where great Number of the Natives were gathered to gether to hear this new Doctrine which the fing life were to teach them. After a short Prayer Mr. Eliot rehearsed and explained the ten Commandments, informing them at the same Time of the same T

Page 1.

the dreadful Curse of God that would fall upon

646. been

nifter Vork. Could

The y obficult

DCIR.

in i nmu lount

e wa lafte

of it

r che

y, or thre

s Do

with Hance come

d to

rayer Com-

me o

1647

all those that brake them. He then told them who Jefus Christ was, where he was now gone. and how he would one Day come again to judge the World in flaming Fire. He informed them likewise of the blessed State of all those, who by Faith believe in Christ, and know him favingly. He spake also of the Creation and Fall of Man; of the infinite Greatness of God, the Maker of all Things; of the Joys of Heaven, and the Torments of Hell; perfuading them to Repentance and a good Life. Having spent about an Hour in discoursing upon these Arguments, he defired wknow whether they would alk him any Queflions about his Sermon; upon which one stood up, and alked, How be might come to know Jesus Christ? Another enquired, Whether Englishmen were ever so ignorant of Jesus Christ as themselves? A third, Whether Jesus Christ could understand Prayers in the Indian Language? Another propoled this Question: How there could be an Image of God, fince it was forbidden in the second Commandment? Another, Whether if the Father be naught. and the Child good, God will be offended with that Child; because in the second Commandment it is said. he visits the Iniquities of the Fathers upon the Chilhen? The last Question that was asked at this Meeting, was, How all the World became full of People, if they were all once drowned in the Flood? Mr. Eliot and his Friends gave plain and familiar Answers to all these Questions; and after a Conterence of about three Hours, returned Home. Upon the 11th of November \*, they gave the

Upon the 11th of November \*, they gave the Indians another Meeting by Appointment, and found a larger Company met together than before. Mr. Eliot began first with the Children, and taught them these three Questions and An-

R 2

wers:

Day-breaking of the Gospel in New-England, London, 1647,

ord

very

Elio

Mee

two

defir

lies:

India

be ed

life g

were

zed a

Motie

Bu

nece ff

of livi

Societ

Indian.

build .

apted,

that is,

to be c

following

First,

tmost

Second

young

Shillings

Thirdl

Hands 1

arried t

lished.

Fourth

ervant,

tup a V

lift up a

Fifthly,

led up, E

e shall p

Day-bre

fwers: Q. I. Who made you and all the World? A. God. Q. 2. Who do you expect should save you from Sin and Hell? A. Jesus Christ. Q. 2. How many Commandments bath God given you to keep? A. Ten. He afterwards preached about an Hour to the whole Company concerning the Nature of God, and the Necessity of Faith in Jesus Christ for the procuring his Favour. He informed them likewise what Jesus Christ had done and suffered for the Salvation of Sinners, and what dreadful Judgments they must expect, if they neglected the Salvation that was now offered them. The whole Company appeared very ferious, and after Sermon, Liberty being given them to ask any Questions for their further Information; an old Man prefently stood up, and with Tears in his Eyes, asked, Whether it work not too late for such an old Man as be, who was near Death, to repent and feek after God? Another afked, How the English came to differ so much from the Indians in their Knowledge of God and Jefus Christ, fince they bad all at first but one Father? Another enquired, How it came to pass that Sea-Water was salt, and River-Water fresh? Another, That if the Water was higher than the Earth, bow it comes to pass that it does not overflow all the Earth? Mr. Eliot and his Friends spent several Hours in answering these and fome other Questions, and in the Evening returned Home; the Indians telling them, that they did much thank God for their coming; and for what they had heard, they were wonderful Things to them. It bears to a world south species to some

Upon the 26th of the same Month, they me the Indians a third Time\*, but the Company wa not so numerous as before, because the Powaws or Priests, had diffuaded some from coming to hear the English Ministers, and threatened other with Death; but those that were present appeared were

<sup>\*</sup> Day-breaking of the Gofpel in New-England, p. 18.

46.

id?

you

low

ep?

our

e of

irist

nem

ered

dful

cted

The

after

any

cold

n his

fucb

epent

Eng-

their

bad

How

iver-

was

pat it

d his

thele

ening

tha

ed for

ings u

in regis

y me

y was

waws

ng to

other

peared

very serious, and seemed to be touched with Mr. Eliot's Sermon. Two or three Days after this Meeting, Wampas, a wise and sage Indian, with two of his Companions, came to the English, and desired to be admitted into some of their Families: He brought his Son, and two or three other Indian Children with him, begging they might be educated in the Christian Faith, which the English granted; and, at the next Meeting, all that were present offered their Children to be catechized and instructed by the English; who, upon this Motion, resolved to set up a School among them.

But before this could be accomplished, it was necessary to take them off from their wild Way of living, and bring them into a fort of civil society: The General Court therefore gave the Indians in that Neighbourhood some Land to build a Town upon, which they thankfully accepted, and called it by the Name of Noonatomen, that is, Rejoicing. And as many as were willing to be civilized, met together and agreed on the following Laws.

First, \* THAT if any Man be idle a Week, or tmost a Fortnight, he shall pay Five Shillings. Secondly, Is any unmarried Man shall lie with young Woman unmarried, he shall pay twenty shillings.

Thirdly, Ir any Man shall beat his Wife, his hands shall be tied behind him, and he shall be arried to the Place of Justice to be severely puished.

Fourthly, EVERY young Man, if not another's broant, and if unmarried, shall be compell'd to tup a Wigwam, and plant for himself, and not hist up and down in other Wigwams.

Fifthly, Ir any Woman shall not have her Hair the up, but hang loose, or be cut as Mens Hair, the shall pay Five Shillings.

R 3 Sixtbly,

Day-breaking of the Gospel in New-England, p. 22.

Sintbly, It any Woman shall go with naked Breasts, she shall pay two Shillings.

Seventily, ALL Men that wear long Locks shall pay five Shillings.

" 20

" fh

" the

" Co

" Inc

" wh

" tha

" the

.TH

be bu

them t

Wall,

Mattoc

ikewi

by whi

and the

equal t

ing bui

Trees ;

whereas

all the (

THE

**lomethi** 

in the

Turkies ;

terries ;

besides,

in Hay-

ther fo

as those

WHII

men, the

• Shepha

London, 164

ce poore

Eighthly, If any shall kill their Lice between their Teeth, they shall pay five Shillings.

But the general Court being willing to encourage the *Indians* further, made the following Order concerning them, dated May 26, 1647.

" Upon Information that the Indians dwell-" ing among us, are by the Ministry of the " Word brought to some Civility, and are defirous " to have a Court of ordinary Judicature fet " up among them; it is therefore order'd by " Authority of this Court, that one or more of the Magistrates, shall once every Quarter keep " a Court at fuch Place where the Indians ordi-" narily affemble to hear the Word of God, to " hear and determine all Caufes both civil and " criminal not being capital, concerning the In-" dians only; and that the Indian Sachems shall " have Liberty to take Orders in the Nature of "Summons, or Attachments, to bring any of their People to the faid Courts, and to keep " Court of themselves every Month, if they see Occasion, to determine small Causes of " civil Nature, and fuch smaller criminal Caules, as the faid Magistrates shall refer to them; and " the faid Sachems shall appoint Officers to serve "Warrants, and to execute the Orders and Judge " ments of either of the faid Courts, which Officer " shall from time to time be allowed by the faid " Magistrates in the Quarter Courts, or by the "Governour: And that all Fines to be imposed " upon any Indian in any of the faid Courts " shall go and be bestowed towards the building

of fome Meeting-houses for Education of their

Shephard's clear Sun-shine of the Gostel upon the Indians London 1648. p. 15.

"poorer Children in Learning, or other publick "Use, by the Advice of the said Magistrates," and of Mr. Eliat, or of such other Elder as shall ordinarily instruct them in the true Religion. And it is the Desire of this Court that these Magistrates and Mr. Eliat, or such other Elders as shall attend the keeping of the said "Courts, will carefully endeavour to make the Indians understand our most useful Laws, and the Principles of Reason, Justice, and Equity, whereon they are grounded, and it is desired that some Care may be taken of the Indians on

" the Lord's Day."

46.

ked

ocks

veen

en-

ving

7.

vell-

the

rous fet

by

re ct

keep

ordi-

1, 10

and e In-

shall

re o

y o

eep a

of a

rules,

and

ferve

udg

fficer!

e faid

posed

ourts

ilding

theil

poore

Indians

The Ground on which their Town was to be built, being mark'd out, Mr. Eliot advised them to fence it in with Ditches, and a Stone Wall, promising to give them, Shovels, Spades, Mattocks, and Crows of Iron for this Purpose; he likewise gave Money to those that work'd hardest, by which means their Town was soon enclosed, and the Wigwams or Houses of the meanest were equal to those of the Sachems in other Places, being built not with Matts, but with the Barks of Trees; and divided into several Apartments; whereas before they used to eat and sleep, and do all the Offices of Nature together.

The Women began to learn to spin, and find something to sell at Market all the Year round; in the Winter they sold Brooms, Staves, Baskets, Surkies; in the Spring Cranberries, Fish, Straw-berries; in the Summer Hurtleberries, Grapes, Fish; besides, several of them work'd with the English in Hay-time and Harvest; but they were neither so industrious nor capable of hard Labour,

a those who have been bred to ir.

WHILE these Things were doing at Noonatomen, the Indians about Concord express'd their De-R 4 fires

Shephard's clear Sun-shine of the Gospel upon the Indians, loudon, 1648. p. 28, 32.

fires of being civilized, and of receiving the Christian Faith; they begg'd Mr. Eliot to come and preach to them, and address'd the Government for a spot of Ground either by the Side of the Bear Swamp, or on the East side of Mr. Flints Pond, to build them a Town; about the latter End of February several of their Sachems and Principal Men met at Concord, and agreed upon the following Laws for their civil and religious Government.

THAT there shall be no more Powawing a mong, them, upon Penalty of twenty Shilling for every Offence.

THAT who foever shall be drunk shall forfeit twenty Shillings.

THAT if any be convicted of Stealing, he shall restore fourfold.

THAT whosoever shall prophane the Sabbath shall pay twenty Shillings.

THAT who foever shall commit Fornication, shall pay twenty Shillings, if a Man, and ten Shillings if a Woman.

a Beaft to be punished with Death,

NONE to beat their Wives, on penalty of twenty Shillings.

THEY resolved to lay aside their old Ceremonies of howling, greasing their Bodies, adorning their Hair; and to follow the English Fashions.

THE V agreed to pray in their Wigwams, and to say Grace before and after Meat.

THESE and some other Orders of the same Nature, were published and approved by the whole Company, and Capt, Willard of Concord was desired to be their Recorder, and see them put in Execution.

But

I

Bu 2

he Rev

everal

March,

the Ind

gard to

ofe the

r the I

ngly on

nighty ?

Prayer with bis

her M

to the

ippeare Manner

BUT

of the

far as C

as man would l

as the

Water,

City, and that he

he tells

Night

from Pl

" my S

" have

" Paul

" Hard

went u

Work,

\* Mr.

646

Chri-

and

men

the

lint

atter

Prin-

n the

Go

ng alings

or feit

s, he

bath

tion,

ten

1111

with

y of

Cere-

lorn-

ashi-

11.7

and

Na-

vhole

de-

it in

But

Bur to return to the Indians at Noonatomen; he Rev. Mr. Wilson, Allen, Dunstar, Shephard, with everal other English went thither on the third of March, and after Sermon defired that if any of he Indian Women had any Difficulties with Reand to the Christian Religion, they would proof them, either by acquainting their Husbands, the Interpreter, privately with them; accordgly one ask'd, Whether she pray'd, when she only in'd with her Husband in his Prayer to God Alighty? Another ask'd, Whether ber Husband's Prayer signify'd any thing, if he continued to he angry nith bis Wife, and beat ber? At this, and some oher Meetings, the English gave away Cloaths the Indian Men, Women, and Children; fo hat on a Lecture Day the greatest part of them ppeared handsomely dress'd after the English Manner.

But Mr. Eliot's Labours were not confined one or two Places, he travelled into all Parts of the Massachuset and Plymouth Colonies, even as ar as Cape Cod, offering to preach the Gospel to s many of the Sachems and their Subjects as would hear him; he was in Journeyings often, and as the Apostle Paul says of himself) in Perils of Water, in Perils by the Heathen, in Perils in the City, and in Perils in the Wilderness. In a Letter that he writ to the Honourable Mr. Winflow \*. tells him, that he had not been dry Day nor Night from Tuesday to Saturday, but travell'd from Place to Place in that Condition, "only at " Night (says he) I pull off my Boots, and wring "my Stockings, and so put them on again; I " have confidered the Exhortation of the Apostle " Paul to his Son Timothy, That we must endure "Hardship, as good Soldiers of Jesus Christ." went usually once a Fortnight on his Missionary Work, tho' herein he frequently carried his Life

<sup>\*</sup> Mr. Eliot's Letters published by Whitfield, 1651. p. 21.

The HISTORY of [An. 164 Life in his Hand; for such was the Malie of several of the Indian Princes and Priests gainst him, that they often plotted his Destru cion, and would certainly have put him to the most tormenting Death, if they had not bee awed by the Power and Strength of the Engli Colonies; nor is this to be wondred at, for it be very difficult to civilize barbarous Nation 'tis much more so to make them Christians: A Men have naturally a Veneration for the Rel gion of their Ancestors, and the Prejudices Education are insuperable without the extraord nary Grace of God. Belides, the Indian Prince and Priests look'd upon Mr. Eliot as a Man the defigned to overturn their civil as well as religion Poilcy; the Prince was jealous of his Prerogative and the Priest of his Gain, and so both join'd to gether to hinder the Progress of the new Do The Monbegin Indians were fo jealous of the General Court's obliging them to pray to God, that Uncas their Sachem went to the Cour at Hartford to protest against it §. Cutsbamoquin another Sachem, came to the Indian Lecture, an openly protested against their building a Town telling the English, that all the Sachems in the Country were against it; he was so honest as to tell Mr. Eliot the Reason of it; for (says he) the Indians that pray to God do not pay me Tribut as formerly they did; which was in part true for whereas before the Sachem was absolute Ma fter of his Subjects, their Lives and Fortune being at his Disposal; they gave him now me more than they thought reasonable; but to wipe off the Reproach that Cut shamoquin had laid upon them, those few praying Indians who were prefent, told Mr. Eliot what they had done for their Sachem the two last Years, leaving him to judge whether

hether

lain.

orn i

unting

roke u

im a

o Roc

Rails

hree Po

Skin o

Days W hey fa

rould g

ut the

nmann ack up

meatest

Confide fier.

INNU

Eliot m imes th

nong t

rouble

hat if

but his

the V

try ;

Wor When I

King of

with Sc

ions, to

ban for

Bur

Eliot af

ed from

ple tha

5 Whitfield's Discovery of the present State of the Indians in New-England, 1651. page 38.

1.164

Malio

iests

Destru

to th

t bee

Engli

for

ation

s: A

e Rel

ices d

raord

Prince

n tha

igiou

tative

r'd to

Doc ous o

ay t

Cour

oquin

, an

OWD

a th

as to

) th

ibut

true

Ma

unes v no

wipd

pre-

heir

idge

ther

ns in

hether their Prince had any Reason to comlain. At one time they gave him 26 Bushels of forn; at another time 6 Bushels more; on two unting Days they killed him 15 Deers; they make up for him two Acres of Land; they made in a great House or Wigwam; they made Rod of Fence for him, with a Ditch and Rails about it; they paid a Debt for him of free Pound ten Shillings; one of them gave him Skin of a Beaver of two Pounds, belides many lays work in Planting Corn all together; yet by faid they would willingly do more, if he ould govern them justly by the Word of God. ht the Sachem swelling with Indignation at this mannerly Discourse of his Vassals, turn'd his ck upon the Company, and went away in the resteft Rage imaginable; the upon better Consideration, himself turned Christian not long

INNUMERABLE were the Affronts that Mr. list met with in his Missionary Work; somemes the Sachems would thrust him out from among them, telling him, he was impertinent to muble himself with them or their Religion, and hat if he came again, it should be at his Peril; ut his usual Reply was, "that he was about the Work of the great God, and therefore did not fear them, nor all the Sachems in the Country; that he was refolved to go on with his Work, and bid them touch him at their Peril." When he offered to preach the Gospel to Philip ling of the Wompanoags, Philip look'd upon him with Scorn, and taking hold of one of his Butlons, told him, He cared no more for bis Gospel ban for that Button.

Bur 'tis no Wonder that they treated Mr. Eliat after this rude Manner, when they banished from their Society all those of their own People that favoured Christianity, and when they

could

4

could do it with Safety, put them to Death; no thing but the formidable Power of the English hindred them from maffacring all the new Converts, which obliged some well disposed Person to conceal their Sentiments in Religion, and others to sly to the English for Protection.

THE Powarus likewise made Use of all the Inchantments to keep the People in Awe; the asked them, what they would do when they wer fick; for when the Indians are fick the Powaru are their Phylicians for Soul and Body; they ad minister Physick, and at the same Time addre their Deities for a Bleffing; they how and dance and use a great many Charms for the sick Man Recovery; and the People believe that by their familiar Converse with the World of Spirits, the can kill or cure, except in some particular Ca fes, wherein the Deity is exorable; they believe they can bewitch their Enemies, and, if they please, by an invisible Power put them to Death Even the new Converts were of this Mind, only they affirm'd the Christians God to be a Being of Superior Power to the God of the Powaws: When fome of the Powaws threatned Jaccomes a Christian Convert with his Life, telling him, that he knew they could destroy him with Witchcraft, and that they would do it, unless he return'd to his old Religion; he replyed, in the Face of a great Assembly of Indians, "That the' the God they worshipped had great Power, yet he was of subservient to him whom he had now chosen to ferve." Another Time when the Powaws were bragging in the midst of a great Assembly of Indians, that they could kill all the praying Indians, if they pleased; faccomes told them, "That if they brought all the Powaws in the "Country together, he would venture himself " in the midft of all their Charms and Witchcrafts, and by the Help of his God, tread upon

them burage riefts, ainft wed a nces, hen th

ents, fever affacts, we raying ounc'd and

But

erable
fear 16
farles-I
fus of the
fiver, a
fery Fa
fier the
fige H

ige H n the Veek-D us'd up any; a nd other Vomen

their orner control part

round oot-Brid lich, th

Manif

es them

them all." But the' fome of the Converts had burage enough to defy the Power of the Indian fielts, yet others were afraid to appear openly ainst them, and Mr. Eliot says, that he obved a remarkable Difference in their Countences, when the Powaws were prefent, and

en they were out of the Way.

164

Engli

Cor erfor

ind o

thei

the

wer

wan

y ad

ddre

lance Man

thei

the Ca

eliev they eath

only ng o V her

Chri

at he raft,

d to

of a

God

was

ofen

vaws

nbly

ying

iem,

the

nfelf tch-

pon

hem

But notwithstanding all these Discourageents, the Christian Religion • began to obtain several Parts of the Country, both in the affachuset and Plymouth Patent; the new Conus were distinguish'd by the aying Indians, who as foon as they had reunc'd their Old Religion, abandon'd their d and barbarous Way of Living. A confirible Body of them combined together in the ear 1651, and built a Town by the Side of wries-River, which they call'd Natick: It conis of three long Streets, two on this Side the wer, and one on that, with House-Lots to my Family; there is one large House built er the English Manner, the lower Room is a ge Hall, which serves for a Meeting-House. the Lord's Day, and a School-House on the leek-Days; there is a large Canopy of Matts a'd upon Poles for Mr. Eliot and his Commy; and other Sort of Canopies for themselves d other Hearers to fit under, the Men and omen being placed apart; the upper Room a kind of Wardrobe, where the Indians hang their Skins, and other Things of Value; in a orner of this Room Mr. Eliot has an Apartlent partition doff, with a Bed and Bedstead in There is likewise a handsome large Fort, of round Figure, palifado'd with Trees, and a ot-Bridge over the River, in Form of an arch, the Foundation of which is secured with

Manifestation of the further Progress of the Gospel in Newngland, 1052. p. 17.

254 The HISTORY of [An. 164] Stone, with several little Houses after the Engli Fashion.

ord

ther .

atechi

kricle

Duesti

ngth,

no a

alled .

ueftic

e Me

ith th

Natio

th of

aith it

wards bwn a

lhed t

ears of her Pro

w-Er

(26.) lingly

made

ed o

dred

partly

fome Paffa

rent

loweve

one o

Judgm

wa ha

As foon as they had fix'd their Settlemen they applied to Mr. Eliot for a Form of Ci Government, who advised them to that whi Tether proposed to Moses for the Israelites in Wilderness, Exed. zvili. 21. Accordingly, on fixth of August, about 100 of them met togethe and chose one Ruler of 100, two Rulers of and ten Rulers of 10; every private Man che who should be his Ruler of 10, the Rules standing in Order, and every Man going to Man he chose; after this they entred into the following Covenant: "We are the Sons Adam, we and our Pathers have a long Ti been lost in our Sins, but now the Mer of the Lord begins to find us out again therefore, the Grace of Christ helping us, do give ourselves and our Children to Go to be his People; he shall rule us in all to Affairs, not only in our Religion, and Affa of the Church, but also in all our Works Affairs in this World; God shall rule over the Lord is our Judge, the Lord is our La giver, the Lord is our King, he will fave u the Wisdom which God has taught us in Book, that shall guide us, and direct us the Way. O Jehovah, teach us Wisdom and out thy Wisdom in thy Scriptures; " the Grace of Christ help us, because Christ the Wisdom of God; send thy Spirit into 0 Hearts, and let it teach us; Lord, take us be thy People, and let us take thee to be o God."

THE New-Converts continued feveral Year under the Character of Catecumens, all which Time they were visited by Mr. Eliot, or for other

<sup>†</sup> Manifestation of the further Progress of the Gospel in No. England, page 9, 10.

## NEW-ENGLAND. 255

1.164

Engli

leme

of Ci

c whi

s in t

on to

of a

n cho

Rel

to t

nto to Sons Tit

Mer again us,

o Go

all o

Affa

ks a

ver i

ve u

in I

us

om

es;

hrift

nto of

us

be of

Yea

which

fon

oth

n Ne

ther Divine of the Country every Week, who arechiz'd their Children, preach'd upon fome knicle of the Christian Faith, and answered such Duestions as the Indians proposed to them; at high, upon their repeated Defires to be formed no a Church, a Day was appointed, which they alled Natootomakteackefuk, or the Day of alking bestions, when the Ministers, and several of Members of the adjacent Churches, affifted in the best Interpreters that could be had, met Natick, to judge of their Fitness for Christian ommunion. This great Assembly was on the th of October, 1652, when about 14 or 15 Inhith in Christ, and of the Efficacy of the Word. wards their Conversions; Mr. Eliot writ them own as they spoke them, and afterwards pubhed them to the World under the Title of ars of Repentance, or, a Narrative of the farr Progress of the Gospel among the Indians in w. England. He tells the World in his Book. 26.) "That he had not knowingly, or willingly, made their Confessions better than they made themselves, but he is verily persuaded on good Grounds, that he has rather rendred them weaker than they deliver'd them, partly by misting some Words of Weight in some Sentences, partly by abbreviating some Passages, and partly, by reason of the diffetent Idioms of their Language and ours." owever, I will present the Reader with a Copy one of their Confessions, by which he may form, Judgment of the reft.

they towned for I law took made me, and got

Managar and was I was properly the

see of Rependent London, 16cg. p. ac. C.

The that the canif and one forest the line of the line

.040.

" the

US

Sin

aga

of .

WIL

fell.

Goo

will

tho

alha teac

but

Aga

lieve

Wo

Sins

that

done

left.

for me

trou

be d

reper thou and

men

met

But

and Sins

I ar

Chri

may Vol

The CONFESSION of PONAMPAN on the Fast-Day, before the Great Assembly.

T) EFORE I prayed to God, I committee " all Manner of Sins, and when I hear in the Catechilm that God made me, I didn " believe it, because I knew I sprang from m "Father and Mother; and therefore I despite " the Word, and therefore again I did act Sins, and I did love them. Then God w merciful to me to let me hear that Word that all shall pray from the rising to the setting Sun; and then I considered whether I should pray, but I found not in my Heart that a " should pray; but then I consider d of pray ing, and what would become of me if did not pray, and what would become of m if I did pray; but I thought if I did pray, the Sachems would be angry; because they did no fay, pray to God; and therefore I did not y pray, but confidering of that Word, that a shall pray I was troubled, and I found in m Heart, that I would pray to God, and y I feared that others would laugh at me and therefore I did not yet pray. After wards God was yet merciful to me, and heard that God made the World and the fir Man, and I thought it was true, and therefore I would pray to God, because he hath made all; and yet when I did pray I thought did not pray aright, because I prayed for the Sake of Man, and I thought this was a gre " Sin; but then I wondered at God's free Me " cy to me, for I faw God made me, and give me all Mercies, and then I was troubled, an faw that many were my Sins, and that I d not yet believe; then I prayed; yet my Hea

Tears of Repentance, London, 1653. p. 23.

164 " finned, for I prayed only with my Mouth; and " then I repented of my Sins, and then a little "I considered, and remembred God's Love to ably. us; but I was a Sinner, and many were my Sins, and a little I repented of them, and yet mitte again I finned, and quickly was my Heart full hear of Sin , and then again was my Heart angry lid n with myfelf, and often I loft all this again, and m m fell into Sin. Then I heard that Word, that efpife God fent Moses into Egypt, and promised, I ict a d w will be thee: That Promise I consider'd; but I Wor thought that in vain I did feek, and I was alham'd that I did so: And I pray'd, O God fettin teach me truly to pray, not only before Man, Choul but before God; and pardon all my Sins. at a Again, I heard that Word that Christ taught pray if thro' every Town and Village, Repent, and believe, and be faved; and a little I believ'd this of m Word, and I lov'd it, and then I law all my 7, th Sins, and pray'd for Pardon. Again, I heard id no that Word, He that casteth off God, bim will God ot y at a cost off; and I found in my Heart that I had done this, and I fear'd because of this my Sin, n m left God should cast me off, and that I should d\_y for ever perish in Hell, because God hath cast me me off, I having cast off God. After troubled about Hell, and what shall I do if I and be damn'd! Then I heard that Word, If ye e fir repent and believe, God pardons all Sins: Then I refor thought, Oh that I had this I'I defired to repent maq and believe, and I begg'd of God, Oh give ght me Repentance and Faith! freely do it for or th gre met and I saw God was merciful to do it. But I did not attend the Lord only fometimes, and I now confess that I am asham'd of my

Me give i, an Id Hea

inned

may do it for me only ag blue, on as not IT

Sins, my Heart is broken and melteth in me,

I am angry at myfelf; I defire Rardon in

Christ, I betrust my Soul with Christ, that he

Then I was

could neither write nor read, that these Indians could neither write nor read, that they pronounced these Consessions before a large Assembly of English, and were often interrupted by the Writers; which is a sufficient Apology for their Want of Method and Expression. The Ministers communicated these Consessions to their several Churches, who approved of them; but yet were not very forward to encourage their Approach to the Table of the Lord; till surther Trial. However, at last they were incorporated into a Church, after the Manner of New England, giving themselves first to the Lord, and then to one another, in an holy Covenant, promising to walk together in all the Ordinances and Institutions of the Gospel; and Mr. Elion being commissioned by his Church at Roxbury, first baptized, and then administred the Lord's Supper to them. Thus was the first Indian Church formed about the Year of our Lord 1660.

BUT Mr. Elior's Care of the new Converts was therefore took Monequessun, an ingenious Indian into his House; and having taught him to read and write, made him Schoolmaster at Natick He likewise translated into the Indian Language Primers, Catechifms, the Practice of Piety, Baxter Call to the Unconverted, several of Mr. Shepherd Composures, and at length the Bible tifelf, which was printed the first Time at Cambridge, in the Year 1664; and, a little after Mr. Eliot's Death a fecond time, with the Corrections of Mr. Col ion, Minister of Plymouth. Some of the Indians who had a Genius for Learning, were admitted into the College, and had a liberal Education bo Howed upon them, whereby their Congregation were quickly furnish'd with Ministers of their In the mean time, Mr. Eliot visited then as often as he could on the Week Days, and en courage

• Elio

46.

cour

W

Lore

Pray 1658

one o

boo.

The :

aid es

加口河

Vben

need But go Me ibe

to beat

"I t

T.B

be in rien

fick

need

Soul

"inels

have

Caus

to G

have

Paffio

Day,

is the

Bodie

great

Word of Exhoration to their Brethren on the Lord's Day. I have feen an Abstract of fix of their Exhorations on the Day of Easting and Prayer, for excessive Rains, November the 15th, 1658. I'll gratify the Reader's Coriofity with one or two of them?

46.

14715

oro-

em-

by

for

The

heir

but

Ap-

ther

and, n to

ng to

titu-

com-

iapti-

er to

s was

, he

read

atick

guag

exter

berd

which

in the

)eath

r. Col

dians

mitte

on be

thei

1 then

ind en

The EXHORTATION of WABAN, an Indian, from Matth. ix. 12, 13.

When Jesus beard that, he said, They that he subole need not a Physician, but they that are sick.

But so ye and learn what that meanath, I will have Mercy and not Sacrifice; for I came not to sail the Righteous, but Sinners to Repentance.

"I AM a poor weak Man, and know but little,
"and therefore I shall say but little.
"Treas Words are a Similarde, that as some

"THESE Words are a Similitude, that as some "be fick and some well, and we fee in Experience, that when we be fick we need a Physician, and go to him, and make use of his Phylick; but they that be well do not to, they need it not, and care not for it. So it is with Soul Stakness; and we are all fick of that Sick-"nels in our Souls, but we know it not. We have many at this Time fick in Body, for which Cause we do fast and pray this Day, and cry to God; but more and lick in their Souls. We have a great many Difeases and Sicknesses in our Souls, as Idleness, Neglect of the Sabbath, Paffion, &c. Therefore what should we do this Day, but go to Christ the Physician, for Christ is the Phylician of Souls: He healed Men's Bodies, but he can heal Souls also: He is a great Physician, cherefore let all Sinners go to him; therefore this Day know what need we " have

Bliot's Letter to the Corporat. London, 1559, p. 8.

OTHE HIST ORY of PANSI646. 260 w have of Christ, and let us go to Christ to heal se us of our Sins, and he can heal us both Soul se and Body. Again, What is that Lefton which co Christ would have us learn, that be came not to s call the Righteous, but Sinners to Repentance? ac What I doth not God love them that be righ " teous? Doth he not call them to him? Doth " not God love Righteousness? Is not God righteous ? Anfw. The Righteous here are " not meant those that are truly righteous, but " those that are Hypocrites, that seem righteous si and are nor; that think themselves righteons " but are not fo indeed Such God calleth not se neither doth he care for them : But fuch as fe their Sins, and are fick of Sin, them Chris " calleth to Repentance, and to believe in Christ " Therefore let us fee our Need of Christ to he all our Diferies of Soul and Body," MAT I " and therefore I hall fay but little. The EXHORTATION of NISHOKOU ni ofrom Genefit vitte 20, 21, doil od rionce, that when we be fick we need a And Noah built an Althonto Jehovah, and be took every clean Beaft, and of every clean Fowl, and

645

" P

Sac

· by

fice

" Lo

fice

10

ous

wh

ous.

our

" A

Wb

" beli

" Goo

little

" O

My

offer

told

me,

only

dear

me.

Such

not deare

with

we n

if we

right

beft,

"Go

when

" fice,

our '

offered burnt Offerings on the Altar, son at bean And the Lord finelt a fivert Savour; and the Lor

faid in bis Heart, " I will not again curse to Ground, Seed in Mail of the Town of the Boss , brings Caufe we do full and pear this Days and

A A RITTER I shall fay according to that little and in the state of th ... In that Noub facrificed, he shewed?himsel " thankful in that Noub worshipped he shewe himself godly; in that he offered clean Beafts he shewed that God is an holy God, and that " all that come to God must be pure and clean " Know that we must by Repentance purge our " felves, which is the Work we are to do the " Day The San State

<sup>\*</sup> Eliot's Letter to the Corporat. Lond. 1659, p. 10.

646.

heal

Soul

which

not to

once?

righ

Doth

God

e are

, but

teous.

teons

not.

as fet

Thrit

hrift

) heal

\*

DU'\*

od 4

DIT

ouk o

and

100

Lord

e th

Mil.

C .

little

ha

mfel

ewc

ealts

tha

lean

out

thi Day Day. Noab facrificed, and so worshipped:
This was the Manner of old Time: But what
Sacrifices have we now to offer? I shall answer
by that in Psalm iv. 5. Offer to God the Sacrifice of Righteousness, and put your Trust in the
Lord. These are the true spiritual Sacrifices
which God requires at our Hands, the Sacrifices of Righteousness: That is, we must look
to our Hearts and Ways, that they be righteous, and then we shall be acceptable to God
when we worship him: But if we be unrighteous, unboly, ungodly, we shall not be accepted,
our Sacrifices will be stark naught.

"AGAIN; We are to put our Trust in the Lord.
"Who else is there for us to trust in? We must
believe in the Word of God; if we doubt of
"God, or doubt of his Word; our Sacrifices are
"little worth; but if we trust stedsaftly in God,

our Sacrifices will be good.

"Once more, What Sacrifices must we offer? My Answer is, we must offer such as Abrabam offered; and what a Sacrifice was that, we are told Gen. xxii. 12. Now I know that thou fearest me, seeing thou hast not withheld thy Son, thy only Son from me, It feems he had but one dearly beloved Son, and he offered that Son to God; and so God said, I know thou fearest me. Behold a Sacrifice in Deed and Truth! Such an one must we offer, only God requires not us to offer our Sons, but our Sins, our dearest Sins. God calls us this Day to part with all our Sins, tho' never to beloved, and we must not withhold any of them from him; if we will not part with All, the Sacrifice is not right. Let us part with fuch Sins as we love best, and it will be a good Sacrifice.

"Gop smelt a sweet Savour in Noah's Sacrifice, and so will God receive our Sacrifices, when we worship him aright: But how did

\$ 3

The HISTORY of ANA 1646. W God manifest his Acceptance of Nab's Offera ing? it was by promiting to drown the World e no more, but give us fruitful Scalons. Go " has chaltized us of late, as if he would unterly drown us, and he has drowned, and spoiled and ruined a great deal of our Play, and threat "ens to kill our Cattle. Tis for this that we " fast and pray this Day; let us then offer a clean " and pure Sacrifice, as Noab did, to God will fmell a Savour of Reft, and he will withhold the Rain, and blefs us with fuch fruitfel Sea

THE other Exhortations are of a piece will thefe, and their Prayers were no less pious and devout. I want to a bus

fons as we are defiring of him."

Tis no Wonder after all this, that Mr. Elio was in high Effeen among the new Converts that they confulted him as their Oracle in all dif ficult Cases; that they loved him as their ver Lives, and woold run all Hazards to ferve him He really helerved well of them, for no Mai ever took such true Pains in the Missionary World as himfelf; his Name therefore will be mention'd with Honour, as long as there is a Christian Indian

WHILE Mr. Eliot was employed in converting the Indians within the furlidiction of the Maffathu Jess, Mr. Leverich was promoting the fame good Work in Plymouth Patent, and Mr. Maybew in Martha's Vineyard, Nantuket, and Elizabeth Hes. The Worthipful Mr. Maybew, Jen. having ob tained a Grant of thefe Iflands, placed his Son Mr. Thomas Maybew, a young Man of confidera ble Learning and Piety, with a few other English in Mariba's Vineyard, in the Year 1642. After some fine he accepted of the Peoples Invitation to be their Minuter; but not being eafy that his Labours were confined to that 'smaff Handful o Englis Land Lander to the C

English. juage, tructin The ras Off Years T come : ifraid English Hower

o the Maybe his H and fri cerning bove upon I

Gods c giev House the Cl TH

Mand. Hatre going fet up the Sa wor

" ing " Eng " was " whi

" was " me made Maybe

voure

NEW-ENGLAND. 263

1646,

Offer-

World

God

utterly

orled

fireat.

at we

clean

10 will

Hold

Sea

10 H

with

erts

l liif

ver

him

Mai

Vorl

on'd

Hing

good good

Ifles

ob

Son

lera

glif

fte

tion

hi

il o

glif

English on the Island, he learned the Indian Lanmage, that he might be in a Capacity of inbucking the Natives in the Christian Faith. The first Convert that he made to Christianity. was one Hiaccomes, a young Man of about thirty Years of Age. The English had visited him seveal Times at his Wigwam, and invited him to come and fee their Way of Living, but he was fraid of his Countrymen, who looked upon the English as Enemies to their Gods and Nation. However, at length his Curiofity brought him the Plantation on a Lord's-Day, when Mr. Maybero, taking Notice of him, invited him to his House, and entertained him in an obliging and friendly Manner, discoursing with him concerning the Excellency of the Christian Religion hove the Indian, which made fuch an Impression upon him, that in a little Time he renounced the Gods of his Country, came constantly to the Meerevery Lord's Day, and to Mr. Maybew's House in the Evening, to be further instructed in the Christian Faith, and and some loss of the control of the contr

THE Revolt of Hiaccomes alarmed the whole Mand, and brought upon him the Contempt and Hatred of all his Acquaintance. Once, as he was going into one of their Wigwams, all the Indians let up a great Laughter at him; and Pakoponeffo the Sachem, spoke to him after this Manner; 44 I " wonder that you, who are a young Man, hav-" ing a Wife and two Children, should love the " English and their Ways, and forfake the Po-" waws ; what would you do if you should be fick? " whither would you go for Help? I fay, if I " was in your Cafe, there should nothing draw "me from our Gods and Powaws." Hiaccomes made him no Reply, but continued to visit Mr. Maybew, who taught him to read, and endeavoured to fortify him against the Reproaches of MA Starting manager his

Mayhew's Letter to the Corporation, 1651, 2, 3, 4.

his Countrymen. In the Year 1645, there was a general Sickness all over the Mand, but Hine. comes and his Family happening to escape the Distemper, the neighbouring Indians began to think how it should come to pass, that he who had exposed himself to such Reproaches and Troubles. should receive more Bleffings than themselves. Upon this they began to conceive a good Opinion of the Christian Religion; and having confulted among themselves, they sent a Messenger to Hiaccomes, praying him to haften to Myones, because the Indians in those Parts were desirous to be acquainted with his Way of worthipping God. Hiaccomes went with the Messenger, and found To wanguatick the Sachem, Myoxeo his prime Minifter, and a great Company of Indians affembled together Towanquatick prayed Hiaccomes to tell him what he knew concerning the Englishmen God. After which Myoxeo asked him how many Gods the English worshipped & Hiaccomes replied one. Myoxeo told him he had thirty-feven Gods, and shall lithrow them all away (fays he) for one? Hiaccomes told him he had done so for above these two Years, and yet was preferved. Myoxeo told him it was true; and I (fays he) will throw away my old Gods, and put myfelf under the Protection of yours. Hiaccomes acquainted the Company further with the Sin of Adam, and reckoned up to them feveral Sins of their own. He told them likewife of the Sufferings of Christ the Son of God, to make Satisfaction for Sin, and left them in a very thoughtful and ferious Disposition.

Some Time after Towanquatick the Sachem fent for Mr. Mayhew, and spoke thus to him: "A long to Time ago we had wife Men, who in a grave

ff Manner taught the People Knowledge, but they are dead, and their Wildom is buried

ff with them, and now Men live a giddy Life in Ignorance till they are white-headed, and

ee tho

tho'

"Wi

fired, Mr. A

knowi

Tongu

Fortni

of the

lcoffee Towan

Some

among

orefen

Powas

old o Enem

there

Comp

Man t

of the

he sto

very 1

trusted

comes

hortin

God ;

two I

ing,

Faith T

ings,

Death

them would

Mano

it to

646.

Was

Hiac-

e Di-

hink

d ex-

bles.

elves,

inion

ulted

Hi-

cause

e ac-

Hi-

1 70

Aini-

abled

tell

mens

nany

lied,

iods.

one?

thefe

told

way

otec-

om-

oned

told Son

lett

ion. fent

long rave

but

ried

Life

and

tho

tho' ripe in Years, yet then they go without Wildom to their Graves." He therefore dehed, in his own and his Peoples Name, that Mr. Maybew would fet up a Meeting, and make known the Word of God to them in their own Tongue, which Mr. Maybew agreed to do once a Fortnight. This Meeting was the Toy of fome of the Indians, and the Derifion of others, who coffed at those that went to it; but Hiaccomes, Towanquatick, and others, were not ashamed. Some Time after the Indians fet up a Meeting mong themselves, to discourse about the New and Old Religion; and a great Number being present, they began to debate the Power of the Property or Priests to kill Men, many Stories being old of the great Hurt they had done to their Enemies. Then the Question was asked, Who is there that does not fear the Powaws? One of the Company stood up, and said, There is not any Man that is not afraid of the Powaws. The Eyes of the Company being then fixed upon Hiaccomes, he stood up and defied them all, faying, he was very fure that they could not kill him, because he musted in God, who was above them all. Hiaccomes went on, and told them of their Sins, exhorting them to repent, and turn to the living God; which had fuch an Effect, that ewentytwo Indians renounced their Idolatry at that Meeting, and defired to be instructed in the Christian Faith.

THE Powaws were enraged at these Proceedand threatned the Praying Indians with Death: But Hiarcomes and his Friends challenged them to do their worst, telling them that they would abide their Power in the Face of the whole However they did not think fit to put it to a publick Trial at that Time: But " Dr. " Mather tells us of a Sachem who , upon his " Conversion

Mather, Book VI. page 59.

2101

qui but pla that

mai

Chi

con

Tal

ful

him

the

for

If h

pete

falent

tion, ffect he ea

ere

lear 1

im b

eir E

ght i

raced

Day +

ick L

ted wi

mentic

"MR

milted

the M

great

was th

Power

abfolu

age to

M:

m, 165

Conversion to Christianity, declared, that have ing often employed his God, who appeared to him in the Form of a Snake, to kill, wound, and lame such whom he intended Mischief to; he employed the said Snake, to kill, and that

" failing, to wound Hiaccomes, but to no Purpose, And having seriously considered the Affertion

of the faid Hiaccomes, that none of the Powaws could hurt him, since his God, whom he fer-

wed, was the great God, to whom theirs was lub-

" fervient, he resolved to worship the true God; from which Time, during seyen Years, the

se Snake gave him great Disturbance, but that he never after his praying to Gott in Christ em-

" ployed that faid Snake in any thing, and about that Time it cealed to appear to him."

Mr. Maybew's Method of instructing the Indians, was the same with Mr. Eliot's, he cate chifed their Children, preached, prayed, and sung Psalms in the publick Meeting, and then answers their Questions. He conferred every Saturday with Hiaccomes, and surplified him with Material to preach to the Indians on the Lord's-Day, which Hiaccomes performed with great Seriousnels and Affection. Mr. Maybew pursued his Design of converting the Indians with unwearied Application for the Space of twelve or fourteen Years, laying hold of all Opportunities to invite and persuade them to the Faith of Jesus Christ, till at length intending a short Voyage to England, in the Year 1657, he set sail with Captain Garret in the Month of November; but neither the Ship not any of the Passengers were ever heard of any more

Ma Whitfield Minister of Guilford. New-England. gives this Mr. Maybew a very great Character. I was an Eye-witness (says he) of the great Pains he took, and seeing but a stender Aperanee of outward Accommodations, I enguired

onvertion

<sup>&</sup>quot; Whitheld's Collection of Letters in Pref. P. 2.

646. hav. ed to ound. f to: 1 that rpole rtion e ser. s fub-God: the eme In cate fung wer's urda erial which and gn o

ation lying fuade ength

Year the nore

Eng narac grea

Ap I en uirec

quired of him concerning his Maintenance but he was modelt, and would make no Complaints. However, I understood from others that things were very short with him, that many times he was forced to labour with his own Hands, having a Wife and three small Children to provide for, and not half fo much coming in yearly in a fettled Way, as a Day Labourer gets in the Country; yet he was chearful among these Streights, and none ever heard him complain: The Truth is, he would not leave the Work in which his Heart was engaged; for upon my Knowledge (fays Mr. Whitfield,) If he would, he might have had a more competent, and comfortable Maintenance." His falent lay in a fweet and affable way of Converation, by which he wrought himself into the effections of the Indians, and by that means had te easier Access to their Minds. His Labours ere attended with great Success, for in the Year, 1650, he tells us, that the Indian's flock'd to im by whole Families, defiring that they and heir Houses might serve the Lord; that there were ght Powards and 280 adult Indians that had embraced the Christian Faith, whereof go in one Day to that Mr. Maybern's Death was a pubick Lofs, and the Indian Converts were so affecled with it, that they could hardly hear his Name mention'd for a long time after without Tears.

MR. Maybero's Father 5, the no Minister, affilted his Son with his Advice and Counsel in the Missionary Work; and observing that one great Obstacle of the Conversion of the Indians was the Prince's Jealousy of an Eclipse of his Power, and that the Princes in these Islands, the absolute over their own Subjects, yet did Homage to a certain Potent Prince on the Continent.

Mayhew's Letter; p. 31. † Letter to Corporation, 1652. p. 3. § Mather, Book VI. p. 57.

paying him an Annual Tribute for his Affishance in their Wars; he took a proper Occasion to let them know, that by Order of his Master the King of England, he was to govern the English that should settle in those Islands; that his Master was in Power far above any of the Indian Monarchs, but that as he was Powerful, so he was a great Lover of Justice; and therefore would not in the least invade their Jurisdiction, but on the contrary affift them as need required.

Progress in the Island, he perspaced the Sachen to admit of the Counsel of Judicious Christians, and in Cases of more than ordinary Consequence of a Jury for Trial; he offered himself to assist the Prince on such Occasions, but never to intermeddle without his Consent: Thus within a few Years a civil Government was settled among them, Records were kept of all Acts passed in their Courts, by such who having searn'd to write were appointed to that Office; the Princes with their Nobles submitted themselves to the Kings of England, reserving to themselves, as subordinate Princes, the Right of governing their People according to the Laws of God and the King.

The R. R. were deveral other Ministers who deserve an honourable Mention, for their great Pains in the Missionary Work, as Mr. Eliot's Son, who had made himself Master of the Indian Language, and would have been a famous Evangelist if he had not died in the very beginning of his Usefulness: The Rev. Mr. Richard Bourne, who bestowed his Labours upon the Indians of Masterpaug in the County of Plymouth about 50 Miles from Boston; the Rev. Mr. Fitch and Mr. Pierson, who have been very successful among the Connecticus Indians, the they had to do with a Prince who declared the utmost Aversion to them and their Religion; and Mr. John Coston, Paston

of 4 Ma. C Preach Vilits I'm attend reral

der the then to ment Church Maybe

heir les mas 82 being co mere les which

Bu the Status T mong their M

ollowin n Bosto ridge in rew-Pi

Wort

Wort

on:

on:

figure to the control of the

India
Count

NEW-ENGLAND. 269

of a Church at Plymouth, and Son of the Rev. Mr. Cotton of Boston, who was an indefatigable Preacher, and attended Mr. Eliot in several of his

It Emplanas being warried wantbul ada or mili

646.

ance

o let

the

igli/b

Ma.

ndian

o he

ould

it on

ome

chen

ians

ence

affift

in.

in :

none

d in

Write

with

ing

inate

ople who

great

Son

Lan-

elist.

who

Ma-

Mr.

g the

hem

2(to

In the Year 1666, Mr. Eliat and Mr. Cotton. mended by the Honourable Governor, and feeral Magistrates and Ministers of Plymouth Coov, settled an Indian Church at Massippaus, uner the Pastoral Care of Mr. Bourne, who was hen ordained to that Office: From hence they sent to Martha's-Vineyard, and collected a thurch out of the Converts of the late Rev. Mr. Marbew Hiaccomes was chosen their Pastor, John whines Teacher , Josbua Mummeecheeps, and by Nanajo, ruling Elders, who were ordained to heir leveral Offices. Soon after another Church as gathered at Nantuket, John Gibs an Indian eing ordain'd their Pastor; besides which there ere several other Assemblies of Praying Indians shich were served by the English Ministers, and ontinued under the Character of Catecumens.

But that the Reader may form a true Idea of the State of Christianity among the Indians at that Time, and of the Progress of the Gospel among them for the next 20 Years, together with their Manner of Worship; I have transcrib'd the following Letter of Dr. Increase Mather, Minister in Roston, and Rector of the College of Cambridge in New-England, to Dr. John Leusden, Hewew-Professor in the University of Utreeht.

Worthy and much Honoured S.I.R.

OUR Letters were very grateful to me, by which I understand that You and others in your famous University of Utrecht defire to be inform'd concerning the converted Indians in American Take therefore a true Action of them in a few Words."

Cotton Mather, Book III. p. 194-

opo The HISTURY W TAM. 1646 State. Man Mr. John Elies, Patter of the Church and Rombury, about a Wile from Bollon in New England, being warmed with an Holy Zeal of dnan gua OWI and se converting the Americans, let himself to lear Pre the Indian Tengue, that he might more estimated and fuceofafully open to them the Myfleries of the Golpel's upon Account of which he has been 4 1 Indi difti (and not undefervedly) called the Apostle of the Pre " Michout very great Laboury translated th at P Toba whole Bible into the Indian Tongue. H Chu translated also several English Treatiles of practical Divinity, and Catechisms, into the in d Rilf Danguage. Above Twenty-lix Years ago to goag se gathered a Church of Converted Indians in ever Town called Natick, thefe Indians confelle Sacor their Sins with Tears, and professed their Faith in Christ, and afterwards they and the grep calle SA Children were baptized, and they were folent God " ly join'd together in a Church Covenant: Th ed C o gaid Wir Eliot was the first that administra who " the Lord's Supper to them. The Pallor of the who " Church now is an Indian, his Name is Danie Trea Belides this Church at Natick, among our h to th habitants in the Maffachufets Colony, there are The Four Indian Affemblies, where the Name of tuket the true God and Jefus Chrift is folemnt 20He called upon. These Assemblies have forme and who " rican Preachers, Mr. Elite formerly used to The " preach to them once every fortnight, but not long " he is weakned with Labours and old Age, being Ame Sin the 84th Wear of his Age, and Greached mou senot to the Undians ofther than wonce in two prefi " others in your famous I brive they or events accon ftor. THERE isianother Church, confifting only "Nof converted Indians, about fifty Miles from men. kinof " hence, in an Indian Town called Mashippang the first Pastor of that Church was an English Chu

4. Cotton Mariner, Best III. to 191.

1646

God

reh :

No

eal o

lear

eafil

ries o

bee of th

n, no

P th

H

es o

s in

feffe

the

the

lemi Th

fiftre

of th

attie

re an

ne o

moh

Am

ed t

t nov

bein

chet

two

10

only

fron

pang

nglish

guage, preached the Gospel to them in their own Tongue. This English Pastor is deady and instead of him that Church has an Indian Preacher.

"THERE are belides that five Affemblies of Indiana professing the Name of Christ, not far diftant from Mashippaug, which have Indian Preachers: Fobn Cotton, Paftor of the Church at Plymouth, Son of my venerable Father-in-Liaw John Cotton, formerly thefamous Teacher of the Church at Bofton, has made very great Progress in learning the Indian Tongue, and is very Rilfub in it wille preaches in their own Language to the last five mentioned Congregations every Weeks Moreover of the Inhabitants of Suconet in Plymouth Colony, there is a great Congregation of those who for Distinction sake are called Praying Indians, because they pray to God in Christe Not far from a Promontory called Cape Cod there are fix Affentblies of Heathern who are to be reckoned as Catecumens, amongst whom there are fix Indian Preachers. Samuel Treat, Paltor of a Church at Eastbam, preacheth to those Congregations in their own Language. There are likewise among the Islanders of Nantuket a Church with a Pastor, who was lately a Heathen, and Several Meatings of Caterumens, who are instructed by the converted Indiane. There is also another Island about seven. Leagues long called Martha's-Vineyard, where are two American Churches planted, which are more famous than the roll; over one of which there presides an atteient Indian as Pastor, called Hiaccomes Toba Hiaccomes Son of the Indian Paflor, also preacheth the Gospel to his Countrymen. In another Church in that place John Tokinofb, a converted Indian, teacheth. In these Churches ruling Elders of the Indians are join-

The HISTORY of [An 1646. ed to the Pastors: The Pastors were chosen by the People; and when they had fasted and prayed, Mr. Eliot and Mr. Cattor laid their Hands upon them, so that they were following ordained. All the Congregations of the converted Indians (both the Catecumens, and thole sin Church Order) every Lord's Day meet toge ther. The Pastor or Preacher always begin with Prayer, and without a Form, because from the Heart. When the Ruler of the Affembly has ended Prayer, the whole Congregation of Indians praise God with Singing: Some of then er are excellent Singers. After the Pfalm, he that preaches reads a Place of Scripture (one or more verses, as he will) and expounds it, gather Doctrines from it, proves them by Scriptur and Reasons, and infers Uses from them after the Manner of the English; of whom they have been taught ! Then another Prayer to God the Name of Christ, concludes the whole Ser Thus do they meet together twice ever Lord's Day They observe no Holy Days be the Lord's Day, except upon fome extraord sary Occasions, and then they foleranly fo apart whole Days either in giving Thanks, o Fasting and Praying with great Fervour white a Church weig at Lifter wir ShiM BEFORE the English came into these Coast thele barbarous Nations were altogether igno rant of the true God. Hence to is, that in the Prayers and Sermons they wie English Word and Terms . He that calls upon the most hol Name of God, fays Jebouah, or God, or Lent And also they have learned and borrows many other theological Phrases from us, In thort, there are fix Churches of baptize Indians in New-England, and sa Affemblies Catecumens, professing the Name of Christ. the Indians there are 24 who are Preachers 66 1

four the with more

Thir

that

who ther that Welts

can a

fe fo

you

them prefe

Cour

Bolton

Ju

1994

DR.

de lo

ere v

the ]

it in

their

n of

dat

urch

nal,

es, or

ying

ount

of

VOL

" the Word of God; and belides thele, there are four English Ministers who preach the Gospel in the Indian Tongue. I am now myfelf weary with writing, and I fear-left, if I should add more, I should also be tedious to you; yet one Thing I must add, which I had almost forgot. that there are many of the Indians Children. who have learned by Heart the Catechilin either of that famous Divine William Perkins, or that put forth by the Affembly of Divines at Westminster, and, in their own Mother Tongue. can answer to all the Questions in it.

Bur I must end! I salute the famous Professors in your University, to whom I defire you to communicate this Letter, as written to them also. Farewel, worthy Sir, the Lord preserve your Health for the Benefit of your Country, his Church, and of Learning.

in other Person that outling in Boston in New-Eng. Yours ever.

646.

n by

and

their

mnly

con

thol

toge

egin

from

mbl

on o

then

ie tha

mon

ather iptur

rafte

y hav

od i

e Set

ever LYS be

ráordi

NV R

key o

out (

BOX !

Coaft

igno

n the

Word

At hol

Lord

LLOMO

aces

aptize

blies

ift. 9

hers d 66 th July 12, 1687. Increase Mather.

Dr. Cotton Mather , the Son of Increase Mather\_ brought down the History of the Indians a te lower. He tells us, that in the Year 1605. tre were three thousand adult Indian Converts the Islands of Martha's-Vineyard and Nantuket; it in Nantuket there were five constant Assems, or Meetings, some of which had Preachers their own, and the rest were under the Direcof Mr. John Gardner, who writes in a Letdated May 17, 1694, that there were three urches among them, two of them Congregahal, and one Baptist; and five constant Assems, or Meetings; but that the whole Number of lying Indians, under his Inspection, did not ount to above five hundred. Within the Liberof Eastbam, there were five hundred and five Vor. I. The state of the The state of

Mather, Book VI. p. 53.

adult Christian Categomens, who had four distinct Assemblies, in four Villages, belonging to the Township, and were served by four Teachers of their own, who used to repair once a Week to Ma Treat the English Minister, to be further instructed in the Christian Doctrine. They had four Schools for the instructing their Youth in Reading and Writing, and six Justices of Peace for the Management of their civil Assairs; their Deportment, Converse, and Garb, was manly and lauds

ble, and they had great Defires of being baptize In the Villages of Maskippau, Santtuit, an Cotuit bordering on the Town of Sandwich, the were two hundred and fourteen Catecumens, wh all met in one Affembly, and were fometimes in structed by Simon Papmonit a Native, and atom Times by Mr. Rowland Cotton, Minister of San wich. Besides these, there were several small Affemblies in other Parts of the Country, which the neighbouring Ministers visited and instructe Mr. Thomas Tupper had a Congregation of 18 Indians, and Mr. John Cotton of Plymouth preach to 500 more; Mr. Thacker of Milton preached fome Indians at Punkenagy; Mr. Bondet, a Fran Minister, to the Nipmug Indians; Mr. Rawlon Mendbam, to the Indians in his Neighbourhood and Mr. Daniel Gookin to the Remains of the l dian Church at Natick, which was the first India Church in America. In the whole there we more than thirty Congregations of Indians in t Province of the Massachusets alone, and many mo than three thousand Converts, who worshipp the true God, through the Mediator Jesus Chri in those Assemblies; and the Numbers were ve confiderable in other Parts of the Country.

I HAVE now before me the Reverend Mr. I perience Maybew's Journal of his Visitation of the Pequet and Mobegin Indians, in the Year 1713 at 1714; by which it appears, that the Remains

ho

Effc

Wil

to co

turn

Coun

thole

the G

m an

furth

others

Worf hve

d w

that N

Pequot.

e Ct

People

He the

om h

NE 3

e hon

ropaga

em an

ot pre

ve of

w desi hristian

c of t

clieve th

ut as fe

Vorship,

eir Way

n to alte

1646

iftine

to th

iers o to Mi

Arua

d for

eadin

ne M

Depor

laud

Dize

t, an

, the

s. wh

ries i

et oth

f San

fmall

which

ructo

of 18

reach

ched

Frei

ew fon

rhood

the I

Indi

e we

s in t

TY MO

hipp

Chri

ere vo

Mr. E

of t

713 al

nains

tho

those Nations are under strong Prejudices against the Christian Religion. Mr. Maybew obtained a Meeting of Indians, and preached them a very. excellent Sermon by an Interpreter, but with little Effect. They thanked Mr. Maybew for his good Will to them, but told him, they must take Time p confider of the Things proposed. In his Remrn home, he passed through the Narrhaganset Country, and fent for Ninnicraft the Sachem of those Parts. Mr. Maybew defired leave to preach the Gospel to his People, but Ninnierast bid him go and make the English good first. He objected further, that some of the English kept Saturday, others Sunday, and others no Day at all, for the Worship of God: So that if his People should ave a mind to turn Christians, they could not all what Religion to be of. He added further, hat Mr. Maybew might try his Skill first with the Pequots and Mobegins, and if they submitted to Christian Religion, it may be he and his hople might follow, but they would not be first. he then chid Mr. Maybew for hindering him om his Buliness, and in an angry Humour went May that had been been been the district and apply

NEXT Year Mr. Maybew, at the Request of chonourable Commissioners of the Society for ropagating the Gospel on the Borders, made tem another Visit, and obtained a Meeting of he Mobegs, at which, tho' the Sachem himself was ot present, yet there was his Uncle and four or we of his Council. After Sermon Mr. Mayw defired to hear their Objections against the briftian Religion, if they had any: Upon which of them stood up, and said, That they did clieve the Being of a God, and did worship him; was several Nations had their distinct Ways of forship, so they had theirs, and they thought eir Way good, and therefore there was no Reas

n to alter it.

## THE H IST ORY of An. 1646.

ANOTHER faid, That the Difficulties of the Christian Religion were such as the Indians could not endure; their Rathers had made forme Tria in Mr. Fitche's Time, and had found Religion to hard for them, and therefore quitted it; and the thought themselves no better able to bear th Hardships of it than their Fathers. Manufactor

OTHERS of them faid, That fome Indian the had professed the Christian Religion, had for after forfaken the English; and joined with the Enemies, which certainly they would not have done, if the Christian Religion had been to a cellent a Thing as was pretended.

OTHERS faid, They could not fee that Me were ever the better for being Christians, for the English that were Christians would cheat the h dians of their Land, and wrong them other Ways and that their Knowledge of Books did but ma them the more cunting to cheat others, and fod mover Hurt than Good mano new medical a

As to their having their Children taught read, which Mr. Maybew offered, they faid, The could not conclude upon it then, many of the Men that had Families of Children not beh there to answer for themselves, the X man I

And as to their hearing Ministers preach, for of them faid, That they had heard Mr. Maybe and were not fentible it had done them any Har and therefore it was likely they should not refu to hear again, if any came to speak to the Mr. Maybete spent about two Hours in answerin their Objections, with which some of them see ed very well fatisfied in visitati . man destination

NEXT Week about 50 Indians gave him Meeting at the Meeting-house in Stoniton with of of their Powows along with them. The old Me did every thing he could to hinder the India from embracing the Christian Faith. He to

SENTOWA

THE g, reig or, fays

76.

Mr.

mak them

drun

te) p

nt e

OWII .

here

which

non i min a Bo

n the

and a

lave a

o hear

hem

Bur

ian Pi

f goo

Figure

pplyes

ovino

the Edu

impra

LOVEYD

ludian (

mmod

ir fachi

the G

five e

Degrees

iospel t

he Englis

blow an

646.

of th

could

Tria

on to

I the

r th

tix od

is the

for

the

hav

fo e

ditto

or th

he h

Vays

ma

fo di

zht

The

of di

bein

fon

ayber

refu

then

VETI

feen

ficul

him

th of

a Ma

India

e to

M

Me Maybew, That if the Indians prefent should make him any Promites, they could not keep hem; for as foon as he was gone they would be drink, and be as bad as ever. The English (faid e) pretend to teach us Indians to be Christians; but if they will teach any, let them first seach their own Servants. As for myfelf, (faid he) I believe here is a God, and I pray to him in my Way, which is sufficient: If I should change my Reliion in my old Age, all the young People would min at ine wand hate me. The war in the many

Bu T though Mr. Maybew could not work upthe old Priest, yet all the People, except Skutub the Sachem, declared themselves willing to ave a School for their Children, and promised bear fuch Preachers as foould be sens to instruct reconn of the Progress of the Golpel acmed

But to return to the Converts. The few Inim Pleachers that remain among them, are Men figood Capacities, and would make as good a figure in the Pulpic as the English, if they would pply themselves to Learning but Time has winced the New England Government that he Education of Indian Nouth for the Ministry impracticable, because of their Slothfulness and love of firing Liquors pufor which Reason the dian Callege has long fince been demolified, Acmondations being delerved in Stoughton-Hall, fuch Indian Youth as defire to be admitted inthe College, but there wever has been above four five educated there, and but one that make his Degrees in So that the Fatigue of preaching the opel to the Indians, lies for the most Part on English Ministers of Boo and I stody and

THE fame Vices of Idleness and hard Drinkg reign too much among the common People: or, fays Dr. Mather, if they had a Disposition to blow an honest Employment, they might thrive

78: The HISTON Y of [An. 1646.

as well as the English, whereas now they are poor, mean, ragged, contemptible, and instead of buting able to support a Ministry amongst thems selves, are forced entirely to rely on the English. They observe pretty well, indeed, one part of the Fourth Commandment, To keep boly the Sabbath. Day; but neglect the other, Six Days shall their labour. And as for Surong Liquors, they are so fond of them, as to sell their Lands and every Thing else to purchase them; which ymade the Government of New-England pass two Lawring their Rayour, one to prohibit the selling them Strong Liquors, the other to forbid the purchasing of their liquors, the other to forbid the purchasing of their liquors, and shall make the Allowance of the General Courts.

The Reader chas nove shad before him a fair Account of the Progress of the Gospel amon the indian in New England, which in any judg ment is very extraordinary, confidening the fe Hands that were employed in the Work, land the immented thirge that was necessary to bring it to Berfection . It had been impossible indeed to have carried in on thus far hiff the Parliament of Englan had mod pulfed an Action the Year 2649,0 for en couraging the propagating the Gospel among the Indians and New England ; and for the Advance ment befilias Work derocited a Corporation pico filling of go Preficient, al Treasurer, and fourtee Allfants prealed by the Name of the Presiden and Sandy for the Propagation of the Goffel is New Englantizatinpowering them to receive duch Sun of Mondysons from Firme to Time thould be co dected Softmaifed abyother liberal Contribution of such whose Hearts God should findline to forgle rious Working It was enacted furthers Thatith :Commissioners for the united Colonies of New England for Ithe Time being, by themselves, o frich as they thould appoint and ould chave Powe

the fai

nd I brough being, dities,

faid Co Receip

by the

aid C

BY

Collect

which

the So

ween

fift P

and th

opon 1

their C

field. a

Army, was, p

tending

of reco

Society

done in

follicit

obtain

ur and

at that

the 7th Reign

that th

dom o

gation adjaces

the fo

zens.

INT

and Authority to dispose of the said Monies brought in and paid to the Treasurer for the Time being, or any other Monies, Goods, or Commodities, acquired and delivered by the Care of the hid Corporation at any Time; whose Receipt or Receipts of fuch Person or Persons, so authorized by them, should be a sufficient Discharge to the

hid Corporation and Treasurer.

546.

oor

be

em.

tif

the bath-

thou

re fo very

hem

ffing

Geo vid

fan

tidg-

helic it to

bay

elan

t en

y th

ance

COR

rtee

fiden New

Sun

col

m oc

iglo

tith New

5, 0 owe

an

By the Authority of this Act of Parliament, a Collection was made in all the Parishes in England. which produced fuch a Sum of Money, as enabled the Society to purchase an Estate in Land of beween five and fix hundred Pounds a Year. fift Prefident of this Corporation was Judge Steele, and the first Treasurer Mr. Henry Alburst; but upon the Restoration of King Charles the Second. heir Charter became void, and Colonel Beddingfeld, a Roman Catholick Officer in the King's Army, of whom a confiderable Part of the Land was purchased, seized it for his own Use, pretending he had fold it under the Value, in hopes of recovering it upon the King's Return. ociety met to confider what was proper to be done in this Case, and agreed in the first Place to follicit the King for a new Charter, which they obtained by the Interest of the Reverend Mr. Baxur and Mr. Alburst with the Lord Chancellor Hide. a that Time. The Charter bears Date February the 7th, in the Fourteenth Year of his Majesty's Reign, and declares, constitutes, and ordains. that there be for ever hereafter, within the Kingdom of England, A Society or Company for Propagation of the Gospel in New-England, and the Parts adjacent, in America; and accordingly appoints the following Noblemen, Gentlemen, and Citizens, to be the first Members and Persons whereof the faid Company should subsist, (viz.)

Edward,

The HISTORY of [Ana646. 280 Edward, Earl of Claren James Hayes don, Lord Chancellor Lawrence Brinfley, of England, John Arred, Thomas, Earl of South- John Docket. ampton, Lord High-Robert Boyle, Elge Treasurer John, Lord Reberts, Lord Sir William Bateman,
Privy-Seal, Sir Anthony B. George, Duke of Albe- Sir Interpolitus Biddolph, Sir Lawrence Bromfield, Tempest Milner fames, Duke of Ormond, Edward, Earl of Man- William Love, Alderm. chester, Lord Cham-William Peak, Sol Lond. berlain of the House- Thomas Foley, Elq. hold, Thomas Cox, Arthur, Earl of Anglesey, John Micklethwait, M.D. William, Viscount Say Edmund Trench, and Seal. Charles Doyley, Francis Worner, Alder- Tho. Staynes, man of London, John Jurin, Erafmus Smith, Esq: William Antrobus, Henry Alburit, John Bathurft. Richard Hutchinson, Thomas Gillibrand, John Benbowe, fosbua Woolnough, George Clarke, Barnabas Mears Thomas Speed, Edward Boscowen, and Harman Sheaf, Martin Noel.

TH

aw.

Lands

hem

y pro

our daring

not fo

Land.

ind th

t was

ignify intorec

med I

gned.

ble M

World

mput

ford I

han 32

me of

and 6

New.

hey ma

Milliona reach

es are

Money :

nd furr

ners, F

ion Lan

ometim

es are

FOR

ork,

The Members of this Society are not to exceed Forty-five; these and their Successors to be hereafter chosen by the Society, are constituted for ever One Body corporate in Deed and Name, and are to have Continuance for ever, with several Powers and Privileges as usual in such Cases: A Power is likewise given them to appoint Commissioners residing in New-England to transact all Affairs relating to the said Work in those Parts. And by the said Letters Patents Robert Boyle, Esquare was appointed the first Governour of the said Company.

546,

box

tions

beid: Alaka

Link

Sac V

History

4

Hr.

IM.

and.

At.

A.D.

1,000

TYN

250

ba-a

a M

1902

mil.

and

to.

ted

ne.

ye-

# : m-

all

ts.

íq;

aid

HE

THE Corporation being thus established by law, refolved to attempt the Ruceyery of their lands; Beddingfield being favoured by the At-orney General, and some other great Men, put hem to a great deal of Charge and Trouble by prolonging the Suit, but at last it was deemined in the Court of Chancery, in Faour of the Corporation, the Chancellor de-daring it as his Opinion, that Beddingfield had not fo much as the Shadow of a Title to the land, having fold it for a valuable Confideration. and that if there was a Forfeiture in the Cafe, was into the Hands of the King, who had ignify d his Royal Pleasure, that it should be mored to the Corporation, and applied to those med Purposes for which it was originally degred. Mr. Baxter has committed a confiderhe Mistake in the Account he has given the World of Beddingfield's Estate, for, whereas he imputes it at 7 or 800 l. per Amum, I am find from the best Hands, that it was no more in 322 L per Ann. and that the whole Reveof the Corporation never exceeded between and 6001. per Ann. Their Powers are limited New-England and the adjacent Borders; here bey maintain at present about twelve or fixteen Ulfionaries, part English, and part Indian, to much the Gospel to the Nations, whose Salaloney: They creek Schools in proper Places. of furnish the Children with Catechisms, Prihers, Pfalters, Books of Devotion in the Inan Language, and with Pens, Ink, Paper, and metimes with Cloaths. Some of the Millionaes are able to preach in the Indian Language, the rest do it by an Interpreter. For the better carrying on of this good ork, the Society have chosen Commissioners refiding

<sup>\*</sup> Baxter's Life, Fol. p. 290.

reliding in New-England to meet from time to time to make Report of the State of the India Affairs, and to diffribute their Charity to the best Advantage: The Names of the present Commillioners in New England are; state and more Thomas Cartesian arts

Samuel Shute, Efq: Governour of New-England. Increase Mather, D. D. John Foster, Esq; John Higgonson, Esq; Edward Bromfield, Esq. Eliakin Hutchinfon, Esq. Penn Townsend, Esq; Simeon Stoddard, Efg. Samuel Sewal, Esq: Cotton Mather, D.D.

The Rev Mr. Nebemia Walter. Mr. Daniel Oliver, Mr. Thomas Fitch. Jonathan Belcher, Esq; Adam Wintbrop, Elg; Thomas Hutchinson, Esq William Dummer, Elg; Deputy Governour.

\$646

Mr. A

Richar

Philip.

k. I

Mr. T

Mr. Fa

Mr. F N. 1

medis

nis, c

BU

es no ing cl

Boft

Purpoi

brder

allet,

Town,

The I

ad the kewif

mich

TH.

and car

Endeav tions; a

Christia

active fo

land be the Suc

this go

that I

Good h

to muc

tend fu

that has

TH

may po 0

Upon the Decease of Robert Boyle, Esq. Rober Thompson, Eigs was elected Governour in h Room; and after his Decease, Sir William Albur Knight and Alderman of the City of Lond who is the prefent Governour, and with him a join'd the following worthy Gentlemen and C tizens, who make up the present Society for pro pagating the Gospel in New-England, and the Parts adjacent. with moon making to

Joseph Thompson, Esq. | John Lane Esq. Treasurer, Sir Thomas Abney. Mr. Robert Alburst. Mr. John Gunston, Deputy-Treasurer, Mr. Edward Richier. Mr. Samuel Read, Sen. Barl of Stamford, Sir John Scott, Sir Daniel Wray, Daniel Dolings, Esq; William Thompson, Efq;

Sir Jufeus Beck, Bar. Mr. John Bridges, Mr. John Morton, Mr. Robert Atwood, Robert Clarke, Elq; Mr. James Hulbert, Richard Chifwell, Elq; Mr. Thomas Gering, Sir Peter King, Lo Chief Justice of t Common Pleas. Mr. Thomas Knight,

646. e to

ndia

the

Com

ma

在到

end,

mial

a io

Sei.

iq;

g: Eg

Iq;

ur.

**Cober** 

ı, bi

ndon

m ar

1 C

r pro

l th

r. 1903

1300

981

Elq;

, Lo

ft

M

Mr. Anthur Martin, Sir Henry Afhurft, Bart Richard Minfball, Elq. Mr. Jofeph Thompson, Jun. Philip Papillon, Elq; Mr. Samuel Read, Jun. Mr. Henry Palmer, Mr. Jeremiah Murden, Mr. Thomas Styles, Mr. Samuel Sheafe, W. Mr. James Townsend, Mr. Thomas Carpenter, Mr. John Jacksons Mr. John Mitchela stilled

N. B. The Order of Names in this Catalogue is according to the Order of their Election p sinto the Society. 150 line allos VI wat a ratte

Bu T the Expence of converting the Indians not lain entirely on the Society for propagaing the Gospel in those Parts, for the Churches Rofton have fometimes made Collections for this Purpole; I have an Account before me of the ms collected for propagating the Gospel on the briders, in the Year 1718. The Old Church, fo iled, because itis the Mother Church of the fown, collected: 160 l. New-England Money: The North Church go l. the South Church 1161. d the Church in Brattle-Street 1171. They have kewife a Fund of 800 or 1000 t. the Produce of hich ferves to promote the fame good Defign."

THE Government and Clergy of New-Engan never be too much commended for their Endeavours to civilize for many barbarous Naions; and abring them over to the Profession of Christianity; nor will the Gentlemen of the Sodety for propagating the Gospel in New-Engand be displeased to observe in this Narrative the Success of their generous Encouragement of this good Defign: I confels for my own part, hat I am for far from wondering that no more Good has been done, that I am furprized to find 10 much, confidering the Difficulties which at tend fuch an Undertaking, and the few Hands that have been employ'd in it.

THE Milhonaries of the Church of Rome may possible have gained more Proselytes, but then it wight to be considered that they have employed mote blands, and have made use of fuch the thorist for the Convention of the Indians, as dis New England Ministers could made approve of in Maryland a great Crew of Indians submitted to be baptized by the Missonwise for the sake of tome part Shirms, which were proposed them of that Committee the Shirms, which were proposed them ones, or knowing how to that them whitn foul, icams after a few Weeks and demanded new ones, or else they would renounce their Baptisms. The barbarous and creek Methods of making Convents, which the Spanish spract is don the Southern Convents, which the Spanish spract is don the Southern Convents of America, are known to all the World, whereby in the Spanish fifty. Years they must der'd as many Millions of Indians; and gave them such a Disguit against the Christian Religion, as made them declare they had rather go to Hell with their Aposttors, than to the faine Heaven with the Spanishes?

But a after all, what form of Converts theirs are the Bender may judge from the following Question and Arthurs extracted out of a Capabigm of one of the Jajous, employed by the Francisco Missionary among the Western Indians of his vertical in the Inquoise Language, and is said to contain the Print cuples of Religions which the Heather's lare to be instructed in: There is one Chapter about Heaven, and another about Hell; the Chapter about Heaven contains these Questions and Inspects.

the Success of their generous Encouragement of this good It newsH in show lines adt is wolf wolf of the

meats nor Gloathaudtlas but wishing and we have them but we shall see them of

Q Mre they emplay'd in Heaven & as flact boot

A. No. They do nothing, the Fields yield Corn Beans, Plimkins, and the like, without any Tillage.

0,01

Weath Q.

A.
they ar
one, b
Room

T H

Q. A. the Ce

A. Smoke it, the Q.

A. Vizard

ted up

but an Was ear

The to whi the M their

### DO NEW LENGILLIND.

Q What proof Trees are there? is out month

A Many's green, full and flouriffing. brilling. When they in Measure the fame Sun; the fame

Vind, the Jame Thunder that the bave bere !

A. No. The Sun ever thines, 'tis always fair Weather.

Q. But bow are their Fruits?

A. In this one Quality they exceed ours, that mey are never wasted: You have no sooner pluckt one, but you fee another prefently hanging in its Room.

THE Chapter about Hell has these Questions

among others.

646

loy

3.10 icted

ke b

n 00

Po came

S, 01

The

Cen

then orld

mut

them

Bord

Heli

aven

Inc

are;

derof

mary

she

Print

ton be

Hea

bout

'and

the !

this ;

rofor

have n oi

tend

rield

hout

Meth

Q.

Q. What fort of Soil is that of Hell?

A. A very wretched Soil; 'tis a fiery Pit in he Center of the Earth.

Q. Have they any Light in Hell?

A. No. 'Tis always dark, there is always Smoke there, their Eyes are always in Pain with i, they can see nothing but the Devils.

Q. What shaped Things are the Devils?

A. Very ill fhaped things; they go about with Vizards on, and they terrify Men.

Q. What do they eat in Hell?

A. They are always hungry, but the Damned ted upon hot Ashes and Serpents there.

Q. What Water have they to drink?

A. Horrid Water, nothing but melted Lead.

Q. Don't they die in Hell?

A. No. Yet they eat one another every Day, but anon God restores and renews the Man that was eaten, as a cropt Plant in a little Time shoots out again.

The Catechism is almost all of a piece with this; to which if we add the Idolatrous Worship which the Missionaries of the Church of Rome oblige their Proselytes to perform, their denying them

286 The HISTORY of An. 164 them the Scriptures, and making them pay blind Obedience to the Priests, on Pain of Dam nation, we may conclude that the poor People are very little the better for their Conversion. they were not altogether in as happy Circum stances before. C. Will were and river France d for this pac Chalicy they exceed ours, that the new party with the property of the party of the and the state of t

The I 是一种是一种的一种。 Ne Allabarusta fi cas shake as historia Parth and contest that of the so-Dec Joh and The second state of the second Of i then the for rela Olympia and the residence of the second Qua swey are always habory, but he Danned later the control of the con

pàr i

Th

Chu

Ana

Acc

T.

England Country

The trace the factor of the coupy Day.

I A H Subject the and tengers the Man four

Charles of which will be with the Company

the world of the state of

the I working but no led Leed,

andi.

As the drift for the little the Col The Cheering is direct alice a piece with this; their Pa doldw qidhad Vi anoraslob Lab Bba aw 31 a shiri of Fanu the Ship e M Conase of the Church of James on Ego the arrolery case to perform, their, denying lost at S

# ETERCORSITOR

1646

Dam

on, i

## CHAP. VII.

The Death and Character of the Reverend Mr. Thomas Hooker. The second Synod of New-England. Of their Platform of Church Discipline. The Separation of the Anabaptists, and their Sufferings. The Death and Character of the Reverend Mr. John Cotton, and of Thomas Dudley, and Edward Winslow, Esgrs. A large Account of the Sufferings of the Quakers. Of the several Laws that were made against them, and of the Persons who suffered, by the Execution of those Laws. An Apology for the Government of New-England with relation to their Severities against the Quakers.

With a confiderable Loss at 1647
Sea this Year; they had built a new Ship at Rhode-Island of about 150 Tuns, and freighted it for about 150 Tuns, and freighted it for Lingland with the most valuable Effects of the Country: Five or Six of the Principal Persons in the Colony with others of a lower Rank took their Passage in her: They set sail in the Month of January, but were never heard of afterwards; the Ship with all the Passengers and Lading being lost at Sea. The People were so disheartned by

this Accident, that they would have broke up the Plantation, if they could have agreed upon Place where they could have fettled more to their Minds.

THERE were great Commotions among the Indians about this Time, which must have proceeded to an open Rupture, if the English has not kept a watchful Eye over them: Sequassian an Indian Prince near Newbaven, had laid a Ploto assassing Colony, but it was discovered and prevented: The Narrbagansets and Mobegins committed such Insults upon the English at the same time, as obliged the Government to demand Satisfaction of their Segamores, which they show to give, rather than run the Hazard of a War.

THE next Year the Narrhayansets hired the Maqua's to affift them in profecuting their old Pique against Uncas, which would have drawn the English Power upon them; but when the faw the English were alarm'd at their Proceedings they delifted. The Year after there was a general Uproar among the Indians, on the Account of some Murders which they had committed up on certain Persons belonging to Newbaven and Long-Island; the English immediately demanded the Murderers, whom at first they refused to deliver up, but when they faw that Satisfaction must be given, or a War declared, they yielded to pacific Measures, and so the Storm blew over Thus the publick Peace was preserved till the English had perfected their Sectlements to far, as to put it out of the Power of all the Indian Nations to destroy them. The Missionaries who were appointed to convert the Indians to the Christian Faith contributed not a little to this Work, by dividing their Strength, and getting acquainted with all their Affairs; so that the the chib of ensweringer and the Savages Sava Engli T a m many

Mr. Hertf born educa which Unive in Lo was cl At Ch Succes lov'd the Bi formit in his ntbodo Conver

he com herefo Grampa the Ne hop's much t topear cute he

turbule

for Dr

Appear the Co went co Court.

preaching Rotterda and Ne

VOL,

647

p th

on :

thei

g th

pro

had

assan

Plo

eigh

pre

com

fam

mano

aholi

ar.

I the

r old

rawi

they

gene-

coun

d up

and

inded

d to

elded

OVEL.

l the

ir, at Indian

whe

the

this

etting

t the

vages

Savages could never form any Defign against the Enelish, but it was presently discover'd.

THE excessive Heats this Summer produc'd a malignant Fever, which carried off a great many People, and among the rest the Reverend Mr. Thomas Hooker, Pastor of the Church of Hertford in the Colony of Connecticut: He was born at Marfield in Leicestersbire 1586, and was educated in Emanuel College in Cambridge, of which he was Fellow. Upon his leaving the University, he preach'd occasionally for some time in London, till at length in the Year 1626, he was chosen Lecturer and Assistant to Mr. Mitchel at Chelmsford. Here he preach'd with great Success for several Years, and was so well belov'd by the neighbouring Clergy, that when the Bishop of London silenced him for Nonconformity. Forty-seven of them signed a Petition in his Favour, testifying, That Mr. Hooker was utbodes in Doctrine, bonest and sober in his Life and Conversation, of a peaceable Disposition, and no ways urbulent or factious; But it was of no Service, or Dr. Laud would never spare a Puritan, when is could lay his Hands upon him. Mr. Hooker herefore laid down his Ministry, and fet up a Grammar School at Little Baddo, a Village in the Neighbourhood of Chelmsford. But the Bihop's Refentments followed him thither, infomuch that the next Visitation, he was cited to opear before the High Commission Court, and becuse he was then fick, they obliged him to find sureties to be bound in a Bond of 501, for his Appearance; but as foon as he was well, with the Consent of his Sureries he absconded and ment to Holland, and they paid the 50 l. into Court. Mr. Hooker lived in Holland 2 or 3 Years, preaching fometimes at Delft, and fometimes at Rotterdam; till hearing that many of his Friends and Neighbours in Effex, weary'd out with the Vol. I. Oppressions

Oppressions of the spiritual Courts, were granfplanting themselves and their Families into America, he came over privately into England, and embark'd with them in the Year 1633. Upon his Arrival in New-England he feetled first at Newtown, where fome of his Acquaintance had made a Settlement the Year before, and became their Paftor; but the Place growing too frait for them, they removed, by the Encouragement of Mr. Hooker, in the Year 1635, to the Banks of the River Connecticut, and built the Town of Hertford, where he spent the Remainder of his Days. Mr. Hooker was a Son of Thunder in the Pulpit, and having a loud Voice, expressed himself with a great deal of Warmth and Ver hemence; his Ministry was adapted chiefly to the awakening of Sinners, and was remarkably bleffed that Way. His natural Constitution in clined him to Passion, but he was a very great Mafter of it. Upon the whole, in the Opinion of those that knew him best, he was a truly great and good Man, and deferves to be called the Father of the Colony of Connecticut. He pub lished several practical Treatifes, besides a Survey of Church Discipline, in his Life-time, and his Friends published several of his Sermon after his Death, which were well received in the Times. He was feized with an Epidemica Sickness about Midsummer, which thro the Hea of the Weather had proved mortal to many, an was at last fo to him; he bore it with invincible Resolution and Patience, and when Nature wa fpent, he closed his own Eyes, and laying hi Hand on his Forehead, gave a little Groan, an expired, July the 7th, 1647, in the Sixty-secon Year of his Age.

THE New England Churches had not yet a greed upon any uniform Scheme of Discipline There had been a Bill preferr'd to the General Court in the Year 1646, for the calling a Syno

o

for

Con

Pow

left a

m in

Pract

mnt.

drate

Provi

he Be

the D

mopo:

Advice to D

der/dia

meir I

MoE

botanis I vie ave de Ghi

arry car

ns we

nhich p

bet who

e) wou

o Min

urfday

t the i

finister i

THE

the Y

ey fat e

at fell i

Westmi

llowing

us'd ai

-7.

nf-

me-

and

oon

had

me

rait

ient inks

AWO

r of

nder Med

Ve-

y to

ably

ingreat

mion

great

pub

Sur

and

mon

mice

Hea

an

ncibl

e Wa

ng hi

i, an

yet a ipline

ener

Syno fo

for this Purpole; but the Deputies of the feveral Congregations not being willing to yield fuch a Powen into the Hands of the Civil Magistrate, left they should make use of it some time or other m impose upon the Churches an Uniformity of Bractice in things which Christ had left indiffeent; it was dropped for a time; But the Magihates infifting that it was certainly part of their Province to encourage Truth and Peace among he People, and allowing at the fame time that the Determinations of the Synod were only to be poposidoto the Churches by way of Counfel and dvice, and not as an Injunction, they compromis'd Difference after this manner. That the Ordirected to the leveral Churches for fending in Deputies, should be drawn up in Form of Motions and not of a Command. But the stand Deputies were not yet fatisfy'd; and therewhen the Order of the Court was read to Church on the Lord's Day, they could not ry w Vote to fend any Delegates to it, fo jeawere the People of their Christian Liberty. hich they apprehended in danger of being inded from this Claufe in the Order of the Court. at what fould be presented to them by the Synod, would give fuch Allowance to, as should be meet, Mr. Norton of Iphwich preaching the next infday's Lecture, fo influenc'd the Auditory, withe next Lord's Day they agreed to fend their inifter and three of their Mellengers. THE Synod met at Cambridge the latter End

the Year 1646, but was adjourn'd from time time till the 30th of September 1648, when ty fat to do Business. One of the first things at fell under Consideration was the Consession of with lately publish'd by the Assembly of Divines Westminster, which was read over Article by sticle, and agreed to, nemine contradicente, in the blowing Vote; (viz.) "The Synod having perus'd and consider'd, with much Gladness of

us'd and confider'd, with much Gladness of U2 "Heart

The HISTORY OF And 648.

.. Heart and Thankfulness to God, the Confession

of Faith, published by the late Reverend And fembly in England, do judge it to be very homely for ly, orthodox and judicious, in all Matters of

" Faith, and do therefore freely and fully confent thereunto in the Substance thereof: And we do

therefore think it meet that this Confession of Faith

" should be commended to the Churches of Christ " among us, and to the Honoured Court, as

" worthy of their due Confidention and Accept-" Determinations of the Syntal were on "some

Tranki "

But the Delign of the Syned being chiefly to agree upon a Model of Church Discipline, they took care in one of their former Sellions to appoint the Perfons, namely, the Rev. Mr. John Cotton, Mr. Richard Mather and Mr. Ralph Partridge, to draw up each of them separately a Model of Church Government out of the Holy Scriptures, and prefent them to the Synod; that the Synod, by comparing them carefully together, might form frich an one out of them; as should be agreeable to the Minds of all the Churches, From these three Per formances the Platform of Church Discipline, which the Reader will find in the Appendix , was composid, and after many Debates, agreed unto by the Majority of the Syned, and prefented to the General Court, and to the Churches, for their Con fideration and Acceptance, in the Month of Oliober 1648. Tis not to be imagin'd that every indi vidual Member of this Astembly should agree to all the Articles of the Platform; leis fufficien to fay, they all acquiefo'd in it, and that when i was prefented to the Churches, they all receive it. But fince that time feveral Disputes having arole, the present Set of Ministers differ from the Synod in the following Articles of the Platform.

Malmaller, which was read over Article by aTe, and agreed to namine contradicione, in that lowing Vote; (tiz) " The Spectharing pet-

Appendix, Numbello bas bal

" is N " ment " bis e call' THE affirms. no Eld tion of

18481

T confir Chur

prefly

or ac

nor d

ture u

but m

Mind

Minif

Judgr

Churc

Chure

them:

most 1

Favou

Dr. O

" felf

" in

" was

" prez

win far

" in a

" exer

" Eve

Church Elders Practic

by for

of the diw 19

113/11

48.

estion Aſ-

ho-

rs of

nienc

e do

Earth

hrift

to 25

cept-

ne L

ly to

took

three

Mr

draw

aurch

pre

com-

h an

ythe

Per

rhich

com-

o by

o the

Con

Tober

indi

agre

icien

acn i

eiv'

aving

m th

m.

Тн

MONG

1

11.311

THE Platform , Chap. IX. S. 6, and S. 7. confines the Office of a Pastor to that particular Church to which he is related, and does not exprefly allow him to administer the Sacraments, or act as an Officer in any Church but his own, nor did any of the New-England Ministers venare upon this Practice for above 50 Years after s but most of the present Ministers are of another Mind, for in an Affembly of the neighbouring Ministers at Cambridge they declar'd it as their Judgments, That the Paster of a neighbouring Church might, at the Request of a destitute Church, occasionally administer the Sacrament to them; and they cite the Opinions of two of the most learn'd Men among the Independants in their Favour, namely, Dr. Owen and Dr. Goodwin. Dr. Owen fays, " That if he did not think him-" felf bound to preach as an Authoriz'd Minister " in all Places, and upon all Occasions, when he " was call'd thereunto, he thinks he should never "preach more in this World." And Dr. Goodwin fays, " An Elder, one fet apart for that Office, " in any Church, is truly a Minister, occasionally to " exercise Ministerial Acts as he is call'd thereunto. " Every true Minister, actually so to bis own Church, is Medium Applicabile, a Means or an Instrument, that may apply any Ministerial Ast out of " bis own Church, in any other Church, if he be " call'd thereunto."

THE Platform, Chap. IX. S. 2, S. 3, and S. 4. thrms, That in every Church where there are 10 Elders, Imposition of Hands for the Ordination of Elders (i. e. Ministers) may be perform'd by some of the Brethren, orderly chosen by the Church; tho' it allows it to be done by the Elders of other Churches, if defir'd. But the Practice of ordaining Ministers by the Imposition of the Hands of the Bretbren, is now entirely b'supibe of the Markettin. He came over with

<sup>\*</sup> Mather, B. V. p. 39.

294 The HIST ORY of [Ab. 1648.

difus d and the Ceremony is always performed

by the heighbouring Ministers. Me officent to

THE Platform, Chao. XII. S. g. affirms, That a personal and publick Confession, and declaring of God's manner of working upon the Soul, i lawful, expedient and uteful, -And it is certain that all the New England Churches did one strictly adhere to this Article in their Admission of Church Members ; but of late they are come to a greater. Latitude, and do not infift upon it being done by the Person himself, but the Mini fter examines the Canditate in private, and mi nutes down his Answers to the Questions he put to him, which he communicates to the Church for their Satisfaction, at a proper Seafon

THE Platform, Chap, VII. maintains th Office of a Ruling Elder in the Church to be di Stinct from the Pastoral Office ; and yer most of the New-England Churches are at prefent with out them; some not thinking it a diffinct Office and others not having Perfons among them dul

qualify'd for the Discharge of it. ad a control of

THESE are the most considerable Asteration that have been introduced into the Churches of New-England in above Seventy Years; for the Platform is still the Rule of their Discipline, ex cept in the Articles abovemention'd.

In the Beginning of this Year dy'd John 1649. Wintbrop, Efg. Son of Adam Wintbrop o doton in Suffolk; he was born June 12, 1587, edu cated in the Law, and ferved his Country as Justice of Peace before he was 20 Years old. When the Defign of fettling a Colony in the Maffachuset Bay was formed, he put himself at the Head of it, and converted his Estate of Six or Seven Hundred a Year into proper Materials for the Service of the Plantation. He came over with them

ther

163

all .

of s

rega

Dift

Har

rest

tion,

and

he p

the 1

carel

Poun

Payn

what

the p

him

cafion

Calan

his C

and I

Seven ning (

ver, v

on the

his A

in a S

the Ch " I

" to

" Bod

" A (

" ប្រា

" fpea

" you

" repl " any

" nou

NEW-ENGLAND.

them in the Quality of Governour, in the Year 1620, and spent the Remainder of his Days and all his Estate in their Service. He was a Man of great Piety and Moderation; patient with regard to personal Injuries, but very exact in the Distribution of publick Justice. Many were the Hardships that he suffer'd in common with the rest of the People in the Infancy of the Plantation, but he bore them with invincible Constancy and Refolution. His Generofity was fuch, that he parted with all his Provisions for the Supply of the Poor; but some Years before his Death his areless Steward run him Twenty-five Hundred Pounds in Debt before he told him of it, for the Payment of which he was forced to fell most of what he had left in the Country; and yet the peevish and froward People could hardly give him a good Word, but were ready on every Ocasson to censure him as the Author of all the Calamities that befel them. 'Tis no Wonder that his Constitution should be broke by such Farigue and Hardship. Mr. Wintbrop declin'd for above Seven Years before his Death; but in the Beginning of this Year he was taken with a flow Fever, which in a Month's time carried him off, on the 26th of March 1649, in the 62d Year of his Age. The Character Mr. Cotton gave of him, in a Sermon that he preach'd on the Fast-Day that the Church kept for his Recovery, was this:

"He was a Governour that has been a Friend to counsel us: He administred Help for our Bodies by Physick, and for our Estates by Law. "A Governour who has been like a Brother, not usurping Authority over the Church; often speaking his Advice, and often contradicted by young Men, and some of low Degree; yet not replying, but offering Satisfaction also, when any supposed Offences have arisen; a Governour who has been to us like a Parent distri-

U 4

1648 formed

That claring oul, i

oncomillion comic comit on its Mini d min

e put

s the be di with

dul

ation ics o r the

John op o , edu

buset ad of

the with

them

buting his Goods to Brethren and Neighbours at his first coming, and gently bearing our In-" firmities without taking Notice of them." He was succeeded in the Government by Thomas 是一种是一种的一种。

Dudley, Efq;

THE fame Year the Reverend Mr. Thomas Sheppard, Pastor of the Church at Cambridge, departed this Life: He was born November the 5th 1605, and educated in Emanuel College Cambridge, where he proceeded Master of Arts. Up. on his leaving the University, he became Lecturer of Earls Coln, but after three Years was filenced by Bishop Land for Nonconformity, and forced to leave that Country. He then retired into Yorkshire, but the Bishop of that Dioces, Dr. Neal, would not allow him the Liberty of Preaching, without such a Subscription as his Conscience would not suffer him to make. He then apply'd himself to Dr. Morton, Bishop of Durbam, who was afraid likewife to fnew him any Countenance, which made him refolve to remove to New England. He took Shipping at Harwich in the latter End of the Year 1634; but when they had been out at Sea but a few Hours, the Wind chopp'd about, and drove back the Ship into Tarmouth Road, where it had like to have been lost in a Storm within Sight of Land. It was a prophane Saying of an eminent Officer, who, feeing the Diftress they were in from the Shore, was heard to fay, As for that poor Collier in the Road I pity bim much; but as for the Puritans in the other Veffel, bound for New-England, I am not concerned, for their Faith will fave them. However, at last the Ship got safe into the Harbour ; but Mr. Sheppard was so sick of the Sea, that he point a deferr d his Voyage to New-England till next ration, a Summer, when he took Shipping again from for the London, and arrived at Boston, October 23, 1635. for the About the Time that Mr. Sheppard came to they are Boston,

Bofton, from ( which Frienc his De Industr lis Bo was OI versity constar Treati is Sin exceffiv was con t Roa with a out an nd in Hart lifted I ary of urtain

120

Charter ntion c Treasur Corpora the Nar College. choo Money accedin plead, o ludicatu and any

NEW-ENGLAND. 297

9.

UTS

In-

n."

mas

mas

de-5th

am-Jp.

Au-

fi-

and ired

els,

of his

He of

him

to

g at

but

urs,

Ship

have It

icer,

the

er in

itans

I am

low-

our i it he

fon,

Bolton, Mr. Hooker and his Congregation removed. from Cambridge to the Banks of Connecticut River, which made room for Mr. Sheppard and his Friends in that Place, where he continued till He was a Person of great Piety and his Death. industry, spending almost all his Time among Books, and an admirable Preacher, which was one Reason, among others, why the University was erected in this Place: Besides his constant Preaching, he published several valuable Treatifes, among which the most noted are is Sincere Convert, and Evangelical Call; but his reessive Labours shortned his Life; for as he was coming home from an Affembly of Ministers Rowly, he was taken with a Quinzy, attended with a Symptomatical Fever, which in a few Days out an End to his Life on the 25th of August. and in the 44th Year of his Age.

Harvard College, which had Med hitherto only as a private Semi- 1650.

ary of Learning, under the Direction of artain Overfeers, was this Year incorporated by Charter bearing Date May 31, 1650. The Corpoation confifts of a President, five Fellows, and a Treasurer; who are declared a Body Politick and Corporate in Law, to all Intents and Purposes, by he Name of the President and Fellows of Harvard College. They have Power, with the Overseers, choose Successors, to purchase or receive Gifts of Money or Lands, for the Use of the College, not acceeding 500 l. per Annum; they may fue and plead, or be fued and impleaded, in all Courts of odicature, by the aforesaid Names. The President, and any three of the Fellows, are authorized to appoint a Common Seal for the Use of the Corponext ration, and likewise to choose Officers, and Servants from for the College, and to make Orders and By-laws 635. for the better ordering of the College, provided to they are approved of by the Overseers; as will ap-

100

Conv

was t

trave

with

three

Year,

as the

on a J

them them

off his

was fo

to rea

prayin

declare

Strvic Friend

the T

with t

" of

" Clar

" then

" be h

" anfv

" agai

" at a

" Day

" dive

" then

" cife

" fivel

" tion " in th

" for f

" Lin

So

pear more at large, in the Charter of the College, together with an Explanatory Act pass'd in the Year 1657, and an Act to perpetuate and confirm the Privileges of Harvard College, 1672, which

I have in ferted in the Appendix ..

THE Separation of the Anabaptifts from the Established Churches of the Country began last Year at Reboboth in Plymouth Patent, after this Manner +: Mr. Obadiah Holmes, and feven or eight more, withdrew from Mr. Newman's Communion, and fet up a separate Meeting, not thinking it lawful to approach the Table of the Lord with Persons whom they judg'd unbaptiz'd, Mr. Newman admonish'd Holmes of his Offence: but finding him obstinate, and not willing to give an Account of his Conduct to the Church, he excommunicated him. He was likewise ac-cused of Uncleanness, and of baptizing Mrs. Bowdish naked; but the Evidence, it seems, was not fufficient to convict him of it. No fooner was Mr. Holmes excommunicated, but he and two more of his Company were Tummoned to appear at the Court at Plymouth, where four Pelitions were lodged against them, defiring the Magiftrates to take some speedy Course to suppress the growing Schism: One was from their own Plantation fign'd with 35 Hands; Another from the Church at Taunton; a Third from all the Ministers in the Colony except two, and a Fourth from the Court of the Maffachusets at Boston under the Secretary's Hand: Whereupon the Court charged them to defift from their Separation, and neither to ordain Officers, nor to baptize, nor to break Bread together, nor to meet on the first Days of the Week; but Holmes and his Friends would make no Promise, but insisted upon the

\* Appendix, Numb. III.

<sup>†</sup> Clarke's Narrative of the New-England Persecution, London 1652, p. 18; 25.

#### NEW-ENGLAND. 299

Conviction of their own Confedences, and that it

was better to obey God than Man. did in the

1651.

Hege,

n the

nfirm

which

the

laft

this

n or

Com-

not

the

iz'd.

nce:

g to

irch,

ac-

Mrs.

Was

oner

and

d to

Peli-

Ma-

res

OWn

rom

the

urth

un-

ourt

and

nor

firft

nds

the

on-

Lon-

Som a Time after Mr. Clarke of Rhode-Mand myelling into the Jurifdiction of the Maffachufets. with Mr. Holmes and Mr. Crandall, they were all three apprehended, upon the 20th of July this Year, at the House of William Witters of Lin. as they were worshipping God in their own Way, on a Lord's-Day Morning. The Constable took them into Custody, and in the Afternoon earried them to the publick Meeting. Mr. Clarke pull'd off his Hat when he went in, but as foon as he was seated in a Pew he put it on again, and sell to reading of a Book while the Minister was praying: The Officers took off his Hat, but he declared he could not join with them in their Service. Next Morning Mr. Clarke and his two Friends were brought before the Magistrate of the Town, who fent them in Cultody to Boston with the following Mittimus. 杨始终了。 医红色性

" T) Y Virtue hereof you are required to take o into your Custody from the Constable " of Lin, or his Deputy, the Bodies of John "Clarke, Obadiah Holmes and John Crandall, and "them to keep until the next County Court to " be held at Boston, that they may then and there " answer to fuch Complaints as may be alledged " against them, for being taken by the Constable " at a private Meeting at Lin on the Lord's-"Day exercifing among themselves, to whom "divers of the Town repaired and joined with "them, and that in the Time of publick Exer-" cife of the Worship of God; as also for offen-" fively diffurbing the Peace of the Congrega-" tion at their coming into the publick Meeting " in the Time of Prayer in the Afternoon, and "for faying and manifesting that the Church of "Lin was not constituted according to the Or-

" der

The HISTORY of JAn. 16 cl. der of our Lord, and for fuch other Thing "as shall be alledged against them concerning their seducing and drawing aside of others after their erroneous Judgment and Practices.

" den " Ali

u De

ø ws; s the

Tr

" ver dore i be

" Sun

" nex " whi ill i

evoin. Trates

W

Court

ierr I

bout le loo

potatio

of of

To

which

your Sc

I could

and th

them;

Iread

boint ti

publick

Freedo

dispute

anota iga of

prad

" and for Sufpicion of having their Hands in

" rebaptizing of one or more among us, as allo "Security for their Appearance at the faid Court "Hereof fail not at your Peril " Chestial and

22d of the 5th Robert Bridges, Month, 1651.

To the Keeper of the Prison at Boston.

ABOUT a Fortnight after, the Court fined John Clarke Twenty Pounds or to be well whipp'd John Crandall Five Pounds, or to be whipp'd; and Obadiab Helmes Thirty Pounds, for their level Offences. The Reafons of their Sentence, befides those mentioned in the Missimus, are these; " Because the said John Clarke did the next Day " after his Contempt of the publick Worship or " the Lord's Day, meet again at the House of " Witters, and in Contempt of Authority, being " then in the Collody of the Law, did there " administer the Sacrament of the Lord's Sup-" per to one excommunicated Person, to another " under Admonition, and to a third that was " an Inhabitant of Lin, and not in Fellowship " with any Church ; and yet upon Answer, in open Court, did affirm that he never rebaptized " any, tho' he confessed that he did baptize such " as were baptized before, and thereby did ne-" ceffarily deny the Baptism that was before to " be Baptism, the Churches no Churches, and " also all other Ordinances and Ministers, as it " all were a Nullity; and also did in the Court deny to day and manifelling that the Charch of

<sup>·</sup> Clarke's Narrative of the New-England Perfecution, London, 1652, p. 4, 5.

51,

ing

ning

thers

ices.

s in

alfo clent

ourt.

dges.

170 21.1

fined

p'd

and

VCIA

be-

nese :

Day

ip on

fe of

geing

there

Sup-

other

Was whip

T. 10

tized fuch

d ne-

re to

and

as it

Court

deny

, Lon-

1554

deny the Lawfulness of baptizing of Infants: All this tends to the Different of God, the Despising the Ordinances of God among ace of the Churches, and feducing us, the Te the Sabjects of the Commonwealth from the of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, and perverting the that Ways of the Lord : Wherehe paid or fossicient Sureties that the faid "Sum finall be paid, by the first Day of the ment Court of Affiftants, or elfe to be well whippid; and that you shall remain in Prison will it be paid, or Securities given in for it."

worn live now tast that studies Encrees Nowell.

to the Court, or the Magistratu WHEN Mr. Clarke was upon his Trial, the Court roffered him a Conference with any of their Ministers, and order to remove his Scruples bout the Lawfulness of Infant Baptism, which clooking upon as a Challenge to a publick Difmation, fent them the following Letter . " bottee in your Dispute, keeping close to the

To the Honour'd Court affembled at Bofton,

THEREAS it bath pleas'd this Honour'd Court; Yesterday to condemn the Faith and Order which I hold and practife, and after you had pass d your Sentence upon me for it, were pleas'd to express, I could not maintain the same against your Ministers, and thereupon publickly proferd me a Dispute with them; be pleas'd by these sew Lines to understand Treadily accept it; and therefore do desire you to apwint the Time when, and Person with whom, in that publick Place where I was condemned, I might with Freedom, and without Molestation of the Civil Power, dispute that Point publickly. John Glarke tome of Mr. Gara

THE

his Pine, vachout his Confent

I was released, up on his Promise to ap-

<sup>·</sup> Clarke's Narrative, &c. p. 7.

1 de

ar a

histy

is Fr

mong

in they

ed in

or his

vere i

ext I

Money

hema

Rho

TH

he Sal

ag M deir di

inther

fled o

"I

there

this

0 10

fecre

or U

greg

nanc

**ftrac** 

mak

of ch wilfi

ter d

or P

But nei

against Anabas

THE Noise of this Disputation quickly spread all over the Country i for Mr. Clarke writ Len ters to leveral of his Friends, acquainting them with it, and defining their Affiftance a business Court referred his Behaviour, and would not comply with his Request, till be had first agreed to fome Preliminaries: They denied that they had challenged him at all to a publicle Disputation or ever intended it, and therefore that he miles presented the Governour's Speech; But then they add in the close of their Letter directed so him in Prison, and fign'd by five of the chief Ma gillrates, these Words : " Nevertheles, if you are forward to dispute, and that you will move it yourself to the Court, or the Magistrates " about Boston, we shall take Onder to appoint One, who shall be ready to answer your Mo "tion, you keeping close to the Questions to be propounded by your felf; and a Moderator

"Service: And whereas you deline you might be free in your Difpute, keeping close to the

"Points to be disputed on, without incurring Damage by the civil Justice, observing what

"hath been before written, it is granted the

Day may be agreed, if you yield the Pre-

These were certainly very fair Concessions, and as much as could be expected from the Leagislature of a Country to a private Man; but Mr. Clarke not being willing (as he said) to be thought forward to dispute, declined the lavitation, and upon this Punctilio it was dropp'd.

The Prisoners agreed not to pay their Fines, but to abide the corporal Punishment the Court had sentenced them to, but some of Mr. Clark's Friends paid his Fine, without his Consent, and Crandall was releas'd, upon his Promise to ap-

1651

pread

Let

then

Brithe

not

greed

y had

ation:

nifre

they

him

Ma-

Lyou

move

rates

point

Mo

to be

rator

that

ight

the

ring

what

the Pre-

Sugar

ons,

Lee

be

DVI-

Mug

nes

ourt

ke's

ent,

ap-

pear

hirty Lashes at the Whipping-post: Several of is Friends were Spectators of his Punishment, mong the rest John Spur and John Hazell, who have were attending the Pisoner back to Prison, took him by the Hand in the Market-place, at in the Face of all the People, praised God for his Courage and Constancy; for which they were summon'd before the General Court the ext Day, and fined each of them 40s, or to be whipp'd: The Prisoners resus'd to pay the soney, but some of their Friends doing it for them, they were dismissed, and so they return'd a Rhode-Island.

Thus the Government of New-England, for the Sake of Uniformity in divine Worship, broke supon the natural Rights of Mankind, punishing Men, not for disturbing the State, but for their differing Sentiments in Religion; as appears of the form the following Law, which was ented on this Occasion.

"It is ordered by this Court and Authority thereof, that if any Person or Persons within this Jurisdiction shall either openly condemn or oppose the baptizing of Infants, or go about fecretly to feduce others from the Approbation or Use thereof, or shall purposely depart the Congregation at the Administration of that Ordinance, or shall deny the Ordinance of Magifracy, or their lawful Right or Authority to make War, or punish the outward Breaches of the first Table, and shall appear to the Court wilfully, and obstinately to continue therein after due Means of Conviction, every fuch Person or Persons shall be sentenced to Banishment ." but neither this, nor some other penal Laws made gainst Sectaries, could prevent the Growth of Anabaptism, as the Reader will see hereafter.

DR.

<sup>\*</sup> Clarke's Narrative, &c. p. 35.

DR. Mather \* fays, that this Separation of the Anabaptifts, was a manifest Violation of the Law of the Commonwealth concerning the order gathering of Churches, which provide, 46 Tha " no Company of Men shall join in any pre "tended Way of Church Fellowship, unles "they shall acquaint the Magistrates and E " ders of the neighbouring Churches, and have " their Approbation therein." Which (by the Way) condemns all the Differting Congre gations that have been gathered in Englan fince the Act of Uniformity in the Year 1662 The Doctor complains further of the Anabaptiff admitting into their Society fuch as the effa blish'd Churches of the Country had excommu nicated for Immoralities; and of their preferring them to be Administrators of the Sacramen among them? He blames their Uncharitablened in declaring Infant Baptifm to be no Baptifm; unchurching all other Societies of visible Christian except those of their own Persuasion; and of their chooling Shoemakers, Taylors, and the most illie rate Persons, for their Pastors and Teachers nay, he draws the Rife of the Separation from hence, " That fome Men having privately exercis'd their Gifts in Meetings with Ap " plaufe, began to think themselves wronged "that their Light was put under a Bushel and finding no Remedy in other Churches, the threw on a Cloak of Anabaptifin, and fo gain'd " the Thing they aimed at in Disguise." "H confesses indeed that the New England Churche gave fome Provocation on their Side, by their Ministers passing severe Censures on those of the Perfusion that went out of the Church when In fants were brought into the Congregation to be bap tized, which exasperated them to such a Degree that they withdrew wholly from the Communion

Book VII. p. 27.

of the the comp would in the from treater

Consc

To died t of the He w and a Trinity fome Emanu Batche Upon Minist there a tain S Cerem to con able M made a Years, put int then in the To trates, lerts, f London, trates o trament he Chi

missione himself and trav treession

ent dov

VOL.

of the Church, and fet up for themselves: But let the Reader judge, who had most Reason to complain; the New-England Churches, who would neither suffer the Baptists to live quietly in their Communion, nor separate peaceably from it? or, these unhappy Persons, who were meated so unkindly for following the Light of their Consciences?

651

fth

derl

Tha

pre

uplei I El

have

y th

ngre glan

1662 ptilt

esta

ninu Arina

men

lenel

**(tian** 

bhei

illite

ners

fron atel

Ap

nged

the

ain'd

H

rche

tha

nold

bap

gree

inion

Towards the latter End of this Year died the famous Mr. John Cotton, B. D. one 1652. of the Ministers of the Church at Boston. He was born at Derby, December the 4th, 1585, and at the Age of Thirteen Years admitted into Trinity-College in Cambridge, where he studied for some Years, but was afterwards removed to Emanuel-College, where he proceeded Master of Arts, Batchelor of Divinity, and Fellow of the College. Upon his leaving the University, he was chosen Minister of Boston in Lincolnsbire; but had not been there above three Years before he began to enterhin Scruples about Conformity to some of the Gremonies of the Church, and at last resolved not to comply with them; however being a peaceable Man, and beloved by all his Parishioners, he made a shift to keep his Place for almost Twenty Years, till the Government of the Church was put into the Hands of Bishop Laud. He was then informed against by a debauched Fellow of the Town, who to be revenged of the Magitrates, for punishing him according to his Deerts, fwore in the High Commission Court at London, That neither the Minister nor Magitrates of the Town of Boston kneeled at the Satament, nor observed some other Ceremonies of he Church. Upon this Letters Missive were ent down to bring Mr. Cotton before the Commissioners, but he was so wise as not to deliver imself up into their Hands, but left the Town, and travelled to London in Disguise. Great Intercessions were made for him to the Archbishop VOL. I. by by the Earl of Dorfet and others, but in vain. The Earl fent him Word, "That if he had been es guilty of Drunkenness or Uncleanness, he might have had Favour; but the Sin of Puri-" tanism was unpardonable." Upon this he refolved to leave his Native Country and fettle in New-England. He took Shipping the Beginning of July, 1622, and arrived at Boston the 3d of September following: When he had been a Month out at Sea, his Wife fell in Labour, and was delivered of a Son, who, from the Place of his Nativity, was called Seaborn Cotton. Soon after his coming afhore he was made Fellow-Labourer with Mr. Wilson in the Church at Boston; which was a great Advantage to the Town, for it was owing in part to his Wifdom and Influence that it flourished so fast in Trade and Shipping as to outstrip its Neighbours, and in a few Years become the Capital of the whole Province. When the Episcopal Power began to fall in England, about the Year 1642, some of the Members of both Houses of Parliament writ to him, and pressed his Return to his Native Country; but being now in Safety, he was not willing to venture out again into a Storm : He therefore continued at Boston to his Death. He was a Man of great Reputation in both Englands: While he was Minister of Boston in Lincolnsbire, he wa highly esteemed by Archbishop Williams, Docto Preston, the Earls of Dorchester and Lindsey, and his C Presson, the Earls of Dorchester and Lindsey, and shis C several other Noblemen, for his incomparable hould not Parts. When the Archbishop just mentioned we soils as in Favour at \* Court, he procured Mr. Cotton but at la Toleration under the Broad-Seal for the free hil'd, he Exercise of his Ministry, notwithstanding his distinction of senting in Ceremonies, so long as done without it his Housturbance to the Church; but when he seems Leinto Disgrace, Mr. Cotton's Patent could not skreet he Colo him. His Reputation was no less considerables, he Fuller, Book xi. 5, 228. Fuller, Book xi. p. 228.

all o Orac Man quain could trover which dom of

Talen himfe his A made no ob of tho the m

the I

of gre he was upreff gnorar Sermon

MiniAr eply'd. your Pr e was fellow,

eply'd, ne wifer Life was

2. n.

en he

77re-

in

ing

of

nth de-

his

fter

urer

hich

was

that

as to s be-

all over New-England, where he was effected the Oracle of the Country. He was certainly a Man of very great Learning, and fo well acquainted with the Hebrew Language, that he could discourse in it. He published several Conproverfial and Practical Writings, the chief of which was his Discourse of the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, which was a masterly Piece for the Time in which it was writ; but his chief Talents were for the Pulpit, where he behaved himself with such Gravity and Decency, as struck his Audience with Admiration and Awe: He made use of no Latin Sentences in his Sermons, no obfolete School Phrases, as was the Fashion of those Times, but spoke to the Capacity of the meanest of his Hearers. He was a Person of great Modesty and Good Nature, and tho he was often affronted by angry Men, he never apressed any Resentments. Once a conceited, Vhen and Ministry was become dark or flat: To which he but eply'd, Both Brother, it man be half. gnorant Mechanick followed him home after and Ministry was become dark or flat: To which he is but eply'd, Both Brother, it may be both; let me have ven our Prayers that it may be otherwise. Another time con he was assaulted in the Street by an impudent Man sellow, who call'd him an old Fool: Mr. Cotton like he eply'd, I confess I am so; the Lord make thee and he was he wiser than we are, even wise to Salvation. His Docto Life was full of Acts of Piety and Charity; and so ship his Constitution had not been very firm, he was all ould not have gone thro' so many Labours and led we so so that at last he found himself decaying, his Voice he for all'd, he became Asthmatical, and a Complication of Distempers threatned his Death; so he without at his House in Order, and having taken a some this distinction of Distempers threatned his Death; so he without at his House in Order, and having taken a some the second he can be completed the Colony, who came to visit him in his Sick-iderables, he dy'd on the 23d of December, in the 68th X 2 308 The HISTORY of [An. 1652. Year of his Age, and was interr'd with great

Honour and Solemnity.

. NEXT Year dy'd the Honourable Tho. 1653. mas Dudley, Esq; some Time Governour of the Colony of the Massachusets: He was born at Northampton, 1574, and was defign'd for the Law, but being a brifk, active young Gentleman, Queen Elizabeth gave him a Captain's Commission, and sent him at the Head of a Company of Foot into the Service of Henry the IVth of France, in the Low-Countries: But a Peace being made foon after betwen the French and Spaniards, Capt. Dudley returned to Northampton, and by Conversation with Mr. Dod, Mr. Hilder ham, Mr. Cleaver, and Mr. Winston, became a Nonconformist. After this he entred into the Service of the Earl of Lincoln, and was his Steward about 9 or 10 Years; but being a Puritan, and not willing to conform to the Ceremonies of the Church, he left the Earl's Service, and went over to New England, with the first Colony, in the Year 1630, in Quality of Deputy-Governour. Having been a military Man, he was chosen Major-General of the Colony, and was very instrumental in keeping the Peace at a Time when the Government was disturbed by Persons of Antinomian and Familiftical Principles. He was feveral times chosen Governour of the Colony; and after a long and useful Life, died in Peace at his House in Roxbury, July the 31st, in the 77th Year of his Age, being succeeded in his Government by Mr. John Endicott.

MR. Henry Dunstar resigned his Place of 1654. President of Harvard College about this time. The Overseers were uneasy because he had declared himself an Anabaptist, fearing lest he should instill those Principles into the Youth that were under his Care; but the President no sooner understood their Minds, but he freely resigned

he sp an ex ritab Tefta burie those his R Year Charl unive foon Diftu think oblig which the N Degr Ti Winfle Plymo of Ed of W Count Chure with

figne

colorias the chuset to the Affair and S any rable S

He

tant 7
an Ex

figned his Charge, and retired to Scituate, where

great

52.

Thornour
e was
d for
entleCompany
th of
being
lards,
d by
ham,
Nonrvice

not the over

n the nour. noten y in-

when s of was

and this Year ment

ce of this cause lest

outh
t no
v re-

gned

he spent the rest of his Days in Peace. He was an excellent Scholar, and a modest, humble, charitable Man, as appears by his last Will and Testament, wherein he ordered his Body to be buried at Cambridge, and bequeathed Legacies to those very Persons who had been the Authors of his Removal out of his Place. He died in the Year 1659, and was succeeded by the Rev. Mr. Charles Chauncey, who governed the College with universal Applause for a great many Years, tho' foon after his Advancement there was a great Disturbance among some of the Scholars, who, thinking themselves put under a Hardship, by being obliged to lose part of a Year of their Time, upon which depended their Degrees, left the College to the Number of Seventeen, without waiting for any Degree at all.

Winflow, Esq; some Time Governour of 1655.
Plymouth Colony, died: He was the Son

of Edward Winflow of Draughtwich in the County of Worcester, Esq; Travelling into the Low-Countries, he joined himself to Mr. Robinson's Church at Leyden, and came over to New-England with the first Detachment, in the Year 1620. He was many Years Governour of Plymouth Colony, and made feveral Voyages to England, as their Agent. In the Year 1646, the Maffachuset Colony chose him their Agent, and sent him to the Court of England upon very important Affairs, which he dispatched with great Fidelity and Success, but never returned to New-England any more; for the Parliament finding him an able Statesman, employed him in several important Trusts, and at last sent him at the Head of an Expedition to Hispaniola, which not succeeding according to his Defires, he died of Grief between

X 3

Domingo

Domingo and Jamaica, May the 8th, 1655, and had his Body honourably committed to the Sea.

A B O U T a Twelvemonth after died old 1656. valiant Capt. Standift, as brave a Soldier as ever fet Foot on New-English Ground. He was born in Lancasbire, and was Heir apparent to a good Estate, but being fraudulently deprived of it, he went for a Soldier into the Low-Countries, and after some Time falling into Acquaintance with several of Mr. Robinson's Church at Leyden, joined with them in the Delign of making a Settle. ment in New-England. He came over with the first Colony, and had a deep Share in all the Hardships and Difficulties they suffered. He was fent out upon several daring Enterprizes against the Indians, and others, and did Wonders with an Handful of Men. At last, when he was no longer capable of ferving his Country in the Field, he retired to Duxbury, and there died of the Stone in an advanced Age. ami'l

THE Government of New-England had no fooner crushed the Anabaptists, but the Quakers rose up and disturbed the Peace of the Country. The Magistrates proceeded against them, as a gainst the Anabaptists, by Fines, Imprisonment, Whipping, &c. but these not proving effectual, they ventured at last to put three or sour of them to Death. This Affair having made a great Noise in the World, I'll endeavour to relate it with the greatest Impartiality; and when the Reader has considered the whole Account, with the Reasons of the Magistrates for their Proceedings, as they lie together in this Chapter, let him judge

of it as he pleases.

THE first Appearance of the People call'd Quakers in the World, was in the North of England, about the Year 1644, but they were not distinguish'd by any particular Name till the Year 1650. At their first setting out they were a wild,

wild conf fron Her rail' and then quer ner, the lions selve Em to C ons then amo wher

" te
" w
" ta

44 C

ny, sther)

Color arrive ning eight Christ John Weat rival fent fecure

\* B

phlet

burne

655.

and

Sea.

d old

oldier

ound.

arent

rived

tries.

tance

yden.

ettlė.

1 the

the

Was/

ainst

h an

lon-

ield.

tone

no

kers

try.

a+

ent,

ial,

em

oile

ith

der

ea-

as

ge

l'd

g-

ot

ar

a

d,

" Colony " . gogu

wild, enthusiastick Sort of People, having no consistent Scheme of Religion, but what arose from the strong Impulses of their own Minds: Hence they cried down a Regular Ministry, and rail'd against all such as Hirelings, Priests of Baal, and Deceivers of the People; they diffurbed them in their publick Administrations, and frequently went about Streets in an indecent manner, denouncing Judgments and Calamities on the Nation; nay, so violent were their Impresfions at last, that some of them imagined themlelves called of God, to leave their Families and Employments, and travel into foregn Countries, to convert the Pope, the Turk, and all the Nations of the World. With this View some of them came over to New-England, and fettled among the Antinomians in Rhode-Illand, from whence they spread themselves over Plymouth Colony, and were "unhappily fuccessful (says Dr. Mather) " in seducing the People, not only to at-" tend to the mystical Dispensation of the Light "within, as having the whole of Religion con-" tained in it, but also to oppose the good "Order, both civil and facred, erected in the

Colony were Mary Fisher and Anne Austin, who arrived † at Boston from Borbadoes in the Beginning of July, 1656, and about a Month after eight more arrived from Rhode-Island, namely, Christopher Holder, Thomas Thirstone, William Brend, John Copeland, Mary Prince, Sarab Gibbons, Mary Weatherhead, and Dorothy Waugh. Upon the Arrival of the two first, Notice was immediately sent to the Governour, who ordered them to be secured, and about one hundred Books and Pamphlets, which they brought with them, to be burned. The Women were brought ashore, put into

bus

B. vii. p. 22: + Bishop's New-England judg'd, p. 3.

312 The HISTORY of [An. 1656.

into close Prison, and examined by proper Perfons for Tokens of Witchcraft. The Governour called his Council together upon this extraordinary Occasion, who came to the following Refolutions,

First, "THAT all fuch corrupt Books as shall be found upon Search to be brought in, and

" spread by Mary Fisher and Anne Austin shall be

" forthwith burn'd and destroy'd by the common

Executioner. v analogy of the future of

Secondly, "That the faid Mary and Anne be kept in close Prison, and none admitted Com-

munication with them without Leave from

"the Governour, Deputy Governour, or any two Magistrates, to prevent the Spreading of

their corrupt Opinions, till fuch time as they

" be delivered by Authority on board some Vef" fel to be transported out of the Country."

Thirdly, That Simon Kempt borne do speedily transport, or cause to be transported the said

Persons to Barbadoes from whence they came,

" he defraying all the Charges of their Imprison-

ment, and for Performance thereof to give

Security to the Secretary, in a Bond of One hundred Pounds, and upon Refusal to be

committed to Prison till he do it."

ACCORDINGLY these two Women, after about a Month or five Weeks Consinement, were sent out of the Country, by the Return of the same Ship that brought them; the other eight were imprisoned after the same Manner, and at length sent out of the Country; but the same Spirit that brought them first to New-England, soon moved them to return, and propagate their Opinions, in Desiance of all the Laws that were made against them.

THE Delign of the Magistrates in coming to these Resolutions against the Quakers, was to keep them out of the Country, imagining, that

none of the ken, a this Vied by 1656.

" Ship " any " Qua " to b

" 1

the Qua forei with and

and l at wo with impo

for ev

fuch I him o ---Ar shall

Opini Books Forty

Time, defended of Co.

by the

rum in

none J.

an

none of their own People had as yet received any of their Opinions, tho' in this they were miftaken, as will appear presently: However, with this View the following fevere Laws were enacted by a general Court held at Boston, October 14, 1656. We blood void het bit voor

56.

et-

our

rdi-

Re-

hall

and

be

non 

e be

om-

rom

any of of

hey

Vef-

dily

faid

me, fon-

give

One be

oout

fent

ame

were

igth

pirit

oon

)pi-

rade

ing

s to

that

one

" That if any Master or Commander of any Ship, Bark, &c. shall henceforth bring into any Harbour, &c. within this Jurisdiction, any "Quaker or Quakers,—he shall pay or cause to be paid the Sum of One hundred Pounds to the Treasurer of the Country.—That what Quaker foever shall arrive in this Country from foreign Parts, or Parts adjacent, shall be forthwith committed to the House of Correction. and at their Entrance to be severely whipp'd. and by the Master thereof to be constantly kept at work, and none fuffer'd to speak, or converse with them. - If any Person shall knowingly import any Quakers Books, or Writings concerning their Devilish Opinions, he shall pay for every such Book, or Writing five Pounds; and whofoever shall disperse, or conceal any such Book or Writing, and it be found with him or her, shall forfeit and pay five Pounds. --- And that if any Persons within this Colony shall take upon them to defend the heretical Opinions of the faid Quakers, or any of their Books, &c. they shall be fined for the first Time Forty Shillings; if they shall persist in the same, and shall again defend them, the second Time, Four Pounds----if they shall again so defend, they shall be committed to the House of Correction till there be convenient Passage to fend them out of the Land, being fentenced by the Court of Affistants to Banishment \*." THESE Laws being proclaimed by Beat of rum in the Streets of Boston, Nicholas Upshal,

J. Whiting's Answer to Cotton Mather, p. 14.

an ancient Man of about 60 Years of Age, can out of his House, and in a publick Manner to the Officers, That the Profecution of the Laws would be the Forerunner of Judgment of the Country and therefore defired them to tal heed what they did, left they should be foun fighting against God. This was looked upo as an Attack upon the Legislature, which migh be attended with fatal Confequences; for People might arraign the Laws of their Country in such an open Manner, the Authority of the Government would quickly be destroyed. Uph was therefore furnmoned to appear before the General Court next Morning, and not acknow ledging his Offence, was fined Twenty Pound and ordered to depart the Jurifdiction within the Space of a Month; and that if he returned, h should be kept close Prisoner till he acknowledge his Fault X Land notice Person that Kalend silv

-100 23 Burt the first that suffered by the ford 1657. mentioned Laws was Mary Clarke, Wife : 20190 John Clarks, of London, Taylor, who le her Husband and fix Children to bring a Messag from the Lord to New-England. She arrived in the Month of August, and having delivered her Me fage, was fent to the House of Correction, where I received Twenty Stripes, and was then turned ou of the Jurisdiction. The next were Christophe Holder and John Copeland, who being recurred to New-England. fince their late Banishment, an attempting to speak to the People in the Mee ing-House at Salem after Sermon, were fent t the House of Correction, where they receive Thirty Stripes a-piece, and after Nine Week Imprisonment were once more fent out of the Country. 'Tis uncertain how long these Quaker had been at Salem, but it began now to appea that several of the Inhabitants of that Place ha embraced their Principles, by their absentin

vate the J that to E fore: were prefer Head their ection banish Laws. nated Opinio Тн rocee everi al Co nacted Qua One be c

from

ever Qual Perfe Shilli cealm

Forfe And ple th

in; we comin the L

in should

165

can

r to

tho

nt o

o tak

foun

upo

migh

for

ountr

of th

Upfbl

re th

know

ound

in th

ed, H

ledge

11W

e ford

Vife d

no le

1effag

d in th

r Me

iere (l

ned ou

istophe

rned t t, an

Mee fent t

eceive

Week of th

Quaker

appea ice ha

entin fron

from the publick Worship, and setting up private Meetings of their own on the First Day of the Week; nor is this to be wondered at, fince that Town had shown so strong an Inclination in Enthusiastical Doctrines but a few Years before: However, these private Meetings of Friends were quickly broke up; the Persons that were present at them were fined Five Shillings a Head for absenting from publick Worship, and their Teachers were fent to the House of Correction at Boston; but there was hardly a Man banished the Jurisdiction by Virtue of these laws, but returned again in a few Months, aninated with new Zeal for the propagating his Opinions. And expension of Leisit vo

THE Government being alarmed at thefe roceedings of the Quakers, proceeded to farther everities against them, and at their next Gene-Court in October passed a Law , which nacted. "That who foever should bring any Quaker into their Jurisdiction shall forfeit One Hundred Pounds to the Country, and be committed to Prison, there to remain till the Penalty should be farisfied .--- And whosoever should entertain or conceal any Quaker or Quakers, knowing them fo to be, every fuch Person should forfeit to the Country Forty Shillings for every Hour's Entertaining or Concealment, and be committed to Prison till the Forfeiture should be fully paid and fatisfied. And further, That all and every of those People that should arise among themselves, should be dealt withal, and fuffer the like Punishments, as the Laws provide against those that come in; which was, That for the first Offence (or coming in) after they had once fuffered what the Law requireth, if a Male, one of his Ears should be cut off, and he kept at Work in the

<sup>\*</sup> New-England judged, p. 63.

The HISTORY of [An. 1657

"House of Correction till he could be fen away on his own Charges; and for the fecond

"Offence his other Ear should be cut off, and "he kept in the House of Correction as afore

" faid: If a Woman, then to be severely whipp'd " and kept as aforefaid as the Male for the first

Offence; and for the fecond the shall be alike " used as aforesaid: And for every Quaker, h

or the, that shall a third Time offend, the shall have their Tongues bored through with

" an hot Iron, and be kept at the House of Cor

rection to work till they be fent away at their own Charge."

I Do not find above three Quakers that lot their Ears by this Law, namely, Holder, Cope land and Rouse, who having been fent out of the Jurisdiction once and again, were apprehended the two former at Dedbam, and the other a Boston. They were immediately carried before the Governour, and acknowledging themselves to be the Persons that were formerly banished were sentenced to have each of them their Righ Ear cut off by the Hangman, which was accord ingly executed within the Prison of Boston Sept. 16, 1658, 100000 10 11 11 11 11 11

In the midst of these Troubles died William Bradford, Eig; Second Governour of Plymouth Co lony: He was born in an obscure Village calle Ansterfield in Yorksbire, in the Year 1588. Th Conversation and Ministry of Mr. Clifton, under whom he was educated, made him a Nonconfor mist; but the Severity of the Bishops not allow ing him the Liberty of his Conscience at Home he transported himself with some of his Acquain ance into Holland, and fettled with the Brown Church at Amsterdam, where he lived ten Years But when the Expedition for New-England wa set on Foot, he left Amsterdam, and embarke with that Part of Mr. Robinson's Congregation

Ley hofe ] ras un Colony Post w He wa ous Sp hey A f the When f Plyn ras dra Heirs,

mafed. Genera. p the oufly c Seal, re vas his This er hey ch He wa

he Pr be N

eevish der the inst thr e bore he Peo ore he

eared

Constitu ad un ind aft Months mented

he 69th the great fible for 1657

fen

econd

, and afore

pp'd

e firf

alik

r, h

the

Wit f Cor

thei

WE!

t lo

Cope

of th

nded ner a

befor

ves t ished

Righ

ccord

Boston

Tillian

th Co calle Th

unde confor

allow

Iome

uaint

ears d wa

parke gatio

Leyden, which made the first Settlement in hose Parts. Upon the Death of Mr. Carver he as unanimously chosen Governour of the Infant colony in the Year 1621, and continued in that oft with very little Intermission till his Death. He was a Gentleman of a very noble and geneous Spirit, laying afide all private Views, when hey stood in Competition with the publick Good the Country, as appears by this Example: When the Crown of England gave the Colony Plymouth a Patent for their Lands, the Patent as drawn in the Name of William Bradford, his Heirs, Affociates and Affigns, which gave him e Propriety of the whole Country; but when Number of Freemen was confiderably enreased, and several new Towns erected, the General Court desired Mr. Bradford to surrender only did, and confirmed it with his Hand and al, referving no more for himself than what as his Proportion with others by Agreement. This endeared him so much to the People, that bey chose him in a manner Governour for Life. He was a Person of excellent Temper, as appared by his admirable Management of the wish and froward Humours of the People, uner the inexpressible Hardships they suffered the the three or four Years of their Settlement; but the bore a part in them all himself, and animated the People by his own Example. The Year bebre he died he found himself decaying, his Constitution being broken by the Fatigues he ad undergone in the Service of the Colony; after a lingring Indisposition of several Months, he died May 9, 1657, universally larowni mented by all the Colonies of New-England, in he 69th Year of his Age, and was interred with be greatest Honour and Solemnity that was posble for the Colony to express.

HE

He was succeeded by Mr. Thomas Prince, a Man of no Learning, but of good natural Parts; who finding the Want of a liberal Education in himself, became the greatest Patron of Learning that that Colony ever enjoyed, and was so well beloved, that he was constantly chosen Governour as long as he lived.

IN the same Year died Theaphilus Eaton, Efg. Governour of Newbaven Colony; he was born a Stony Stratford in Onfordshire, his Father being Minister of the Town: He was bred an East Country Merchant, and travelling into these Parts was employed by the King, as his Agent at the Court of Denmark; after three Years he returned home, and continued feveral Years in London, a Merchant of great Boliness and Reputation. When the Puritanical Ministers were driven out of the Land by the Rigour of Arch bishop Laud's Impositions, and among the res his old Acquaintance Mr. Davenport, he took up a Resolution to accompany him to New-England where they arrived in the Year 1637, and choo fing to be a distinct Colony by themselves, settled in the South-West Part of the Country, at Place which they called Newbaven, and foread themselves along the Coast, where in a few Year they built feveral pretty Villages. As Mr. Da venport was Minister, so Mr. Eaton was chosen annually their Governour as long as he lived. He met with more Troubles than most of the Go vernours of the other Colonies, but bore then with invincible Patience and Constancy. H had once such a large Fistula in his Breast, tha the Surgeon told him he had not Courage enoug himself to lay it open, being afraid he would die under his Hands; but Mr. Eaton bid him with an undaunted Resolution, perform th Operation, and not be afraid, For God calls you do, fays he, and me to fuffer, and after some tim h

e was rict V Conver alions nd eaf lways a A Troubl lied of rouble t last he Ch emed ied, a fields, when nto hi Night. Methin f the C he wer

withou is New Jony for

his Suc

Writho' at son in ternou sbrewshimerche

lence of New-E

time h

657

Man

who

nfelf.

that

oved\_ long

E Bud Elg

rn at

peing

Eaf

thefe

gent

rs ho

rs in

Lepu

Were

Arch-

: ref

k up

rland

choo ettled

at a

oread

Year

Da

hole

H

: Go

then

H tha

oug

voul

him

tim h

was perfectly cured. He was a Person of tict Virtue and Piety, facetious and pleasant in conversation, but always grave upon proper Ocfions: He was very charitable to the Poor. nd eafy of Access by the meanest Persons, but ways maintained the Dignity of his Character a Magistrate. He was exercised with great froubles in his Family; feveral of his Children led of malignant Distempers, his Wife was publed with a melancholy Indisposition, and last the Divisions and Quarrels that arose in he Church of Hertford broke his Heart. He semed to be in perfect Health the Day before he ed, and had been taking a folitary Walk in the fields, for the Benefit of private Meditation; then he came home in the Evening, he went nto his Wife's Chamber, and bid her good Night. She look'd up in his Face and faid. Methinks you look fad. He replied, The Troubles the Church of Hertford make me fo. After this e went to his Apartment, and about Midnight king heard to fetch a deep Groan, one of the Watchers that fat up with his Wife run in, and ik'd him how he did; he replied, Very ill, and without speaking a Word more died. Mr. Franin Newman, who had been Secretary of the Coony for several Years, was chosen unanimously his Succeffor.

WITHIN a few Months of Governour Eaton, ho' at a very great Distance of Place, died his on in Law Edward Hopkins, Esq; sometime Goternour of Connecticut Colony: He was born about brewsbury in the Year 1600, educated a Turky Merchant, and was a confiderable Trader to hose Parts for several Years in London, till the Vioence of the Times forced him to remove to the New-England, where he settled at Hertford, and you was made Governour of the Colony. After some time his elder Brother dying, who was Warden

The HISTORY of [An. 1657 of the Fleet, he was obliged to return to English land to look after his Affairs, where he was quick ly taken Notice of by those who had then the Government in their Hands: They made him first Warden of the Fleet in his Brother's Room then Commissioner of the Admiralty and Navy Office, and at last got him chosen a Member of Parliament. These unexpected Preferments de termined him to fend over for his Family, and fpend the rest of his Days in his native Country He was a confumptive Man, troubled with Cough and Spitting of Blood for above 30 Years but a Person of great Piety, Virtue and Libera lity to the Poor: He was extremely beloved in both Englands, but his Constitution being quit wasted, he died this Year in the 58th Year of his Age: and the bab visited ) about any

1658. Ministers, who had been forced to leave their Native Country on the Account of

Religion. Words has a to sand A side as a sage

ONE was the Reverend Mr. Ralph Patridge who had been a Minister in the Church of Eng land, but by the Severity of the Bishops wa hunted (as he used to express it) like a Partridg upon the Mountains, till at last he resolved to ge out of their Reach, and take his Flight into New England. He fettled at Duxbury in the Colony of Plymouth, and was in such high Esteem all over the Country that the Synod of Cambridge, in the Yea 1648, chose him one of the three to draw u their Model of Church Government: He was Person of great Humility and Self-denial, and contented himself with very mean Circumstance in the World; infomuch that when most of the Ministers of Plymouth Colony left their Places on Account of the People's withdrawing their Maintenance, this good Man continued with hi poor People till he died : He was an able and faithfu faith evertill Chri and

T Bulkl was Fello Estat ed it born, Diftu Infor his N Chur noon over bring him, they Estate under had li to diff Farm Room dring versat Influer a Tre

Burn passing Executhe 2

much

of Ag

in the

for the

faithful Preacher of the Gospel, and was rarely, if ever, interrupted in his Work by bodily Sickness, till he died, in a good old Age, having served Christ in the Work of the Ministry between forty

and fifty Years.

1657

Eng

juick

n the hin

Loom

Navy ber o

ts de

and

untry vith a

Years

ibera

ed in

quit

of hi

100

ncien

leav

unt o

ridge

Eng s wa

tridg

to ge

New

ony o er th

Yea

w u

was ! , and

tance

of the Places

thei

th hi

e and

iithfu

THE other was the Reverend Mr. Peter Bulkly, born at Woodbill in Bedfordsbire, 1582. He was educated at St. John's in Cambridge, and was Fellow of the College. He had a Gentleman's Estate left him by his Father, whom he succeeded in his Ministry at the Place where he was born, and continued in his Post without any Disturbance for Twenty-one Years; but at last Information being given to Archbishop Laud of his Nonconformity to some of the Ceremonies of the Church, he was immediately filenced; whereupon he turned his Estate into Money, and came over to New-England in the Year 1635, and bringing over a good Number of Planters with him, they settled by themselves at a Place which they called Concord. Here he buried a great Estate, whilst almost all his Servants got Estates under him. It was his Custom, when a Servant had lived with him a certain Number of Years, to dismiss him his Service, and put him into a Farm for himself, and so take another in his Room. He was an excellent Scholar, a thundring Preacher, of an holy and exemplary Conversation, and one who had great Authority and Influence in the Place where he lived. He printed a Treatise of the New Covenant, which was very much esteemed in those Times, and at last died of Age and Infirmities, March the 9th, 1658-9, in the 77th Year of his Age.

Bur to return to the Quakers; neither the passing the forementioned Laws, nor the severe Execution of them, had the least Influence on the Quakers, who gloried in their Sufferings, as for the Cause of God, and the Testimony of Jesus.

VOL. I. \* I-cold Hagland judged \*

omin

the M

tions

Sout

Sale Eit:

hav

and

dina

for

upo

on .

Tre

shal

lons

ginid Sc.

rechio

LA ther

lefign lutbick lighter arther

be g

Sev

ere c

loton, Jun Nichola

tom S

Villian

ent to

ave th

They travel'd the Country, diffurb'd the Churches and continued their private Meetings as much as ever. On the 13th of April Itwo Women spake aloud in the Meeting-house at Boston; and a few Weeks after T. Harris of Barbadoes disturb ed the publick Worship again, for which he wa apprehended, fent to the House of Correction and put to hard Labour; but Harris, like the rest of his Brethren, would not strike a Stroke i Prison; he would suffer any thing, but do no thing; nay, fo stubborn were he and his Friends that they would neither pay the Fines that wer laid upon them, nor be at the Charge of transport ing themselves out of the Country, tho they wer offered their Liberty upon that Condition, no fo much as pay the Goaler his Fees. In thor they were as perverie and obstinate in Prison out of it, infomuch that the Goaler was force at last to lay the Case before the Magistrate who thereupon ordered him. " twice a Week if they would not work, and the " first time to add five Stripes to the former ter and each time after to add three more, an the two Constables of the Town to be profession from the Execution." But Harris and harrise and harris they refolved to die rather than submit, and or of them was almost whipp'd to Death upon th Order; but when Harris had suffered a secon Whipping, some of his Friends paid his Charge and so he was dissimissed. And this became a terwards the usual Practice of the Quakers, no to pay their own Fees, but to suffer others to it for them . But when the Prisoners had Friends to affift them, the Court was forced rid their Hands of them as well as they coul as appears from the Cafe of Daniel and Provide Soutbick, who being fined Ten Pounds for n comi

New-England judged, p. 107.

NEW-ENGLAND. 323
mming to Meeting, and refusing to work or pay
the Money, were ordered to be fold to the Planations. The Order of the Court ran thus:

.1658

arches

much Vomer

and

licturb

he wa

ection

ke th

oke i

do no

riends

t wer

nfport

y wer

ne ne

Thor

Ion :

force

trate

ther

nd th

er ter

e prind h

thod

id or

on th

[econ

arge

me a

s, n

to a

ced

coul

ovid

or n

omi

THEREAS Daniel and Provided Soutbick, "Son and Daughter of Lawrence Soutbick, have been fined by the Courts of Salem and Ipswirb, pretending they have no Estates, resolving not to work; and others have been fined for fiding with the Quakers, and absenting themselves from publick Ordinances; in Aprwer to what shall be done for the Satisfaction of the Fines, the Court upon Perusal of a Law which was made upon the Account of Debts, refolves that the Treasurers of the several Counties are and shall be fully empowered to fell the said Perions to any of the English Plantations at Virginia or Barbadoes, to answer the said Fines, Ge." Edward Rawson, Secr.

I AM apr to think this Order was made wher to terrify the Quakers, than with a length to be put in Execution; for when withink and his Wife had been thoroughly ighten'd, they were fent home without any or there a lingle Instance be given of any one that was sold for the Payent of his Fees.

SEVERAL private Meetings of the Quakers tere discovered about this Time in Salzm, loston, and other Places; about the latter End June Twenty were taken at the House of liebolas Phelps in the Woods about five Miles from Salem, among whom were two Foreigners, Villiam Brend and William Leddra, who were to the House of Correction at Boston; and aving received ten Lashes, were told they might ave their Liberty, paying their Fees, and hiring Y 2

the Marshal to convey them out of the Country, but they refused to depart, and were therefore whipp'd more severely, till some of their Friends laid down the Money, and so they were dis-

Difady

paffion

gainst the A

them.

hem,

punish

directe

from t

provok at thei

to ban

the W

Afte

ever of t

but

app

gist

mia

Con

the

faid

to r

of I

Tria

to b

tenc

and

bein

ther

the

by t

tices

and

tl

charged.

IT now appeared that the Inhabitants of Sa lem enclined very much to the Opinion of the Quakers, for more Families in that little Village deferted the publick Worship than in Boston is felf, and this they did in Defiance of a very fe vere Law which Enacted . "That every Per fon or Persons called Quakers arising from 46 among themselves, and professing any of their es pernicious Ways by speaking, writing, meet ing together on the Lord's Day, or any other "Time, should pay to the Country 10 Shillings s and every one speaking in such a Meeting 5 Pounds, and in case any such Persons had been scourged, or whipp'd the first Time according ding to the former Laws, that then they frould " be kept at Work in the House of Correction till they put in Security, by two fufficient Men that they shall not any more vent their hate ful Errors, nor use their finful Practices; o fhall depart the Jurifdiction at their own Charge and if they return, to fuffer as in the case of "Foreigners." and I at your a tribund any and

Several Persons and Families were rulned by the Execution of these Laws, for no sooner did they absent themselves from the publick Worship, but Enquiry was made where they were and whether they had not been at some private Meeting of Quakers; if they were silent, or could not give a good Account of themselves, the were watched by the Informers, who quickly laid their Hands upon them. But such was the enthusiastick Fire of the Quakers, that nothing could quench it: The Sect grew under all the Disadvantage

New England judged, p. 29.

658.

refore

riend

e dif

of Sa

of the

illag

on it

Per

from

thei

meet

other

llings

ecting

s had accor

hould

ction

Men

hate

S ; 0

iarge afe o

1111

ed b

r di

Wor

were

rivat

coul

the

rick

as th thin

the

tage

Disadvantages, and several Families went over to it; their Sufferings serv'd only to raise the Compassions of the People, and open their Mouths against the publick Ministers of the Country, as the Authors of all the Severities used against them. No Methods were effectual to suppress them, for no sooner was one Party of Quakers punish'd and sent out of the Country as the Law directed, but another was immediately detached from their Head-Quarters in Rhode-Island, which provok'd the Magistrates to such a Degree, that at their next General Court they pass'd a Law to banish all foreign Quakers upon Pain of Death; the Words are these;

After the Preamble declaring the Reasons of

their Proceedings, it follows \*:

- "This Court doth order and enact, that every Person or Persons of the accursed Sect of the Quakers, which is not an Inhabitant of, but is found within this Jurisdiction, shall be apprehended without Warrant, where no Magistrate is at Hand, by any Constable, Commissioner, or select Man, and conveyed from Constable to Constable, until they come before the next Magistrate, who shall commit the faid Person or Persons to close Prison, there to remain without Bail until the next Court of Affistants, where they shall have a legal Trial by a special Jury, and being convicted to be of the Sect of Quakers, shall be fentenc'd to be banished upon Pain of Death; and that every Inhabitant of this Jurisdiction being convicted to be of the aforefaid Sect, either by taking up, publishing, or defending the horrid Opinions of the Quakers, - or by taking up their absurd and destructive Practices, viz. denying civil Respects to Equals, and Reverence to Superiors, and withdrawing " from

<sup>\*</sup> J. Whiting's Answer to Dr. Mather. p. 27.

by a

gal Ju

Fo

his La

Marm

bire,

Leddra Rbode-

hended

were :

the Ju

soua 1

Mand,

all thr

mr, al

Cause.

they h

all the

Obedier

were f

to this

" and " from

" Imp

" Ban " from

then a

Willian

desiting

Senten

back to

thence i

Gallow

nothin

venson

Paper Effect,

" in

" he v

from our Church-Assemblies, and instead thereof frequent private Meetings of their own, ---- or by adhering to, or approving of any known Quaker, or condemn ing the Practice of Proceeding of this Coun against the Quakers, —— Every such Per-son upon Examination and legal Conviction " before the Court of Affiftants shall be committed to close Prison for one Month, and then, unless they choose voluntarily to depart this Jurisdiction, shall give Bond for their good Behaviour, and appear at the next Court of Affiltants, where continuing obstinate, and refusing to retract, and reform the faid Opi-" nions and Practices, shall be sentenced to Ba-" nishment upon Pain of Death: And in case " of the aforefaid voluntary Departure, not to " remain, nor again to feturn into this Juris-

" diction without the Allowance of the Coun-

" cil first had, and published, on Penalty of be-

" ing banished on Pain of Death."

IT was with great Difficulty that this \* Law was obtained; the Court of Magistrates indeed pass'd it roundly without the Clause of being tried by a Jury, agreeing that it should be executed by a Country Court, confifting of 3 Magistrates, a Majority of whom were to give Judgment; but the Court of Deputies would by no means give their Consent, it being contrary to the Laws of England, to put Men to Death without Trial by a Jury; but the Magistrates at last, by prevailing with two of the Deputies to change Sides, carried it in the House of Deputies by the Majority of a fingle Voice, the Speaker and II being against it, and 13 for it. But the twelve that were against the Bill resolved to enter their Protests, till the others agreed to qualify

<sup>.</sup> New-England judged, p. 100.

NEW-ENGLAND, 327 thy adding those Words of being tried by a spe-

Four Quakers fuffered Death by Virtue of his Law, William Robinson of London Merchant; Marmaduke Stevenson of the East Part of Yorkhire, Countryman; Mary Dyar, and William Leddra: The three former of these coming from Rhode-Mand in the Month of June, were apprehended, and banish'd on Pain of Death, and were allowed till the 4th of September to depart the Jurisdiction; the two Men went into Pasca-Jaqua Government, and the Woman to Rhode-Mand, but returning again to Boston, they were ill three apprehended about the middle of Octoher, and carried before the Magistrates to shew Cause, why they came into the Jurisdiction after they had been banished upon Pain of Death; but all the Reply they made was, that they came in Obedience to the Call of the Lord. Next Day they were fent for again, when the Governour spoke to this Effect. " We have made many Laws, . " and endeavoured by several Ways to keep you " from us, but I find neither Whipping, nor "Imprisonment, nor cutting off of Ears, nor " Banishment upon Pain of Death, will keep you " from us; I defire not your Death." Being then asked what they had to say for themselves, William Robinson delivered in a Paper into Court defiting it might be read, which was refusid, and Sentence of Death pass'd upon him; to be carried back to the Place from whence be came, and from thence to the Place of Execution, to be hanged on the Gallows till be be dead. Stevenson and Dyar faid nothing for themselves at their Trial; but Stevension a little before his Execution gave out a Paper of Reasons of his coming to Boston to this Effect, "That as he was following his Plough, " in the East Part of Yorksbire in Old England, " he was in a fort of Rapture, and heard a fecret

1658

instead their oving

Countriction

and lepart their Coun

and Opio Ba-

cale of to urif-

be-Law

deed eing exe-

agidg-

no to ath

at to

ker he

ter

ify

"Voice, in his Conscience, saying, I have or-

dience to this Voice he left his Family and

Employment, and went first to Barbadoes in the Year 1658, and from thence to Rhode-

Mand, where, as he was visiting the Seed, the

Word of the Lord came to him again, saying, Go to Boston with thy Brother William Robinson;

" now (fays he) for yielding Obedience to this Command of the Everliving God, and not

" obeying the Commands of Men, do I suffer

st these Bonds near to Death.

Sign'd MARMADUKE STEVENSON.

Boston-Prison, in the 8th Month, 1659. But have a New Name given me, which the World knows not of, written in the Book of Life. " Ch

" len

" M

ever

again

now

were

than

betwe Chris

but W

bers (

thefe

fober

which

Worl Vindi

...

Wi

" Me

" thi

" La

" all

" of

" yet

" Pit

" Ch

" сер

" for

" tisf

" lun

" cut

" of

" tha

" pro

f cio

peć

Robinson's Paper, which was afterwards printed, was to the same Purpose; declaring the Reason of his continuing in the Jurisdiction after his Banishment to be from the Motion of the Lord in him.

On the 27th of Ottober they were all three carried to the Place of Execution, where the two Men were hanged; but when Mary Dyar was upon the Ladder she received a Pardon, and was sent away to Newport in Rhode-Island, the Place from whence she came; but being possessed with the Spirit of Martyrdom, she could not stay at home, but came again into the Jurisdiction some Time after, and was executed June 1, 1660.

Dr. Mather says, " If any enquire with what Spirit these Men died, he must fincerely

fay, that as far as he can learn they shewed

they died not like the true Martyrs of Jesus

NEW-ENGLAND. 329

or-

be-

and

does

ode-

the

ng,

on;

this

not Fer

ON.

ame

orla

in

ed.

fon

Ba-

lin

rec

the

yar

and

the

-100

uld

Ju-

ted

rith

ely

wed

m;

fus

rift

"Christ with the glorious Spirit of God rest"ing on them; but a fierce, a raging, a ful"len and a revengeful Spirit, and a Degree of
"Madness rather inspired them." But however these Executions raised a great Clamour
against the Government, and sullied the Glory

against the Government, and sullied the Glory of their former Sufferings from the Bishops; for now it appeared that the New-England Puritans were no better Friends to Liberty of Conscience than their Adversaries, and that the Question between them was not, whether one Party of Christians should have Power to oppress another, but who should have that Power? Great Numbers of the common People were offended at

bers of the common People were offended at these Proceedings, as well as the Generality of

sober Persons in the several Nations of Europe, which obliged the Magistrates to publish to the

World the following Declaration in their own

Vindication. Tho' the Justice of our Proceedings against "William Robinson, Marmaduke Stevenson and " Mary Dyar, supported by the Authority of " this Court, the Laws of this Country, and the " Laws of God, may rather persuade us to expect Encouragement and Commendation from all prudent and pious Men, than convince us " of any Necessity to apologize for the same; yet foralmuch as Men of weaker Parts out of Pity and Commisferation (a commendable and "Christian Virtue, yet easily abused, and sufceptible of finister and dangerous Impressions) " for want of a full Information may be less fatisfied, and Men of perverier Principles to calumniate us, and render us as bloody Persecutors; to fatisfy one, and stop the Mouths

"cutors; to satisfy one, and stop the Mouths

of the other, we have thought sit to declare,

that about three Years since divers Persons

professing themselves Quakers (of whose pernicious Opinions and Practices we had received

" Intelligence

The HISTORY of [An. 1659. " Intelligence from good Hands) both from Barse badees and England, arrived at Beston, whose e Persons were only secured to be sent away by " the first Opportunity without Censure or Pu-" nishment, altho' their professed Tenets, turbu-" lent and contemptuous Behaviour to Autho-" rity, would have justified a severer Animadversion; yet the Prudence of this Court was exercised only in making Provision to secure " the Peace and Order here established against their Attempts, whose Design (we were well 46 affured by our own Experience, as well as by " the Example of their Predecessors in Munster) " was to undermine and ruine the fame and " accordingly a Law was made and published, " prohibiting all Masters of Ships to bring any " Quakers into this Jurisdiction, and themselves " from coming in, on Penalty of the House of " Correction 'till they could be fent away. "Norwithstanding which by a Back-Door they es found Entrance, and the Penalty inflicted on es them proving infufficient to restrain their imes pudent and infolent Obtrusions, was encreased " by the Lofs of the Ears of those who offended " a fecond Time; which also being too weak a Defence against their impetuous and fanatick Fury, necessitated us to endeavour our Security; and upon ferious Consideration a Law was made, that fuch Persons should be ba-" nished on Pain of Death, according to the Example of England, in their Provision against " Festits, which Sentence being regularly proon nounced at the last Court of Assistants against 44 these Parties, and they either returning, or continuing prefumptuously in this Jurisdiction after the Time limited, were apprehended, and owning themselves to be the Persons banished, of were fentenced by the Court to Death, according to the Law aforesaid, which hath

ic t " U .. (

OH

.. W 14 0 " CC 10 TO

ce an " M

" P II OR ce mi

" rei

" for il Mo

" Wi " abf

TI ration, Death

trary a Forf the Te

Law n Quaker

be mad felves, Hands.

Laws ( the La Right c it were

dent Co Notice o

was by they we Treason,

God's C

Fine o

es been

59.

27-

ofe:

by

u-

ou-

bo-

ad-

Vas

ure

nft.

rell

by

er)

and

ed,

any

ves

of

ay.

hey

on

im-

fed

ded

k a

tick

cu-

aw

ba-

the

inft

010-

inft

or

tion

and

red,

ac-

nath

been

been executed on two of them, Mary Dyara " upon Petition of her Son, and the Mercy and " Clemency of this Court, had Liberty to depart within two Days, which she hath accepted " of. The Confideration of our gradual Pro-" ceedings will vindicate us from the clamou-" rous Accufations of Severity; our own just " and necessary Defence calling upon us (other "Means failing) to offer the Point which there " Persons have violently and wilfully rushed upon, and thereby became Felones de fe, which, " might it have been prevented, and the fove-" reign Law Salus Populi been preserved, our "former Proceedings, as well as the sparing Mary Dyar upon an inconfiderable Interceffion, " will manifestly evince, we defire their Lives " absent, rather than their Deaths present."

The Quakers have observed upon this Declaration, that the Law of putting Quakers to Death, which it designs to vindicate, was contrary to the Laws of England, and consequently a Forfeiture of their Charter, the Example of the Tefuits being nothing to the Purpose; for if a Law made against Jesuits may be turn'd against Quakers, by the same Way of Reasoning, it may be made Use of against the Presbyterians themklves, when the Power is lodged in proper Hands. But suppose it was not contrary to the laws of England, it was certainly contrary to the Laws of God, which allow every Man a Right of private Judgment. And further, tho it were allowed that the Quakers, by their imprudent Conduct, had justly exposed themselves to the Notice of the Civil Magistrate, yet the Offence was by no Means equal to the Punishment; for they were not proceeded against for Felony or Treason, but for Contempt of Authority, and of God's Ordinances, which might indeed deferve Fine or a Pillory, but has never been thought worthy

332. The HISTORY of [An. 1660, worthy of Death by any civilized Nation in the World.

bba.

ceiv

V

of I

upo

no

man ed,

his

had

whic

brou and

the S

WH

Law

to De

who

whet

Engli

a La

cause

Quak

Trial

contin

faying

Law

ever.

broug

was p

to con

Procee

that w

in bis .

Bur the prefent Magistrates were not to be formed by these Arguments, they were fatisfied of the Reasonableness and Necessity of their Laws. and therefore resolved to continue the Execution of them. Several Quakers were banished on Pain of Death, who never returned into the Country any more, as, Laurence and Gaffandra Soutbick, Tofiab Soutbick, S. Shattock, N. Phelps, and others, But William Leddra, a Foreigner, who had been whipp'd several Times, and turned out of the Turifdiction, and at last banished upon pain of Death, coming again to Boston this Spring, in Defiance of the Laws, was apprehended and carried before the Court of Affistants: Mr. Bradfreet asked him \*, Whether he was willing to go for England? He answered, That he had no Buffness there; he was then told, he should have his Liberty, if he would promife to return no more; to which he replied, I stand not in mine own Will, but in the Will of the Lord; if I may have my Freedom I shall go, but to make such a Promise I cannot. Mr. Bradftreet then said, That if he would neither go for England, nor promise to keep out of the Jurisdiction, he must suffer the Law : William then appealed to the Laws of England for his Trial, but his Appeal was refused. Court spent a great deal of Time in persuading him to recant his Errors, to conform to the Laws of the Country, or promife to come there no more, but he was very obstinate. What, join with such Murtherers as you (says he)! then, let every Man that meets me say, Lo! this is the Man that has for saken the God of his Salvation. At last, Sentence of Death was pass'd upon him, which was executed March 14, 1660-61; he faid little at the Gallows but this, That for bearing his Testimony

veriew.

stimony for the Lord against Deceivers and the De-

ceived, he was brought there to fuffer.

0.

he

be.

ed

VS.

on

un

ry

k,

rs.

en

he

of

in

nd

ad-

go

res

Lie;

祖,

-99-

not. nei-

t of

Vil-

for

he

ing

the

ere

join

let

**Lan** 

aft.

nich

ttle

Tenony

WHILE Leddra was upon his Trial, Wenlock Christison , who had been banished upon pain of Death, came boldly into Court with his Hat upon his Head, warning the Magistrates to shed no more innocent Blood; the Marshal commanded him to pluck off his Hat, but he replied, No, I shall not. He was then asked, whether his Name was not Christison, and whether he had not been banished upon pain of Death, which he confessing, was sent to Prison; he was brought upon his Trial in the Month of May, and made the best Defence for his Life of any of the Quakers that went before him : Being afked. What he had to fay, why he should not suffer the Law, he asked, by what Law they would put him to Death? The Court answered, by the late Law made against Quakers; he then defired to know who empowered them to make that Law. and whether it was not repugnant to the Laws of England? The Governour replied, that there was a Law in England to hang Jesuits; but Wenlock answered, If you put me to Death, 'tis not because I go under the Names of a Jesuit, but a Quaker: I appeal to the Laws of my own Nation. The Court told him, he should have a fair Trial for his Life, by a Bench and Jury; but he continued to appeal to the Laws of England, laving, He had never read, nor heard of any Law that was in England to hang Quakers; however, the Court over-ruled his Plea, and the Juny brought him in guilty. When Sentence of Death was pronounced upon him, he defired the Court to consider what they had gained by their cruel Proceedings against the Quakers; For the last Man that was put to Death, (fays he) bere are five come in bis Room, and if you have Power to take my Life

334 The HISTORY of [An. 1661.

from me, God can raise up the same Principle of Liste in ien of his Servants, and send them among you in my Raom, thet you may have Torment upon Torment. What Effect this Speech had upon them I can't determine, but before the 13th of June, which was the Day appointed for his Execution, he was set at Liberty, and conducted out of the Jurisdiction, together with 27 Quakers more, then in Prison. The E Court began to be sensible that the putting Men to Death for their religious Principles, was odious in the Eye of the World; that in the Case of the Quakers it did not answer their Ends, for the more they perfecuted, the more bloody Work they had upon their Hands; and therefore they resolved for the suture, only so whip them at the Cart's-Tail, as Vagabonds, thro all the Towns in their Way, out of the Jurisdiction. Tis possible likewise, that the Change of Government in England

might make them act with more Caution, for the Quakers were very buly about this Time in foliciting King Charles the Second, to put a Stop to the Hardships of their Friends in New-England, and at last, they obtained the following Order,

cufe I go under the Names RESTRAN

well. Having been informed, that feveral of our Subjects among you called Quakers, have been, and are imprisoned by you, whereof some have been executed, and others (as hath been represented to us) are in Danger to undergo the like; We have shought it to signify our Pleasure in that Behalf for the future, and do hereby require, That if there be any of shose Reople called Quakers amongst you, now already condemned to suffer Death, or other corporal Punishment, or that are imprisoned, and obnoxious to the like Condemnation.

tion for been property large of New

THI of the

the Ha

this L

100

th fa

" to

" Co

e be

" yo

" at c

\*\* 13

the Qua

em mouth P

51.

eje

in

nt. nt

ich

let

on,

on.

ous

the

did

fe-

the

29

ay, ife,

and

for in

to

nd.

ler,

(2)

7QU

fe-

49-

ou,

ars

30-

the

ctd

gft

uth,

IM-

em-

ion.

"nation, you are to forbear to proceed any fur"ther therein, but that you forthwith fend the
"faid Persons (whether condemned, or impri"soned) over into this our Kingdom of England,
"together with their respective Crimes or Of"fences laid to their Charge, to the End such
"Course may be taken with them here, as shall
be agreeable to our Laws and their Demerits,
and for so doing, these our Letters shall be
your sufficient Warrant and Discharge. Given
at our Court at Whiteball, Sept. 9, 1661, in the

13th Year of our Reign.

Subscribed, To our trusty and well-beloved John Endicots, Esq; and to all and
every other the Governour or Governours of our Plantation of New-England,
and of all the Colonies thereunto belonging that now are, or hereafter shall
be; and to all and every the Ministers
and Officers of our said Plantation and
Colonies whatsoever within the Continent of New-England, By His Majesty's Command.

William Morris

This put an effectual Stop to the Sufferings of the Quakers on the Account of their Principles, the Hands of the Government being tied up by this Letter from putting their Laws in Execution for the future; fome of them indeed have been punished fince, as Vagabonds and Criminals against the State, but none that I know of, purely for their Sentiments in Religion.

It ought to be observed, that all the Colonies of New-England were not equally severe against the Quakers: They suffer'd but little in the Jurisdictions of Connecticut and New-Haven, but Plymouth Patent copied after the Massachusets, as ap-

=

pears

The HISTORY of [An. 1661. pears by the following Abstract of Capt. James Cudworth's Letter to his Friend in London, dated December 10, 1658.

" f

.. ]

( t " T

" tl

( t

ii ar

" to

ii in

"m

" 4

" th

" bo

" fta

" ot

" bed

" sen

" Di

" and

" the

wh

fon

Ad

the

" 1

13,-

any

or o

cher

laft

appi

by b

mise

pay

and

ance

Frie

VOL

dep

ful

S for the \* State and Condition of Things " amongst us (says he) it is sad, and like to to continue; the Antichristian perfecuting Spirit is very active, and that in the Powers of this World; he that will not whip " and lash, persecute and punish Men that differ un Matters of Religion, must not sit on the "Bench, nor fultain any Office in the Commonwealth. Last Election Mr. Hatberly and myse felf left off the Bench, and I was discharged of my Captainship, because I had entertain'd of the Quakers at my House (that I might ce be the better acquainted with their Principles): 1 thought it better so to do, than with the blind World to censure, condemn, rail at, and se revile them, when they neither law their Perof fons, nor knew any of their Principles; but " the Quakers and myself can't close in divers "Things; and fo I fignified to the Court I was on o Quaker, but must bear my Testimony a-" gainst fundry Things that they held, as I had . Occasion and Opportunity; but withat I told them, that as I was no Quaker, fo I would be on Persecutor; this Spirit did work those two Years that I was of the Magistracy, during which Time I was on fundry Occasions forced " to declare my Diffent in fundry Actings of " that Nature, which tho' done with all Mode-" ration, and due Respect, yet wrought great Disaffection and Prejudice in them against me, and produced a Petition to the Court against me, fign'd with 19 Hands, which was follow'd with another in my Favour, fign'd with 54 The Court return'd in An-" Hands .ee swer

larent cooled a ter the didded left, as ep-· New-England judged, p. 169.

61.

ames

ated

17

ings

and

erle-

the

whip

iffer

the

nonmy-

d of

ight

les):

the

and

Per-

but

ivers

was

y 2-

had

told

d be

EWO

iring

orced

gs of

lode-

great

me,

gainst

ow'd

h 54

An-

**fwer** 

" fwer to the last Petition, That they acknow-" ledged my Parts and Gifts, and professed, " they had nothing against me, only in the " Thing of my giving Entertainment to Quakers, " tho' I break no Law in so doing, for our Law " then was, --- If any entertain a Quaker, " and keep bim after be is warned by a Magistrate " to depart, be shall pay 20 s. a Week for entertain-" ing bim. But fince that, a Law has been " made, That if any entertain a Quaker, tho' but " a quarter of an Hour, be shall forfeit 51. " ther, - That if any see a Quaker, be is " bound, the be lives fix miles or more from a Con-" other, --- That if the Constable know, or " bear of any Quaker in bis Precincts, be is pre-" sently to apprehend him, and if he will not presently depart the Town, to whip, and fend him away. "Divers have been whipp'd within our Patent; " and truly, to tell you plainly, the whipping of " them with that Cruelty, as some have been whipp'd, and their patience under it, hath fometimes been the Occasion of gaining more Adherents to them, than if they had fuffered them openly to have preached a Sermon. " ANOTHER Law made against the Quakers

is,——That if there be a Quakers-Meeting any where in this Colony, the Party in whose House, or on whose Ground it is, shall pay 40s. the Preacher 40s. and every Hearer 40s.—Our last Law is,—That the Quakers are to be apprehended, and carried before a Magistrate, and by him committed to close Prison, till they will promise to depart, and never come again, and will also pay their Fees (neither of which they will ever do) and they must be kept only with the Country Allowance (which is coarse Bread and Water). No Friend may bring them any thing, nor be permit-Vol. I.

338 The HISTORY of [An. 1661."

ted to speak to them; nay, if they have Money of their own, they may not make Use of it to relieve themselves.

"In the Massachusets, after they have whipp'd them, and cut off their Ears, they have now at last gone the surthest Step they can; they have banished them upon pain of Death if ever they come there again; we expect we must do the like; we must dance after their Pipe, for

" be their Apes and Imitators in all their Proceedings of this Nature."

"All these carnal and antichristian Ways, being not of God's Appointment, effect nothing as to the obstructing or hindring them in their Way or Course: It is only the Word and Spirit of the Lord that is able to convince Gainsayers; these are the mighty Weapons of a Christian's Warfare, by which great and mighty Things are done and accomplished.

"The Quakers have many Meetings and

" it is well if in some there be not a Desire to

"many Adherents, almost the whole Town of Sandwich is adhering towards them; and give me leave a little to acquaint you with their Sufferings, which is grievous to, and saddens the Hearts of most of the precious Saints of God; it lies down and rifes up with them,

"and they cannot put it out of their Minds.—
"The Massachusets have banished fix on pain of
"Death, and I wish that Blood be not shed:

"But our poor People are pillaged and plunders ed of their Goods, and haply, when they have no more to fatisfy their unfatiable Defire, may

" be forced to fly, and glad they have their Lives for a Prey.

"As for the Means by which they are impoverished, those in the first Place were their ferupling an Oath; upon which all were called upon to take the Oath of Fidelity; which

they

e fu

ned

e th

oth the

this have the the

Tue/ to Mee

Wee and Twe Ten

Poun Broth Barnj came was

What tices to "Our of Re Time

the cinow hof this State 1

nance, Lord 5 must a

they refusing, a Clause was added. That if any Man refused or neglected to take it by fuch a Time, he should pay Five Pounds, or " depart the Colony: When the Time is come. they are the fame as before; then goes out the " Marshal, and fetcheth away their Cows and other Cattle. Well, another Court comes, and

I.

of.

we.

p'd

WO

ley.

ver

do

for

to

ro-

lys,

ing

neir

and

nce

s of

and

and

of

TIVE

heir

dens

s ot

em,

----

n of

ned:

der-

nave

may

ives

im

their

alled

hich

the

they are required to take the Oath again, ---they cannot,---then Five Pounds more. On this Account Thirty-five Head of Cattle, as I

have been credibly informed, hath been, by the Authority of our Court, taken from them the latter Part of this Summer .---

" The last Court of Affistants, the first Tuefday of this Instant, the Court was pleased to determine Fines on Sandwich Men for Meetings on the first Day of the Week, and other Days, (for they meet ordinarily twice a Week befides the Lord's Day) an Hundred and fifty Pounds whereof W. Newland is Twenty-four Pounds for himself and Wife, at Ten Shillings a Meeting; W. Allen Forty-fix Pounds, and a poor Wedver Twenty Pounds. Brother Cook told me. One of the Brethren at Barnstable was in the House when the Marshal came to demand the Money, when all that he was worth did not amount to Ten Pounds. What will be the End of fuch Courfes or Pracfices the Lord only knows!

"Our civil Powers are so exercised in Matters of Religion and Confcience, that we have no Time to do any thing that tends to promote the civil Prosperity of the Place. We must now have a State Religion, such as the Powers of this World will allow, and no other; a State Ministry, and a State Way of Maintenance, and we must worship and serve the Lord Fefus as the World shall appoint us; we

must all go to the publick Place of Meeting \* in

"I am informed of Three or Fourscore last " Court presented for not coming to publick " Meetings, at Ten Shillings a Time. Certainly we have either less Wit or more Money than the Massachusets, for a Man may stay away there for Five Shillings a Day, till it come to Twelve or Thirteen Pounds, if he has but " Money to pay. WE are wrapped up in a Labyrinth of con-" fused Laws, that the Freemens Power is quite " gone. Sandwich Men may not go to the Bay, " lest they be taken up for Quakers. W. Newland was there about his Occasions Ten Days ago, " and they put him in PrisonTwenty-four Hours and fent for divers to witness against him, bu they had not Proof enough to make him 20 Quaker, which if they had, he should have been whipped; nay, they may not go about their et Occasions in other Towns in our Colony but Warrants lie in Ambush to apprehend and bring them before a Magistrate to give a Account of their Bufiness. Some of the Qua kers in Rhode-Mand came to bring them Goods to trade with them on more reasonable Term than the Merchants of the Country, but that will not be suffered; so that unless the Lor of flep in to their Help and Affistance, their Case fad, and to be pitied, and truly, it move Bowels of Compassion in all Sorts, except thos in Place, who carry it with a high Hand to wards them thro' Mercy, we have yo among us worthy Mr. Dunftar, whom the Lor hath made boldly to bear his Testimony again " the Spirit of Perfecution." James Cudworth

340 . The HISTORY of [An. 1661.

" in the Parish where we dwell, or be presented.

worth bod ferve the Bur after so long a Narrative of Matters Fact, 'tis but reasonable that I acquaint the Reade with New the . three

Fi

feem

idd

They Rule their the L Shuba by.

cient

called fay th Fi/ber are in Rule, is inf They

divine Bones, direct withou ting fa

the Pe

out an one, ar lays, carnal

God an nied t faying Godhe

denied taining

\* Mel 1, 63. Great M

-bindaMi do

66 I.

sted.

laft

olick

inly

than

way

e to

but

con-

quite

Bay,

vland

ago.

ours,

bu

im a

beer

thei

lony

d and

re at

Qua

000

erm

t tha

Lor

Case

nove

thol

d to

e ye

Lor

gain

worth

ers o

with the Motives, that push'd the Government of New-England upon such violent Measures, against the Quakers, which may be reduced to these three:

First, THEIR new and strange Opinions which seem'd to sap the very Foundations of Christianity. They denied the Holy Scriptures to be the only Rule of their Faith and Manners, and advanced their Light within in the Place of it; the Spirit of the Lord is our Rule, (said one of them to Mr. Shubael Dummer) and ought to be all Mens to walk This Light within they affirmed to be fufficient to Salvation without any thing elfe; and called them blind Beafts and Liars, who should fay that the Scriptures reveal God to us. Fisher says, The Scriptures are not God's Voice, they are in some Things fallible, and so not fit to be the Rule, but the Light of Christ in the Heart; this is infallible, the only Guide, Law, and Rule \*. They advanced new and strange Notions about the Person of Christ, calling him † a certain beavenly divine Body, constituted of invisible Flesh, Blood, and Bones, in which he came down from Heaven; and they directed the People not to look so much to Christ without them, as to Christ within. 70bn Wbiling fays, The Quakers believe both in a Christ without and a Christ within, but not as two Christs, but George Fox. one, and the same without as within. lays, Your imagined God beyond the Stars, and your carnal Christ is utterly denied; to say this Christ is God and Man in one Person is a Lie §. They denied the received Doctrine of the Holy Trinity, laying that the Doctrine of three Persons in the Godhead was introduced by the Pope ||. denied the Morality of the Sabbath, taining that every Day was equally the Lord's,

<sup>\*</sup> Messages of the Lord, p. 19, 21. † Answer to Mather, p. 63. §. The Sword of the Lord drawn, p. 5. || Fox's Great Mystery, p, 246.

and that there was no particular Day chosen or fet apart by God for divine Worthip. They denied the two Sacraments of Baptism and the Lord's Supper, calling them carnal Ordinances, and teaching the People, that there was no other Baptism under the Gospel Dispensation, but the Baptilm of the Holy Ghoff, and no other Supper of the Lord but Drinking the Wine new in the Kingdom of Heaven. They condemned the Prayers and Preachings of the publick Ministers, as carnal and wicked; they reviled their Persons, calling them Priests of Baal, Hirelings, Deceivers of the People, and exhorted them to defert their Market-houses (as they called their Meeting places) on Pain of the feverest Judgments of Almighty God. The spreading of these new and ftrange Doctrines alarmed the Clergy of the Country, and made them not only preach boldly against them, but call for the Assistance of the civil Magistrate, to preserve the Purity of Religion, and prevent the Confusions they were falling into.

But, Secondly, The Magistrates and Ministers of New-England were not only offended at the Quakers Dostrines, but at their seditious and riotous Manner of spreading them; for when a Man or Woman was moved by the Spirit of the Lord, they would leave their Families and Employments, and ramble over the whole Province to gain Profelytes: They would infinuate themfelves into private Families, and endeavour, by a Pretence to Inspiration, to draw them from the publick Assemblies. It was for this that Edward Wharton of Salem was whipp'd through feveral Towns, being told, that if he would flay at home and mind his Business, he might have his Liberty. Several of the Quakers went thro' the Streets of the most populous Towns in the Country, and in a publick Manner denounced the Judgments of God upon the People, except they repented. George Wilson went thro' the Streets of Boston, crying

cryin forth Eliz. cloat they Afhe in the when Debor fide

of Co Perfor Actio " mo " Co " the

" ple

Street

which

" as a
" (fay
" app
" wice
In the

the M eted, i mer Meffag People

Bu phefy entred People up in a

\* Ne

accepte

661.

osen

They

the

and

other

t the

other

new

l the

lters,

fons,

ecei-

efert

ting-

s of

and

oun-

ainst

Ma-

and

fters

the

and

en a

the

Em-

rince

em-

by a

the

vard

reral

ome

erty.

ts of

d in

s of

ted.

ston,

People.

crying with a loud Voice, that the Lord was coming forth with Fire and Sword to plead with Boston; and Eliz, Hooton did the like at Cambridge. And to cloath their Message with the greater Terror. they covered themselves with Sackcloth, and put Ashes on their Heads. Four Women appeared in the Court at Boston \* in this rueful Figure. when Wenlock Christifon was upon his Trial; nay, Deborah Wilson was so impudent, that laying afide the Modesty of her Sex, she went thro' the Streets of Salem stark naked as she was born, for which she was apprehended and fent to the House of Correction: One would think, that no fober Person should appear in Vindication of such an Action, and yet G. Bishop + represents her, as a " modest Woman of a retired Life, and sober " Conversation; and that bearing a great Bur-" then for the Hardness and Cruelty of the Peo-" ple, she went thro' the Town of Salem naked " as a Sign, which she having in part performed " (fays he) was laid hold on, and bound over to appear at the next Court of Salem, where the " wicked Rulers fentenced her to be whipp'd." In short, the whole Province was fadly disturbed by these itinerant Prophets, and Prophetesses, and the Minds of the People were continually disquieted, there being feldom a Month in the Summer Time, wherein one or other had not a Message to deliver after this Manner to the

But the Quakers were not content to prophefy in the Streets, and High-ways, but they entred the Meeting-Houses and disturbed the People at their Devotions: Humphry Norton stood up in the Meeting-House at Boston after Sermon, and said §, Verily, this is the Sacrifice which the Lord accepteth not, for whilst with the same Spirit that ye sin,

24 98

New-England judged, p. 340, in the Margin, 4 Ibid. p. 388. § Ibid. p. 72.

100

Bt the C

born

to A

to fe

fpect

remo

a De

strate

make

Behav

Christ broug

their

be tal

upon

the F

cent l

der n

would

nor p

tellig

Court

afked

could

we live

them

(it m

turb

with

of th

what

mit t Secur

havio

Jurisc some

these

ye preach and pray, and fing, that Sacrifice is an Abomination to the Lord. Another time, Tho. Newbouse went into the Meeting-House \* with a Couple of great Glass-Bottles, and breaking them against one another in the Face of the Congregation, faid. Thus will the Lord break you in pieces. Margaret Brewster went into the Meeting-House another time, with her Face smeered all over as black as a Coal &, as a Sign (fays the Author) of the black Pox, which was to come among them. Lydia Wardwell, Wife of Eliakim Wardwell of Hampton, went at the Time of Divine Service into the Meeting-House at Newbury, as naked as she was born t, which put the Congregation into fuch Disorder that they could not proceed in their Worship, till some of the Congregation had laid hold of her, and carried her to the House of Correction, where she received twenty or thirty

Lashes at the Whipping-post.

Such Methods of Reformation are not only riotous but infamous: If the Quakers had wrought Miracles, or produced any other fufficient Credentials of their divine Mission, they ought to have been received in any Form; but to suppose the World must believe them to be Prophets and Prophetesses without the least external Evidence, merely because they themselves say so, or because they have the Assurance to go about Streets in a ludicrous Manner, denouncing the Judgments of God against their Adversaries, is the most absurd Conclusion in the World. I am fatisfied the Modern Quakers cannot approve of these Things, and their present Conduct is a Proof of it; for we hear no more of their Agitations, their Prophefyings in the Streets, and their Disturbing the Assemblies of other Christians; they are content with the Liberty of Worshipping God, in their own Way, without troubling themselves about other People. Bur,

<sup>\*</sup> New-England judged, p. 431. § Answer to Mather, p. 103. † New-England judged, p. 376.

fe

le

st

n,

7-

ock

he

n.

of

to

he

ch

eir

iid

of

rty

nly

ght

re-

to

ole

ind

ce,

be-

eets

dg-

the

am

of

s a

gi-

and

isti-

or-

ou-

UT,

, p.

But, Thirdly, Another thing that disgusted the Government of New-England, was the stubborn and difrespectful Behaviour of the Quakers to Authority: It was a new thing in those Times to fee People refuse the common Titles of Refpect to their Superiors, and deny them the Ceremony of the Hat; this was apprehended to be a Denial of the Authority of the Civil Magistrate, though 'tis now known that the Quakers make it a Part of their Religion: But their rude Behaviour in Court was very provoking; Wharton, Christison, Mary Tomkins, and some others, being brought before Deputy Governour Billingham with their Hats on their Heads, he ordered them to be taken off and thrown on the Ground; whereupon Mary Tomkins setting her Foot on one of the Hats, calls out to the Governour in an indecent Manner, faying, See I bave your Honour under my Feet. Besides, they would not comply with any of the Usages of the Country, they would neither hold up their Hands at the Bar, nor plead to their Indictments, nor give an intelligible Answer to any Questions which the Court asked them. When Mary Tomkins was asked, Where she dwelt? All the Answer they could get was, that she lived in God; for in him we live, and move, and have our Beings. Court had an immense deal of Trouble with them; for when one was at the Bar, half a Score (it may be) would come into Court, and difturb the Process, by threatning the Magistrates with the Vengeance of God. And when any of the Quakers were convicted, they knew not what to do with them, for they would not fubmit to any of their Orders; they would give no Security to the Government for their good Behaviour at Home, nor would they depart the Jurisdiction with a Promise not to return. When some of them were offered there Liberty upon these Terms, they refused it, saying, They were

44 ]

46

44 1

44

66 1

...

66 U

ce t

ce p

66 W

"

" C

es fo

ce al

46 ju

er to

" S

ec ha

« ed

" th

" al

" B

concl

« no

" for

e on

" bre

e ten

" ftr

" we

" OF

" by

" to

" wit

" bee

Opinio

his ci

gious from

Bu

at the Will of the Lord; the Lord commanded them to do as they did; and should the Government send them never so far away, if the Lord commanded them they would return. They would not pay the Fines that were laid upon them, nor work in Prifon, tho' they were whipped to Death for not doing it. In short, the Quakers would suffer any thing, but would do nothing at the Command of the Magistrate; and this is the true Reason why many of them suffered a great deal more Damage in their Goods and Chattels than otherwife they would. Now the Quakers themselves confess, that a turbulent and provoking Carriage to the Government we live under, requires the Notice of the Civil Magistrate, and for this Reason their Friends in Pensilvania fined and imprisoned George Keith, and obliged him to leave the Province; tho' I am of Opinion it was not merely for his Crimes against the State, but for his new Doctrines, which had like to have made a Schism among them: But however, if turbulent and feditious Persons, who disquiet the Minds of People, disturb the Peace of the Government, and refuse Obedience to their Superiors, ought to be punished, I leave all Mankind to judge whether the Behaviour of the Quakers in New-England did not absolutely require the Interpolure of the Civil Magistrate in this Way, for the Preservation of the publick Peace.

THE General Court, in their Address of Congratulation to King Charles the Second on his Restoration, have endeavoured to justify the Whole of their Proceedings against the Quakers from the forementioned Topicks; they tell the King, "That the Quakers were open capital Blasphemers; open Seducers from the glorious Trinity, the Lord Christ, the blessed Gospel, and from the Holy Scriptures, as the Rule of

Life; open Enemies to Government itself, as " established in the Hands of any but Men of their own Principles; malignant Promoters of Doctrines directly tending to subvert both our " Church and State."--- They add further,----"That after all other Means, for a long Time " used in vain, they were at last constrained for their own Safety to pass a Sentence of Banish-" ment against them upon pain of Death; such was their dangerous, impetuous and desperate "Turbulency in Religion, and to the State " Civil and Ecclefiaftical; as that how unwilling " foever, could it be avoided, the Magistrate, " at least in Conscience both to God and Man. " judged himself called for the Defence of all, " to keep the Passage with the Point of the "Sword held towards them. This could do no " harm (fay they) to them that would be warn-" ed thereby; their willingly rushing themselves "thereupon was their own Act; and we with " all Humility think a Crime, bringing their " Blood upon their own Heads." —— They conclude therefore, - "That the Quakers died " not because of their other Crimes, how capital " foever, but for their superadded Presumpti-" ons and incorrigible Contempt of Authority, " breaking in upon them notwithstanding the Sen-"tence of Banishment. Had they not been re-" strained, there was too much Cause to fear that " we ourselves ( say they) should quickly have died, " or worfe; and they would not be restrained but " by Death: Nay, had they at last but promised " to depart the Jurisdiction, and not to return " without Leave from Authority, we should have " been glad to have faid, they should not die." Bur after all, I must freely declare it as my Opinion, that no Man ought to be deprived of

his civil Rights upon the Account of his reli-

gious Sentiments, tho' differing never fo widely

from the established Doctrines of his Country.

61.

sem

end

em

the

Ti-

ot

ny

nd

on

ore

er-

ves

**Ige** 

he

his

nd

to

it

te,

to

W-

ho

ice

to

all

he

re-

in

ck

of

on

he

25

he

al

US

el,

of

e :

A Turk or a Jew has as much a Right to live as a Christian, and therefore to fine or imprison Men for not coming to Church, or to prohibit their Worshipping God in a peaceable Manner, according to the Light of their own Consciences; is no better than Perfecution for Confcience fake: But when Men disturb the publick Assemblies of other Christians, revile their Ministers, and terrify the Minds of People by Predictions of approaching Judgments, as the Primitive Quakers of New-England did, 'tis the Duty of the Magistrate to restrain them; for the Ministers and People of the Country had certainly as good a Right to be protected in their Way of Worship; as the Quakers had so set up a new one. Not that I think the Crimes which the Quakers were guilty of, will justify all the Severities of the Government against them; for it was very hard to take away Mens Lives for Contempt of the Court, for speaking in a peculiar Dialect, or for being guilty of some riotous and seditious Practices; nor will the present Clergy of New-England vindicate these Proceedings. Dr. Mather fays . " That he does not approve of Perse-" cution; that he abhors it; that he has preach-" ed against it, and writ against it; that he has " bewailed the Mistakes that some Men have " committed in it; that he would have the " Quakers treated with all the Civility imagina-" ble, and would not have the civil Magistrate " inflict upon them the Damage of one Farthing " for their Consciences." He tells us further t, "That his Country has fince renounced these " Laws, and declared for a just Liberty of Con-" science." I can affure the Reader, this is now the general Sense of the Country; and I heartily wish that such generous Sentiments may prevail in all other Parts of the World.

CHAP.

Hill

2

-90

(200

no

-i.i bn

-111

CI

boo

10

-111

140

priz

-00

E I

.

-di

dol

Pof

- 9

1



61. ive Con bit

er, es,

ce:

of er-

ap-

ers

Ja-

ind

a

ıp;

lot

ere

the ırd

he

for

ac-

200

10-

fe-

h-

125

ve he

12ate

ng

+, ele

n-

W

11-

e-

P.

# CHAP. VIII.

The Colonies address King Charles the Second on his Restoration. The Submission of Alexander King of the Wompanoags. Determinations of a Synod about Baptism of Infants. A List of filenced Ministers that settled in New-England after the Act of Uniformity in 1662. The Deaths and Characters of the Reverend Mr. John Norton, and Samuel Newman. The Expedition of the English Fleets against the Dutch Settlements on Hudson's River. The Deaths and Characters of John Endicott, Esq; and of the Reverend Mr. John Wilson, and Mr. Jonathan Mitchel. A Continuation of the Sufferings of the Anabaptists, and a Letter of the Non-Conformist Ministers in England upon that Head. The Complaints of the Quakers, with the New-England Ministers Reply to them. The Deaths and Characters of the Reverend Mr. Richard Mather, John Davenport, and Mr. Charles Chauncy, President of the College. Harvard-College enlarged. Execution of Pyrates. Death and Character of Thomas Prince, Efg;

HE Government of New-England submitted to all the 1661. Changes that were in England for the last Twenty Years; they, owned the Parliament, acquiesced in the Commonwealth, submitted to the Protector,

and

The HISTORY of An. 1661. and now at last, upon the Restoration of King Charles the Second, they fent over Simon Bradfreet, Esq; Secretary of the Maffachuset Colony, and the Reverend Mr. John Norton, with an Address of Congratulation to his Majesty, upon his Accession to the Throne of his Ancestors, in which, after Expressions of their Loyalty, and Endeavours to justify their Conduct towards the Quakers, as the Reader has observed in the last Chapter, they go on to implore his Majesty's Protection of them in the free Exercise of their Religion. "We fupplicate your Majesty (Jay they) for your gracious Protection of us, in the Con-"tinuance both of our Civil and Religious Liberties, according to the Grantees known End of fuing for the Patent conferr'd upon this Plantation by your Royal Father. Our Liberty to walk in the Way of the Gospel, with all good Conscience, according to the Order of the Gosee pel, was the Caufe of our transporting ourof select with our Wives, our little ones, and our . Substance, from that pleasant Land, over the "Atlantick Ocean into the vaft Wilderness, chooif fing rather the pure Scripture-Worship with a " good Conscience in this remote Wilderness, than the Pleasures of England, with Submission to the Impositions of the then so disposed, and so far prevailing Hierarchy, which we could not do without an evil Conscience.— We are not feditious, as to the Interest of " Cafar, nor schismatical, as to Matters of Re-" ligion. We diftinguish between Churches and " their Impurities .- We could nor live without " the publick Worthip of God, nor be permitted " the publick Worthip, without fuch a Yoke " of Subscription and Conformity, as we could " not confent unto without Sin. That we might therefore enjoy Divine Worthip without human Mixtures, without Offence to God, Man, es and

" ar " bi " C " th recei

back Expt were Privi ragen

Coun their too I than Norto

his F Peopl Found ftruck fuch a

Death

Old Wams of Plys given der Br notwit

thip to Inform the ele fets to Genera

mouth: Courag of no i in the

his Hu Breaft, of Deat

I.

SI.

**|**-

is

n

d

10

ft

s

e-

y)

n-

j-

be

n-

to

bc

of-

ır-

ur

he

0-

a

ſs,

ıb-

lif-

ch —

of

le-

nd

out

ted

ke.

old

zht

hu-

an, ind " and our own Consciences, We with Leave. "but not without Tears, departed from our Country, Kindred, and Fathers Houses into "this Patmos." Dr. Mather fays, the King received their Address very graciously, and sent back Letters to the Colony, fignifying, that the Expressions of their Loyalty and Affection to him were very acceptable; that he would confirm their Privileges, and give them all manner of Encouragement and Protection; but it's plain the Country was not fatisfied with the Conduct of their Agents; whether they flatter'd the Court too much, or promised more for their Country than they ought, is uncertain; but when Mr. Norton came home about the Month of September, his Friends were shy of him, and some of the People told him to his Face, that he had laid the Foundation of the Ruin of their Liberties, which struck him to the Heart, and brought him into fuch a melancholy Habit of Body, as haftened his Death.

Old Massassiet being dead, his two Sons Wamfutta and Metacomet came to the Court 1662. of Plymouth, defiring to have English Names given them I whereupon the Court named the elder Brother Alexander, and the younger Philip. But notwithstanding their high Pretensions of Friendship to the English at this Time, the Court had Information a few Months after, that Alexander the elder Brother was foliciting the Narrhaganlets to make War upon them; whereupon Major General Winflow was fent to bring him to Plymouth: The Major used such Expedition, and Courage in the Affair, that with the Affiftance of no more than ten men, he surprized Alexander in the midst of a Croud of Attendants at one of his Hunting-Houses, and clapping a Pistol to his Breaft, commanded him to furrender, on Pain of Death, and go with him to Plymouth; the Sachem seeing no Remedy, was forced to submit, only requesting that he might go like a Prince, with his Attendants and Followers, which was granted him: The Major offered him a Horse, but his Squaw and other Indian Women being on Foot, he refused it. The Governor treated him with great Humanity and Respect, but his great Spirit swelling with Revenge for the Disgrace he was under, threw him into a slow Fever, which in a little Time cost him his Life.

bas

, 7913

The

the land

-mag

SE g

Clo

Mo

Dar Gu G

the

of t

Sacr

had

tanco

Min

of th

or ar

of th

And

the (

rife v

Colo

whol

their

Orde

the E

the 1

Sprin

neral

to be

Vo

es the

in a little Time cost him his Life. His Brother Philip succeeded him, a bold and daring young Man, who thought it his Inrerest nevertheless to comply with the Demands of the English at present, and accordingly made his Appearance at the Court held at Plymouth, August the 6th, and earnestly defired the Continuance of that Amity and Friendship that had been between the Governor of Plymouth and his deceased Father and Brother, " Promising at 46 the same Time, for himself and his Successors, " to remain Subjects to the King of England, " his Heirs and Successors, and truly and exactly "to observe and keep inviolable such Conditions " as formerly have been by his Predecessors made, and particularly that he will not at any "Time needlesly or unjustly provoke, or raise War with any of the Natives, nor at any Time give, fell or dispose, of any Lands (to "him or them appertaining) to any Strangers, or to any without our Privity or Appointment, of but will in all Things endeavour to carry it e peaceably and inoffensively towards the Eng-" life: And the faid Court did then also express their Willingness to continue with him and " his the abovefaid Friendship, and did on their "Part promise, that they would afford them " fuch friendly Affistance, by Advice, or otherwife, as they justly might; and would require

\* New-England Mem. p. 160

62.

mit.

was

rfe.

on him

reat

he

nich

old

In-

inds

rade

uth,

on-

had

and

g at

ors.

and,

ally

ons

Tors

any

aife

any

(to

ers,

ent,

y it

ing-

reis

and

heir

em

her-

uire

the

the English at all Times to carry friendly to-

In Witness whereof the said Philip the Sachem hath set to his Hand, as also his Uncle, and sundry other of his chief Men witnessed it.

Witness John Saulaman The Mark a of Philip
The Mark of Francis alias Metacom.
the Saoben of Nauser, Walland Saulas Metacom.

e all orch with their Parents, and are personal-

a great Earthquake in New-England about the Close of the Evening, and on the 28th of the fame Month there was another about Nine in the Morning, but neither of them did any confiderable Damage.

GREAT Debates arose about this Time among the New-England Ministers concerning the Right of the Grandchildren of Church Members to the Sacrament of Baptism, whose immediate Parents had not entred into the Communion: The Importance of this Debate arose from hence, Because the Ministers baptized none but the Children of those of their Communion; so that if either thro' Fear, or any other Motive, they did not become actual Church Members, when they were of Age, none of their Posterity could be admitted to Baptism: And this was become a very common Cale, fince the Grand-children of the first Planters began to rife up in the World. The Dispute began in the Colony of Connecticut, but quickly spread thro' the whole Province. The Magistrates hereupon at their General Court the last Summer publish'd an Order and Request, for convening a Synod of the Elders and Messengers of all the Churches in the Massachuset Colony at Boston in the present Spring. When they were met together the General Court proposed this Question among others to be debated by them.

Vol. I. Aa

### 354 The HIBTORY of JAM 1662.

of Whomers the Subject tof Baptifu ? oris . The Answer which the Synod agreed upon was this

Bo

for

cal

we ble

wit

on

on

CIN

noc

ent

tim

fet-

line

white

· Wa

and

but

a M

of i

Cen

fobe

mili

they

fort

and Hoel'

very

pend

With

took

Tho

Bene

felve

nith'

Engli

exerc

Law

of

" First THAT all Mendbers of a particular " vilible Church are the Subjects of Baprim, and their Infant Seed, i. c. Children in Minority,

of whose next Parents one on both are in Covenant. "Secondly, THE Infant Seed of Confederate

" visible Believers are Monbets of whe fame " Church with their Parents, and are personal-

My under the Watcher Diftipline and Government of it, when grown sup, though they are

not to the admitted ato full Communion our

11 less they understande the Doctrine of Earth,

and publickly profess their Affant to it inter of " a fober Life, and folemnly own the Comenant

46 beforen their Church, awherein they Agine up

themfelves and their Children to the Lord, and

fubject themselves to the Government of Christ in his Church, and then their Children may

had not entred into the Communicipasitined ad 14

5 5 Thirdly Sucar Church Membersh Acrobap-

tized Perfons) who dithen by Deather of fome " other extraordinary Pobvidence, have been in-

evirably hindred from publickly acting as afore-

56 faid and yet have given the Church Caufe, in

" Judgment of Charity, Ito dook upon them as 11 lo qualified; their Children are to be baptized.

the Grand-children of the first Planters began to THESE were the Sentiments of the Majority of the Synod, but feweral learned Men entred their Protest, as Mr. Charles Chauncy, President of the College and Miranfoon Danenport, who writ against the Synod: Nor could the Churches of New-England agree in their Practice, fome being for receiving shein Determinations, and others for rejecting them, there were great Divisions and Contentions in the Church of

> VOL. L. \* Mather, B. V. p. 64.

notos debated by them.

òn

ar

 $\mathbf{n}\mathbf{d}$ 

y,

at.

ate

ne

al-

rn-

arc

in-

NO

ant

up

rist

nay

ed

ap-

me

in-

ore-

in as

ed.

ori-

tred

lent

who

ches

ome

and

reat

ot

ofton

Bofton upon this Head. The major Part was for the Synod, and proceeded to pais Ecclefialtical Censures upon several of the adult Children of their Communicants for Scandals, tho' they were hor of the Communion; but a confiderable Number of the Brethren were diffatisfy'd with their Proceedings. However, Things went on pretty quietly while Mr. Wilfon lived; but upon his Death, the Majority of the Church inviting Mr. Devenport who had writ against the Synod, to fueceed him, Thirty of the Brethren enered their Protest against it, and after some time withdrew from the Communion, and fer up another Church in the Town, which has lines proved one of the most flourishing of the whole Country! Almost all the Churches of New England were divided upon this Article; and I must confess, for my own part, that it looks but like an odd Affertion to me, to call a Person a Member of a Church, who has no Right to any of its Privileges, and yet remains exposed to its Centures: But 'tis now agreed, that Persons of a fober Life and Convertation, profesting their Verious Belief of the Christian Faith, and promiling to walk according to the Rules of it; tho they are hot fully fatisfied in their Qualifications for the Lord's Table, may be baptiz'd themselves and their Children.

Very high against the Presbyterians and Independents; the Bishops would come to no Terms with them, but by an Act of Uniformity, which took Place on St. Bartbolomew's Day. About two Thousand Ministers were turned out of their Benefices without the least Provision for themselves or Families: They were afterwards banished Five Miles out of every Corporation in England, and several at last died in Prison, for exercising their Ministry in private contrary to Law; but some of them being willing to get

A 2 . 2

out

356 The HISTORY of [An. 1662. out of the Storm, removed to New England: Among these the most considerable were.

ichel diebe anti-	o leaver impair teveral of
1. The Rev. M	r. James Allen settled at Boston.
2:	- John Baily at Water-Town.
3. And Dien N	Barnet at New-London.
A Equil'S	
5.0 - 5-91	- Thomas Gilbert at Topsfield.
6. 1 - w/3 - w	- Thomas Baily at Water Town.
	- James Keith at Bridgewater.
Zela finite gar in we	
8-16-31-1-11	Samuel Lee at Briftol.
9.	- Charles Morton at Charles Town.
10. noimenunce	- Charles Nicolet at Salem.
	John Oxenbridge at Boston.
Holnwin aword of	
12% gaille boil in	Thomas Thornton at Yarmouth.
13, (919) 3 901 10	Thomas Walley at Barnstable.
14 West Comment	William Woodrop at Lancaster.
United they was transported to the second se	CENTRAL STREET STORY OF STORY CONTRACTOR STREET

and I mail confels, sevente over corrections Who all spent the Remainder of their Lives in the Country, except one or two, who came back again at the Revolution whos promising an lo

5

300

W z might add to these the Learned Dr. John Owen, who had been Dean of Christ-Church, and Vice-Chancellor of the University of Oxford, under the Protectorship of Gromwell. He was univerfally respected as a Gentleman, a Scholar, and a Divine, and was better versed in Oriental and Jewish Learning than most of his Age; after the Bartholomew All took Place, whereby he was filenced with the rest of his Brethren, he was invited to the Chair of Professor of Divinity in one of the Universities of Holland, but refused it: He was afterwards invited to be President of Harvard-College in New-England, and was shipping his Effects for that Country, when he was forbid to leave the Kingdom, by express Orders from King Charles himself.

for Co he ftra kn anc mi nen the the Was hear con to h her, a fo had was exec for t clare

left t SI quak withi 26, 2 fterna

Dama

this

Ack

Conf

rathe

ON veren Boston Count faire,

Witcher

Calamy's Abridgement, Vol. II. p. 53.

ONE Mrs. Greensmith was executed this Year for Acts of Witchcraft upon the Body of Anne Cole, a virtuous young Woman, who lived with her Father at Heriford, and was taken with strange Fits, in which she express'd Things unknown to herfelf at another Time, as, that fuch and fuch Persons were consulting how to carry on mischievous Designs against her, &c. several Eminent Ministers wrote her Speeches, and one of the Persons accused being this Greensmith, who was then in Prilon on Sulpicion of Witchcraft, she was brought before the Magistrates, and having heard the Ministers Allegations against her, she confessed her Guilt; that the Devil had appear'd to her first in the Shape of a Deer skipping about her, that she had talked with him, tho' not made a formal Covenant with him, and that the Devil had had carnal Knowledge of her, for which she was executed . Six or feven Persons had been executed, at several Times in this Country before, for the Crime of Whitchcraft, most of whom declared their Innocence with their last Breath, but this Greensmith went out of the World with an Acknowledgment of her Guilt, Whether her Confession has the Appearance of Truth, or was rather the Effect of a disturbed Mind, must be left to the Judgment of the Reader §.

Six or feven violent Shocks of an Earthquake were felt this Year in New England 1663. within the Space of three Days, on January 26, 27, and 28, which spread an universal Consternation among the People; but no considerable

Damage enfued.

2.

1:

M.

m.

n.

.

m.

Ž.

ib.

.

er.

in

ck

Dr.

ft-

ell.

an, sed

of

ce,

his

ro-

of

In-

-שי

hat

ng-

rles

NE

On the 5th of April this Year died the Reverend Mr. John Narton, one of the Ministers of Boston, and one of the most learned Men of the Country. He was born at Storford in Hertfordshire, May 6, 1606, and educated at Peter-House; A a 3

Mather Book VI. p. 67. S Hale's Modest Enquiry after Witeberast, p. 19. 20.

The HISTORY of An. 1663. 358 but his Father falling to Decay before he had finished his Studies, he was obliged to leave the University after he had taken his first Degree, and become Usher of the School, and Curate of the Church of Storford. He was an admired Preacher, but being a Puritan, no Preferment in the Church could be obtained for him, whereupon he resolved to remove to New-England: he came over in the Year 1634, and settled at Insurable but upon the Death of Mr. Cotton in the Year 1652, he was called to Boston, and there spent the Remainder of his Life: He was undoubtedly a very good Scholar, as well as a great Divine, as appears by the Works he has published both in Latin and English. The Magistrates of Boston, had such an Opinion of his Abilities, that they joined him in Commission with Simon Bradstreet, Efg; to manage their Concerns at the Court of England after the Restoration of King Charles; but upon his Return he grew melancholy and dis-contented, and at last died of a Fit of an Apoplexy, as he was preparing to preach his weekly Lecture. He was certainly a Man of warm. Passions, and of a cholerick Temper: he was at the Head of all the Hardships the Quakers suffered, which made them in their Representation to the King, wherein they infert certain remarkable Judgments of God upon their Perfecutors, relate this among others. John Norton chief Priest in Boston, by the immediate Power of the Lord was smitten, and as he was sinking down by the Fire-fide, being under just Judgment, he confessed the Hand of the Lord was upon him, and so he died." Tho' this Reflection of the Quakers is very unjust, it being impossible for us. to distinguish between a natural and judicial Death, yet I heartily with that neither he nor any Body elle by their unchristian Severities had given them Occasion to make it. SOON

15 Hale's Modiff Enquiry after

Au his 1600 a P and feve and Rebi And Strain

54

regularitable died the 6

that

of a ferrification of them obtain Favor King other

other his R choic lived,

Mi. I.

Worderste, p. 19. 19.

### AddINEWAENGE UND. 3593

F

3,

of

II II

ie ba

15

23

In

222

y

t, of

ţ-

0-

ly.

m.

at

r-

to.

le

te

st.

d

y.

1e

3,

16

15.

A

y

n

N

Soon after him ded the Reverend Mr. Samuel Newman Pafter of a Church at Rebeboth, and Author of that Concordance of the Bible that bears his Name ! He was born at Banbury in the Year 1600, educated at Oxford, and afterwards ordained a Presbyter of the Church of England, But being a Nonconformist, was forced to remove no less than feven Times to avoid the Fury of the Bishops, till at last he resolved to get out of their Reach. He came over to New-England in the Year 1638. and settled first at Weymouth, and afterwards at Rebebeth in Plymouth-Colony, where he ended his Days. He was a Person of invincible Patience and Conflancy, and went thro a great many Straits, when the Antinomian Spirit prevailed in that Colony to far as to drive away almost all the regular Winisters out of the Jurisdiction; he was a hard Student, a lively Preacher, and very charitable to the Poor out of that little he had. He died with a great deal of Joy and Transport in the 63d Year of his Age.

Tire Colonies of Comedicul and Newboven being underly great Concern forward 1664. of a Charter, without which they were

felifible they had no legal Title to their Lands, prevailed with John Wintbrop, Eles Son of the late Governour of the Massachusers, to go over to the Court of England, to folicie for such an one as might white both Colonies, and make them one Body corporate, which accordingly he obtain'd: Tis faid that he procured the King's Favour, by prefenting him with at Ring, which King Charles the First had on forme Occasion or other given to Mr. Wintbrap's Grandfather. Upon his Return to New England the United Colonies choic him annually their Governour as long as he fived, Mr. Webster Governour of Connecticut, and Mr. Lee, Governour of Newbaven religning their Charges into his Hands. There were some disafhorostein zon's Egitale Extige A America.

360 The HISTORY of [An. 1664. feeted Persons in each Colony that opposed the Union at first, but were soon satisfied and reconciled.

THE War between the English and Dutch breaking out about this Time, King Charles resolved to disposses the Dutch of their Settlements upon Hudfon's River. This Part of the Country was first discovered by Captain Hudson, an Englishman, who fold it to the Dutch about the Year 1608; but doing it without the King's Licence, it was reckon'd invalid; the English who failed from Holland to the West-Indies, and settled at Plymouth, designed to have taken Possession of those Parts, but the Commander of the Ship being a Dutchman, and bribed by some of his Countrymen, landed them further to the North. The Dutch took Possession of the Country foon after, and began a Plantation in the Year 1623, but were driven thence by Sir Samuel Argall, Governour of Virginia; they then applied to King James, who being a flothful Prince, gave them Leave to build some Corrages for the Convenience of their Ships touching there for fresh Water, in their Passage to and from Brazil: Under this Presence they built the City of New Amsterdam, in an Island called Mabanatoes, at the Mouth of Hudfor's River, and a Fort about 80 Miles up the River, which they called Orange-Fort, from whence they traded with the Indians over Land as far as Quebec. Whether the English or the Dutch had the best Title to this Part of the Country is of no great Importance now, fince it was taken from them in Time of War, and yielded up by the Peace. Tis plain however, that King Charles the Second looked upon them as Intruders, because on the 12th of March this Year, he made a Grant of the whole Country called Nova Belgia to his Brother Hands. There were fumeyall

Oldmixon's British Empire in America. Vol. I. p. 117.

Brot of Wa man bert 166, and Gov

had

bein

. 40

form the fell forme cover being Difta

main

King

Effect T Ample was for Fort, Newto the

Englif

Bυ

with Call at Different with recording of Ply

his Ma

Brother the Duke of York, who gave it the Name of New-York, and fent a Squardron of Men of War, with some Land-Forces under the Command of Sir Robert Carry to reduce it. Sir Robert arrived there in the latter End of the Year 1664, landed 2000 Men upon Mahanatoes-Illand and marched directly to New-Amsterdam. The Governour of the Town was an old Soldier that had loft his Leg in the Service of the States, but being surprized at the unexpected Attack of a formidable Enemy, he was prevailed upon by the Inhabitants to furrender. Thus this Place fell into the Hands of the English; 'twas handfomely built by the Dutch, of Brick and Stone. cover'd with red and black Tile, and the Land being high, it affords an agreeable Prospect at a Distance. Above half the Dutch Inhabitants remained, and took the Oath of Allegiance to the King, the rest had Liberty to remove with their Effects.

THIRTBEN Days after the Surrender of Amsterdam, now call'd New-York, a Detachment was sent under Colonel Nichols, to reduce Orange-Fort, which he easily accomplished, and called it New-Albany, the Duke of York's Scotch Title, and so the whole Country sell into the Hands of the

English.

4.

he.

1

cb.

es:

ne.

Z,

ut g's

ho

ed

qf

ip

of

he

n-

he

4-

en

ful

ges

ere

m

ity

ia-

ort

ed

he

1er

to

-10

in

ce.

nd

he

of his

ner

But Sir Robert Carre was not only commissioned to reduce the Dutch at Mahanatoes, but he with Col. Richard Nichols, George Cartwright, Esq; and Samuel Maverick, Esq; were commissioned to call at New-England, to hear and determine such Differences as might be amongst the Colonies, with respect to their Jurisdictions; which they accordingly did, not very much to the Satisfaction of Plymouth; they brought with them likewise his Majesty's gracious Letter to the Governour and

" Now Engined Managist p. co.

The HA & PORY of An 1664. 102 odi "an and Council of Mos Plymouth which is as for ii bo of New-Yark, and fent a Squardron of Meswel " Co War, with fome Land-Forces under the Com-To our Trulty and Well-beloved our Government " the Lert alginishing atmomply work to Kindo bine Year 1664, landed 3000 Wen upon Mahanaters illand, " the and marched directly to Narada an Hahe " Bo 3617 RUSTY and Well-beloved, we greet you well; we need not enlarge upon our Care of, and Affection to that our Plantation is we of New-Plymouth, when we give you such a Testimony and Manifestation of it, in the sending of these Gentlemen, Persons well known unto us, and deserving from us, our trusty and well-beloved Col. Richard Nichols, " by Sir Robert Carre, Knt. George Carlwright, Elq. and Samuel Maverick, Efq. our Commissioners to vilu you, and other your Plantations in those Parts of New-England, and to give us a full " and particular Information and Account of your present State and Condition, and how the same may be advanced and improved by towa any further Acts of Grace and Favour from us towards you, and that both you and all the World may know, and take Notice, that we take you into our immediate Protection, and "will no more fuffer you to be oppressed, or injured by any foreign Power, or ill Neighbours, than we would luffer our other Subjects that live upon the same Continent with us, to be as m of fo injured or oppressed. And as our Care and same er Protection will (we doubt not) be sufficient in yo with God's Bleffing to defend you from foreign Force, so our Care and Circumspection
is no less, that you may live in Peace among
yourselves, and with those our other Subjects
who have planted themselves in your Neigh-Farev anna 14 oldo k bour Colonies, with that Justice, Affection,

Di

lon

Rig

mo

oth fent cord

Add

goo Aff

Dog oner

as n

will

prefe

Eccl latio man

and.

know

ee and

<sup>·</sup> New-England Memorial, p. 73.

54. ØI-

10

W

100

Com 101

and

ou.

out

a be

out of the out of

OW by

us he we nd

irs,

hat

be

ba

ene fo-

ion

ng

cts

gh-

on,

ind

and brotherly Love, which becomes Subjects born under the same Prince, and in the same Country, and of the same Faith, and Hope in the Mercies of our Lord Jefus Christ; and to the End there may be no Contentions and Differences among you, in respect of the "Bounds and Jurisdictions of your several Colonies, the hearing and determining whereof we have referred to our Commissioners, as the Right appears by clear Evidence and Testimony before them, or that they can fettle it by your mutual Confent and Agreement otherwise, in case of Difficulties, they shall prefent the fame to us, who will determine aecording to our own Wildom and Justice. The Address you formerly made to us gave us so good Satisfaction of your Duty, Loyalty and Affection to us, that we have not the least Doubt that you will receive those Commissioners in fuch Manner as becomes you, and as may manifest your Respect and Affection towards us, from whom they are fent. They will let you know the Resolution we have to preserve all your Liberties and Privileges, both Ecclefiastical and Civil, without the least Violation, which we prefume will dispose you to manifest by all Ways in your Power, Loyalty and Affection to us, that all the World may know, that you look upon yourselves as being as much our Subjects, and living under the same Obedience under us, as if you continu'd in your natural Country. And so we bid you Farewel.

A dis now are Given at our Court at Whitehall, April the 23d, 1664. In the Sixteenth Year of our Reign. By His Majesty's special Come Voman sham Child. IT is obler-

-England Momental, & 178

Henry Benet.

add

val he.

Ch

nei land

Th

fes.

Kin

1

Life

M.

and

born

Son

of R havir

Scho

Camb

Year

Book

Time

to co

which

tion p

on hi

Fellov

he car

one of having

returne

Earl o

nuel-Co.

Mafter

he live

able Fa

In the Beginning of this Year there was 1665. a Comet visible in New England ; it appeared in the Months of November, December, January and February, and role constantly about one of the Clock in the Morning in the South-East Part of the Heavens. It was feen likewise in England, and in most other Parts of the World, at the same Time; the People looked upon it as a Sign of some approaching Judgment; but their Expectations were happily disappointed, for the Country continued in Peace and Tranquillity for feveral Years after.

On the 23d of March died Mr. John Endicott, Governour of the Jurisdiction of the Maffachusets; he arrived at Salem in the Year 1628, and had the chief Command of those that first settled there, and shared with them in all their Hardships: He continued at Salem, till the Magistrates desired him to remove to Boston for the more convenient Administration of Justice, as Governour of the Jurisdiction, to which he was frequently elected for many Years together; he was a great Enemy of the Sectaries, and was too severe in executing the Penal Laws against the Quakers and Anabaptifts during the Time of his Administration; he lived to a good old Age, and was interred at Boston with great Honour and Solemnity.

In the Month of July Capt. Davenport, Governour of the Castle in the Massachusets, was killed as he lay in his Bed, with a Clap of Thunder; he was a valiant Man, and his Death was very much lamented.

THE Summer after, there was an Acci-1666, dent of the like Kind in the Jurisdiction of ther of

Plymouth; three Persons were struck dead he pread in the Town of Marshfield, by a Flash of \* Light lance a ning, a Man, a Woman, and a Child, 'Tis observey the vable

<sup>\*</sup> New-England Memorial, p. 178.

NEW-ENGLAND. des vable concerning the Man, William Shertliffe, that he had his Wife by the Hand, and one of his Children in his Arms, when he was struck dead, and neither the Woman nor the Child hurt. New-England is a Country famous for Mischiefs done by Thunder and Lightning; rarely a Summer pafles without some remarkable Accidents of this Kind, either upon Men, Houses or Cattle.

95.

vas

ar-

er,

out

th-

rife

ld,

as

neir

the

for

ott,

ets;

had

tled

ard-

agi-

the

25

was

, he

was

ainst

e of

Age,

nour

Go-

was

hun-

was

Acci

vable

THE next Summer put a Period to the Life of the Reverend old Mr. John Wilson, 1667. M. A. Fellow of King's College, Cambridge, and first Pastor of the Church of Boston. He was born at Windfor, in the Year 1588, and was third Son of Dr. William Wilfon, Prebendary of St. Paul's. of Rochester, and of Windsor, and Rector of Cliff: having finished his Grammar-Learning at Eaton-School, he was admitted into King's College in Cambridge in the Year 1602, and after some Years was chosen Fellow; but by reading the Books of the most celebrated Puritans of those Times, he became a Nonconformist, and refused to comply with some of the Ceremonies; for which the Bishop of Lincoln at the next Visitation pronounced the Sentence of Quindenum upon him, whereby he was forced to relign his Fellowship, and leave the College. After this he came to London, and studied the Law at one of the Inns of Court for three Years, but having a strong Propensity to the Ministry, he returned to Cambridge, and by the Favour of the Earl of Northampton got Admission into Emanuel-College without Subscription, and proceeded Mafter of Arts: When he left the University, he lived first as a Chaplain in several honourable Families, but was afterwards chofen Miniion of fer of Sudbury in the County of Suffolk, where dead he preached the Gospel with universal Acceplight ance and Applause for several Years, till at last observy the Information of one Bird, Dr. Harsnet Bilhop

266 OTE HIS DOR Y & TAN. 1667. Billiop of Norwich, first suspended, and then si-Jene'd him. The Earl of War with interceded for him to the Bishop, and with great Difficulty Betained the Liberty of his Ministry again; but being in continual Danger, he resolved to get out of the Way, and therefore embarked with Fightours, in the Fleet that came to New England in the Year 163d. He fettled first at Charles Town, but soon after removed to Boston, where he spent the rest of his Life. He was an exact Preacher in his younger Days, and admired by Dr. Goodwin, Mr. Burroughs, and Mr. Bridge; but as he grew into Years, he took a greater Liberty, his Sermons being made up cheffy of Exheriations, Admonitions, and Countels to the People, without much Order or Method, but delivered with a great deal of affeeling Warmith and Fervency. He was a very Charleble Man, employing all his Estate for the Service of the Poor, and being of a fweet hatu-Pol Disposition he was universally beloved, and looked upon as the Father of the Plantation Once when the whole Town was gathered to gether to a general Muster, a Gentleman that Stood by faid to Mr. Wilson, Str., bere is a might but leves Mr. Willoh. To which he replied, Sir. 1941 sell you something as strange, there is not one o Them all but Mr. Willon todes. He was a vigo rous Opposer of the Antinomian Errors in the Synod of 1637, and favoured too much the Pro Recueions of the Quakers and Anabaptifts, by en couraging the Magistrates to put the Laws in Milai Execution against them, which was the commo ing, to Brief of the Times in which he lived. In hi down w laft Sickness he was visited by all the neighbour benear ing Ministers, who took their last Farewel oridents him with Tears, and the Elders of his ow Church coming to fee him, the venerable of Man Billiop

668.

Man

and Hoind thous SE DO

ffrai

Mila

41 31 ffre C

" bl " V " yo Afaith

4/350

helidi

and i

" ole

" Sib

SiNe

Indre

made diad 2

his A

Boston

Years 40 Hea

- B

appear

in the

Colour

at eit

togerh

67.

n sided ulty

but get

with

ame

ttled

otb

He

ays,

apps, he

nade and

or or

Poff-

very

the

natuand

ation

d to

That

niebl

m al

Sir.

one o vigo

n the

Pro

by en

nmo

Man

Mans dafter andhom Prayer, lifted up his Hands and bleffed them, blaying A. 1851 amonor like dong is it be with your the Lord paston us and he house and make just more treavenly and take " offe from the World, and make we butning Mande fidning Lights by our heavenly Dodrine Mand Example in And I befrecht the Lord with fifall my Heart to bles you and so bles his th Churches, and to bless all his Prople and to " blefs all your Ramilies, and to blefs your "Wives, and to blefs all your Children, and "your Childrens Children, and make us all "imore and more meet for our Inderitance Tand "being us all to at in his good Time." When he drew towards his End, he life on his Hands and faid, " I shall now e'er long be with my " old Friends, Dr. Preston, Dr. Gouge, Dr. " Sibs, Dr. Taylor, Dr. Amai, Mino Costoner Mr. Hi Norton and my Children and Grandehil dren in the Kingdom of God " So having made a short but most affectionate Prayers he died August the 7th, 1667, inother 90th Year of his Age, having been Paston of the Church of Bollen 37 Xears of Xears before Min Gottenis 20 Years with him 4 to Years with Mr. Norton, and t ledge of the Lord throughout aimid takes ereakich Is the beginning of March Atherevishan w

appeared a Meteor in the Heavens, to 1668. in the Form of a Spean of a bright of A Colour, formething thicker in the middle than 20 neither End in it was leen leveral Nights weether in the West about half an House with-WS I Night; it food flooping, one End point ing towards the fetting of the Sun, and moved downwards by little and little, till it descended In hi bour beneath the Horizon. This, and some other Inwel ceidents put the Magistrates upon promoting a Re-

le ol New-England Memorial, p. 18.

formation of Manners, for it was observed, that the Youth of the present Age had degenerated very much from the Strictness of their Fathers, which some imputed to a Neglect of the Determinations of the late Synod, relating to the Churches watching over the Children of Church Members; and others, to the Ministers not visiting and instructing the Families of their Hearers as they ought. The following Letter was therefore printed, and sent to every Minister in the Massachuset-Colony.

He su palm bus in marbial enabled more work but To the Elders and Ministers of every Town within and the Jurisdiction of the Massachusets in New-shart England. The Governour and Council fended was agreeting and core elections. The Governour and the council fended to the council fended

#### Reverend and Beloved in the Lord ? ....

W E find in the Examples of Holy Scripture, that Magistrates have not only excited and commanded all the People under their Government to feek the Lord God of their Fathers, and do the Law and Commandment, but

also sent forth their Levites, accompanied with other principal Men, to seach the good Know-

ledge of the Lord throughout all the Cities, which Endeavours have been crowned with the Blef-

"A t so we find, that our Brethren of the Congregational Perswasion in England, have

made a good Profession in their Book, entituled, A Declaration of their Faith and Order (p. 59. Sect. 4.) where they say, That althou

Pastors and Teachers stand especially related unto their particular Churches, yet they ought not to neglect others living within their Parochial Bounds,

but besides their constant preaching to them, they ought to enquire after their profiting by the Word,

45,

m

66

"

66

5413

.5 Ly

56

40

.. 3

Marie

M F

# St

ti fu

16 po

10 m

46 W

" do

10 41

opar

u Thai

missing

16 here

ti mot

" Gro

" mor

more more

WOL.

68. NAW-ENGLAND. 260 the Minfrusting them in, and proffing upon them (substher young or old) the great Doctrines of the Gospel rery secured personally and particularly, so far as their nich ions Webhope that fundry of you need not a Spacian these Things, but are conscientiously tchand ting " careful to do your Duty; yet foralmuch as we " have Caufe to fear, that there is too much The fent " Neglect in many Places, notwithstanding the 1130 "Laws long fince provided therein, we do there--" fore think it our Duty to emit this Deckra-"tion unto you, carneftly defiring, and in the 16 Bowels of our Lord Jefus Christ requiring thin ew-" you to be very diligent and careful to catedeth ehile and instruct all People (especially the Din "Youth) under your Charge in the found Pring 0 " "ciples of the Christian Religion, and that not 8 .... only in publick, but privately from House to rip-" House, as Blessed Poul did, or ar least three, " four, or more Families together, as Time and only " Strength may permity taking to your A Mhance nder " fuch godly and grave Persons as to you may their " feem most expedient; and also, that you labut with boor to inform yourfelf (as much as may be meet) how your Heavers do profit by the now-"Word of God, and how their Gonverlations hich " do agree therewith, and whether the Youth Blef-" are taught to read the English Tongue, taking the " all Occasions to apply fultable Exhortations " particularly unto them, for the Rebake of those have entiwhat do Evil, and the Encouragement of them rder that do well. The Trans I meet to sound out to THE effectual and constant Profecution ltbo' hereof we hope will have a Tendency to prounio ot to mote the Salvation of Souls, to suppress the unds. "Growth of Sin and Prophanenels, to beget they " more Love and Unity among the People, and Pord, more Reverence and Effects of the Ministry, and it will affiredly be to the Enlargement of Eling

Bb

MOVOL. I.

370 The HISTORY of [An. 1668.
"your Crown, and Recompense in eternal
"Glory.

Given at Boston March 10th,

Given at Boston March 10th, 1668, by the Governour and Council, and by them ordered to be printed, and fent accordingly.

n in our si stock mile rect of dandeved ?

b

I

n

in

P

B

be

u

at

01

of

ob

pe

ac

M

M

be

In

as

an

ın

bana

Terms Concern of the Magistrates for the Youth of the Country was very commendable, and with the Blessing of God prov'd effectual, not only for the restraining Vice and Immorality; but for keeping alive the dying Power of Religion among the rising Generation.

New England loft one of her most consider able Divines this Year, namely, the Reverend Mr. Jonathan Mitchel, Paster of the Church of Cambridge. He was born at Hallifax in Yorksbire, in 1624; when he was ten Years old, he had a malignant Fever, which fettled in one of his Arms, and rendred it lame to his dying Day he came over with his Father to New-England in the Year 1635, but by the Loffes that befel the Family, was diverted from his Studies for some Years, which was the true Reason of his not being entred into Hervard-College till the 21st Year of his Age; but he made fuch a quick Progress in the liberal Arts and Sciences afterwards, that he was qualified for the Pulpit within the Space of four Years, and immediately chosen Pastor of the Church of Cambridge, in the room of the Reverend Mr. Sheppard, deceased: He was certainly an incomparable Preacher, and had a very agreeable Manner, which all the Students affected to imitate; he was a Man of exemplary Holiness, and Catholick Charity and Moderation. Tho' he was a thorough Indepen-. a dant YUGY \*\*

371

the Bounds of Church-Communion, and took a great deal of Pains for this End in the Synod of 1662. Mr. Baster used to say of him, That if there was an Occumenical Council to be beld, Mr. Mitchel were worthy to be its Moderator. All the Students of the College had a great Value and Esteem for him; but it pleased God to deprive the Country of this useful Man in the midst of his Days, for he was seized with a malignant Fever, as he came out of the Pulpit in very hot Weather, which put an End to his Life, July the 9th, 1668, in the 43d Year of his Age, after he had been Pastor of the Church of Cam-

bridge 18 Years.

1

11

m

y.

he

le,

ot

13

li

er

nd

of

TE,

la

his

y-1

and

efel

for

his

the

ick

ter-

ith-

tely

the

cd:

and

Stu-

ex-

and

pen-

dant

THE Displeasure of the Government ran very high against the Anabaptists and Quakers at this Time; the Anabaptists had gathered one Church at Swanzey, and another at Boston; but the general Court was very fevere in putting the Laws in Execution against them, whereby many honest People were ruined by Fines, Imprisonment and Banishment, which was the more extraordinary, because their Brethren in England were groaning under Persecution from the Church of England at the same Time. Sad Complaints were sent over to England every Summer of the Severity of the Government against the Anabaptists, which obliged the Diffenting Ministers of London to appear at length in their Favour. A Letter was accordingly fent over to the Governour of the Malfachusets, figned by Dr. Goodwin, Dr. Owen, Mr. Nye, Mr. Caryl, and nine other Ministers, befeeching him to make Use of his Authority and Interest, for the restoring such to their Liberty as were in Prison on the Account of Religion, and that their fanguinary Laws might not be put in Execution for the future. Dr. Mather has pre-B b 2 ferved Lurned

Market Rook VII. page 28.

372 The HISTORY of [An. 1669. ferved the Substance of this excellent Letter, which I have transcribed for the Reader's Perusal.

TE hall not here undertake " in the leaft (fay they) to make any Apology for " the Persons, Opinions, and Practices of those who are centured among you; you know our fudgment and Practice to be contrary to theirs, even as yours, wherein, God affifting, we shall continue to the End; neither shall we es return any Answer to the Reasons of the Reverend Elders for the Juffification of your Proceedings, not being willing to engage in the Management of any the least Difference " with Persons whom we so much love and honour in the Lord. But the Sum of all which we shall offer to you at present is, that the the Court might apprehend that they had Grounds in general warranting their Procedure (in fuch Cases) in the Way wherein they have proceeded; yet that they have any Rule or Command rendering their fo proceeding indiffentably necessary under all Circumfrances of Times or Places, we are altogether unfatisfied: And we need not represent to all your Brethren and Companions in the Services of these latter Days in these Nations. We are fure you would not be willing to put an Advantage into the Hands of some who seek Pretences and Occasions against our Liberty, and to reinforce the former Rigour. Now we cannot deny but this hath in some Measure been done, in that it has been vogued, that Persons of our Way, Principles and Spirit, cannot bear with Diffenters from them; and as this greatly reflects upon us, fo se some of us have observed how already it has " turned

SILL O

B

upo

the

far

167

into

Mather, Book VII. page 28.

t

T

O

L

n

h

d

h

y I-

r

0

d

Š.

36

0 <u>i-</u>

T.

ie. n

es

n

lo.

19

d

turned to your own Difadvantage. --- We leave it to your Wildom to determine, whether under all these Circumstances, and fundry others of the like Nature that might be added it be not adviseable, at present, to put an End to the Sufferings and Confinements of the Persons censured, and to restore them to their former Liberty; you have the Advantage of Truth and Order, you have the Gifts and Learning of an able Ministry to manage and defend them; you have the Care and Vigilancy of a very worthy Magistracy to countenance and protect them, and to preferve the Peace. And above all, you have a bleffed Lord and Master, who has the Keys of David, who openeth, and no Man fhurteth, living for ever to take Care of his own Concernments among his Saints; and affuredly you need not be disquieted, the some Persons (thro their own Infirmity and Weakness, or thro their Ignorance, Darkness and Prejudices) should to their Diladvantage turn out of the Way in fome leffer Matters into By-paths of their own; we only make it our hearty Request to you, that you will trust God with his Truths and Ways, so far as to suspend all rigorous Proceedings in corporal Reftraints of Punishments on Persons that diffent from you, and practile the Principle of their Diffent without Danger or Disturbance to the Civil Peace " of the Place." Dated March the

25th, 1669.

Bur this excellent Letter made no Impression upon them; the Prisoners were not released, nor the Execution of the Laws suspended; nay, so far from this, that ten Years after, in the Year 1679, a general Synod being called to enquire into the Evils that provoked the Lord to bring his

B b 3

374 The HISTORY of [An. 1669.

ſ

L

P

, ti

HE

\_aı

fo

U

0 4 0

ti ti

01

al

\* DC

Lic

...

- n(

· Ur

M

tra

M

The Anabaptists in both England; were certainly in very low Repute at this Time; their Enemies did not think it worth their while to confute them with Arguments; but took a shorter Way to ruin them, by as unparallel'd a Piece of Villany as ever was heard of. A Pamphlet was published in the Year 1673, entituled, Mr. BAXTER Baptized in Blood; or, a jad History of the unparallel'd Cruelty of the Anabaptists in New-English Cruelty of the Anabaptists in New-Englished Murither of Mr. J. BAXTER, an Orthodox Minister, who was kill'd by the Anabaptists, and bis Skin most cruelly stead off from his Body. Published by his mournful Brother Benjamin Baxter, living in Fenchurch street, London. This Pamphlet was licens'd by Dr. Parker, the Arch-Bishop's Chaplain, and cried about Streets by the Hawkers. The Author represents his Brother, as worsting the Anabaptists in a publick Disputation at Boston; for which, by Way of Revenge, they sent sout Russians in Vizors to his House a little Way out of Town, who after

ſę

ıc.

to al

g

10

1-

U

oe

ry

ly

Ç\$

te

у 6-

R J-

nd

2

y.

is

1-

y

0-

k

of

O

er

they had bound his Wife and three Children, first whipp'd, and then flea'd him alive: The Author concludes, I have publish'd this Narrative, in perpetuen rei memorian, that the World may see the Spirit and Temper of those Men, and that it may stand as an eternal Memorial of their Cruelty and Hatred to all Orthodox Ministers,

WHEN the Anabaptists came to examine into this Story, they found it a pure Piece of Forgery, contrived on Purpose to set the Mob upon them; there was no fuch Person to be found as Benjamin. Baxter of Fenchurch-freet; nor was there any fuch Man as Josiah Baxter of New-England. Paffengers who came over in the first Ships after the Date of the Fact, made Oath before the Lord Mayor, that they never heard of the Fact, tho' they were at Boston 22 Days after it was faid to be committed: The Publishers of it were one Savil and Seymour, who impos'd upon Dr. Parker by forged Letters, as himself own'd by a publick Advertisement under his Hand; nay, the King and Council, after an Examination of the whole Affair, did them so much Justice, as to declare in the Gazette, that the whole Story was falle and fictitious : But to fuch Extravagancies do Men fometimes proceed, who will support their Cause by other Methods than the Gospel prescribes.

The Quakers likewise made heavy Complaints about this Time of the Sufferings of their Friends in New-England, tho' it is certain that none of the Penal Laws had been put in Execution against them since the King's Letter in 1661, except that which relates to Vagabonds; nor can I find any Examples of those that suffer'd under that Character, except a few itinerant Men and Women, who made it their Business to travel thro' the Country, and alarm the Peoples Minds with Predictions of approaching Judgments on the Province. But the Quakers in Eng-

Bb 4

### 376 36 HISTORY of JAN 1669.

4 fo 4 m

" C

c th

" ch

4 dr

4 Ba

n W

u Pr

day

" the

" thy

Le Le

tain for the

line Wo

Ler

any

mak

that

the high

recei

Body

land were to vain, as to expect Relief for their Friends from a Court and Parliament, who were professing them at the same Time, becomes on with all others that differed from the Established Church of England, with the utmost Severities. They therefore drew up the Cale of their Friends, under the Tritle of

A Short Summary of some of the Sufferings of the People of God, called QUAKERS, in New England, both former and latter, as represented in a Broadfide to the King and Parliament, in the Year 1669.

Wherein after they had in the most moving Language revived the Memory of the Hardships their Priends had suffered, not only from the Government, but from the Under-Officers and Goalers under the Protestorship of Officers and well, they go on in the same Strain thus.

A ND now, O King, fince the very

'Day the Lord brought thee into

this Land again, and gave unto thee thy Regal Power, have they in thy Name made

ftrange and cruel Havock of thy true Subjects,
in putting to Death, and banishing; and in

thy Name with many torturing Whippings of

Old and Young at Posts, and at Wheels of
great Guns, and at Care Tails, dragging the

naked Rodies of Parents and Children thro

divers long Towns, thro the Dire and Filth of
their Channels and Cart-Ways; and in thy

Name commanding one Friend and Brother

to help imprison the other; yea, in thy Name

they have lately press of the Son to help to

force his tender Father and Mother to Goal,

fundry Miles in the Extremity of Winter Sea
fon.

## DONE W-ENGLUND. 377

re on ed

3,

15

1

•

7

of fone to the Hazard of their Lives; and fuch as refused to obey their unnatural and abominable Commands, they have fined at their Courts and thus from Court to Court do " these Monsters of Men, in thy Name, fine " and break open the Honfes of the Quakers and rob them of their Goods, and take away " that they should cat in, and that they should " drink in sydas the very Cloaths from their " Backs in the Winter, and the Bed they should " lie on, while they keep the Body fundry Miles off in Prilon, driving Hulbands and Wives divers Miles to Prison, in Times of great Frost and Snow, keeping them close " Prisoners in a very cold Room, to the endangering of their Lives, and to the Ruin of their Families, had not the Lord preferved them. All this, and much more, too tedious to mention at this Time, have they done to " the Servants of the Lord in New-England, in " thy Name, faying, that their ownest their Doings and eftermeft their Laws as thy Laws ; and these bard Things have the Serv wants of the Lord patiently fuffered, and fuftained at their Hands for no other Cause, but for their faithful Obedience to the Spirit of the Lord in their Hearts, which Spirit of Holines teacheth them, that forced Worthips and Worshippers are both an Abomination to the Lord. Thefe few Lines are written not from any Defire of the least Revenge from thy Hand upon them, but that thou mayest know it, and make known thy Diflike of their Wickedness, that to the Blood of the Innocent there, if possible, might not be laid to your Charge in the terrible Day of the Lord, in which both high and low must come to Judgment, and receive according to their Deeds done in the Body, in which Day she Lord will make « known

768 . TO HISTORY - OF TAN. 1669.

known in the Sight of all his Enemies, his mighty Power for the faving of his beloved of Ones, and for the delivering and helping of them, who had no Helper in the Earth.

ONE would be apt to think from this Declara: tion, that the Government of New England contimed ftill to hang the Quakers, or banish them upon Pain of Death, whereas no Instances of this Kind are produced: 'Tis true, the Government treated their Itinerants as Vagabonds, and whipp'd them out of the Country , but all the other Laws against them were suspended and therefore this Declaration is so far from being a plain State of the Cafe, that it appears to me, to be nothing but an actful Address to the Passions of Men, painting out the imprisoning of a Man, and whipping him at the Carr's Tail, in fuch frightful Colours as might firike the Reader's Mind with Indignation and Horror; nor do I find the King or Parliament took the leaft Notice of it, one I with

THE winveighed likewife against the Diffent. ing Ministers of London, because when they wrote to New England in Favour of the Anabapufts. they made no Mention of their Friends; but the Reason of this might be, because the Quakers did not think it worth their while to apply to them; for we find afterwards, in the Beginning of the Reign of Queen Anne, when some of the leading Quakers complained to the Diffenting Mi hiftens of London, of fome fevere Laws of a done standing against their Friends in New-England and delired their kind Interpolition to ikreen them from the Execution of them, they imme diately wrote to New-England in their Behalf The Complaint and Request of the Quakers to the Ministers was this, that me wol long dend receive according to their Deets deric la the

RAHER which Day the Lord will make

40 E

01 :2

es t

16 L

seri

SKILD

ROLO

413

.SED

46 8

66 I

se it

ato:C

Ai d

ago

io as

ghts

בופוז-

thed

ilfily

21 32

SW I

Lon

Min

Bret

100

-im-

decr neifl

se b

ces t

es it

. B

- 66 n

160 2

elgio

awond; h

fee flores the greens in the present Cale, which HERE being feveral fevere Laws made or of it by your Brethren in New-Englands in " the Massachuset Bay Province, against our Friends the People called Quakers, only for their confcientious Diffent from the National Way there, if you are for Liberty of Confcience the to those that differt from you, and are willing so our Friends in New-England should enjoy the Mike Liberty of Conscience there, as you with us do here we request you to manifest your " Sincerity herein, not only by shewing your Diflike hereof to your Brethren there, but also by your concurrent Application with us to the Oueen, that the would be favourably pleased to difallow all fuch Laws, I you soo , as as like to ?

ment and Perfusion; and we cannot that indge

endy Andrews and William Crouch,

endy Andrews and William Mackett,

- and the County of Theodore Eccleston,

had the County of John Whiting,

if the County of George Whitehead.

THE Letter which the Differting Ministers of London wrote in their Behalf to one of the chief Ministers of Boston, to be communicated to his Brethren, was as follows.

## Reverend and Dear Bretbren,

OCCASION of our giving you this Trouble ble. As for an Application to the Queen therein defired, we could by no Means count it agreeable to the Respect we have for our Brethren of New-England, had we thought it never so suitable to our more private Station and Ministerial Character; we pretend not to

9. his ed

of

23

a: on-

his ent p'd

this the

ing ing

ours gna-Par-

lent-

the akers
y to

Milong

k reen m me ehalf

to th

ERI

The HISTORY of Angelog s form a Judgment in the present Case, which I would not be just, without a full Hearing of 4 both Sides; much less would we presume to fuelidate Measures to you about it. "We cannot reasonably suppose, but you as well as we are for Liberty of Conference, as Thill as it is here oftablished and enjoyed, fince this are not formuch as charged with having the lately executed those Laws among you which the might now appear to infringe it, whatever pece-" Sincourty herein, not only by Ilmodosoms te of WE conclude, you agree with us, that the 66 Truth is not to be propagated or maintained 66 by enternal Force or Violence against Errors or Mistakes, but by the gent is Methods of Angu-" ment and Perfuafion; and we cannot but judge " it disagreeing with the Spirit and Principles of the Gospel, and an Encroachment upon the "Divine Prerogative, and the undoubted Rights of Mankind, to punish any for their conscien-" tious and peaceable Diffent from the Established Way of Religion, whilst they are not justly chargeable with any Immoralities, or what is plainly destructive of Civil Society. to so STNC T this is our real Sentiments, and we les are called upon to own it, we think our felves an obliged thus to expres it, for the avoiding that odious Imputation of denying to others what we claim ourselves. And that we may not " give any Handle or Colour for the undermiming your and our common Liberties, we would 46 alfo do whatever may be done with Christian MS Pridence to rengage the Affections of those who differ from luss and at the same Time to talkify our Abhorrence of the Popile pretended Manufallibility and French Perfecution. noiss WE cannot think the Truth to be betrayed, br any Way injured, by the avowing fuch " Principles mot ,

. (d)

44.376

1510

ec . 15

1116

4 1

"R

seites

4. 19

4 th

46 GC

\* C

46 O

de et

P4 1

as ah

66 W

es th

# C

er be

oc be

66 W

46 B

01 700

ce th

es of

ec of

" gu

te is

es to

CE OW!

RI 173

lo r

YEACY.

"Principles as fecure in the Liberty to freak for "itlelf, and which, if univerfally elpous'd, must open it a Way into all Parts and Places of the " World a shire Kenty with the land

9.

ch

of

to 25

23

25

66

ch

-19

iè-33

he

ed

PIC

U-

ge

of

he

hts

en-

ed

tly

15

we

VES

hat

hat

not

mi-

uld

ian

ofe

me

led

..

ay-

uch. ples THER PROKE upon the whole, we conceive: "that the Honour of God and the Interest of our Redeemer engage us, thus to appear for Liber-"ty of Conference , and we perfuade ourselves. "you will look upon our laying this Matter fo " freely before you, as an instance of our brother-19 Affection to you; nor is in the wide Distance of Place, or any little Difference of Sentiment " that may possibly be, which can lessen our Con-

" cern for Members of the fame mystical Body of

"Christ world out to seems A large We therefore humbly offer it to the ferious Confideration of yourselves, and by you to vour Fellow-Labourers in the Ministry, rogesther with other Christian Brethren, what farther Afforance may be prodently and fitty given. " that in the prefent Affair you are like minded " with us, and are not to be out-done by any in the Evidence and Exercise of a truly Christian " Charity 4 and that you will rather employ your wown Interest for the procuring some such Li-. berry as is here allowed, than that others should be left to try what their Endeavours can do, which we would gladly divert them from, in Expediation of what this Lietter may produce. FINALL TO Brethren, you will not forget that the Apoltle tells us, after the mentioning of Faith, Hope and Charity; that the greatest of these is Charity, fince you are (we doubt not) "guided by that Wildom from above, which is not only pure, but peaceable, gentle, and easy " to be entreated, full of Mercy and good Fruits,

without Partiality, and without Hypocrify, &c. at transit Signed by Eleven of the Chief Dissenting lo noting Ministers of the Tonce Denominations

LYTHUY. in London.

I have now by me Dr. Increase Mather's Anfwer to this Letter, but his Son Dr. Cotton Mas ther having entered into the Mevits of the Caufe. and given a particular Reply to the feveral Grieva vances of the Quakers, I'll present the Reader with an Abstract of his Manuscript now before me. It is impossible, fays he, that there should be any fevere Laws in Force against the Quakers, on the Account of their Religion, because the Royal Charter exprelly provides, " That for ever there " fall be a Liberty of Conscience allowed in the " Worlbip of God unto all Christians, except Papists, "inhabiting, or which shall inhabit, or be resident " within the faid Province or Territory." And if the general Affembly of the Province should enact any Laws contrary to these express Words of the Charter, they must be brought over to England, and have the Royal Affent before they can be put in Execution; fo that to complain of fuch Laws, is in Effect to complain of King William and Queen Anne, for giving the Royal Affent to them. We sold alloyed of the same brus

Bur what are these severe Laws which the Quakers complain of? Why, the first is that which requires all Sorts of Perfons of a proper Age, Quality, and Condition to attend the military Exercifes on four Training Days in a Year, as also to be furnished with Arms and Ammunition fit for Service, on the Penalty of a moderate Fine therein expressed. Now the Government do not infift upon the Quakers personal Appearance, but upon their paying the Fine, in case of Default, as many other Gentlemen and Inhabitants of the Country choose to do, but the Quakers will do neither; tho' they enjoy the Protection of the Government, they will do nothing towards the Security and Defence of ir, which is the more extraordinary. fince all the World knows, that the Quakers in Pensilvania, in the Year 1692, on Occasion of a Pyracy ingonoul as

the de ber able sted che nei

.Q

Pen faul Offi the this, Pen three viole men

nan

com as the Affeli chafes Place

whic

Affei

w wats

445/36

Paracy, hired Men with Money, and Supplied them with Ammunition and Fire-Arms, to recover their Sloop from the Privateers, on Asia de de vedt

19.

T

la-

fe,

ie.

ith

ne.

ny

the

yal

ere

the

As,

lent

Ind

uld

rds

117-

can

uch

iam

t to

the

that.

Age,

xer-

to be

vice,

effed.

the

Heir

nany

intry

ner-;

nent.

and

75 IR

of a

racy

ANOTHER Branch of the Law provides. That there be military Watches kept in every Town at fuch Times, in Juch Places, and in Juch Numbers, and under such Regulations as the chief Officer in each Town shall appoint, and that all Persons able of Body, or that are of Estates (not exempt by Law) shall by themselves, or some meet Person in their Stead, attend the fame, on the Penalty therein expreffed. But the Quakers, tho' the Country was then at War with the French and Indians, would neither provide Arms and Ammunition, por Watch and Ward; they would neither march out against the Enemy, nor keep Garrison at home, nor pay the Penalty which the Law provides for Defaulters. Tis true, the Quakers pay the Taxes raifed by the General Affembly for the Maintenance of the Army, but refuse to submit to the Penalty which the Law inflicts on personal Defaulters in the Train'd-Bands, which has obliged the Officers fometimes to distrain their Goods; but the Quakers have no more Reason to complain of this, than of the Practices of their own Friends in Penfilvania, who have not only fined their Brethren, for declining to serve on Juries, but have violently taken away their Goods for Non-payment, tho they pleaded the Laws of England, which exempts Quakers from ferving on Juries .

THE other levere Law which the Quakers complain of, is that which obliges them, as well as the other Inhabitants, to pay their Proportion of Assessment for the Maintenance of the Ministers legally chafen and fettled. This Law extends only to fuch Places where the Ministers Salary is raised by Affestment; for in Boston, and some other Places, tis raised by a voluntary Contribution, and there adition at to loss died the Reverend Mr. Retland

Trumpet founding in the Wilderness, Chap. 10.

The HISTORY of [An. 1669. 284 nothing is demanded of them. But if this Law was universal, 'tis no greater a Hardship than they are under from the National Church of Eng. land and yet the Governours of New-England have fomething more to fay for themselves ; for in a confiderable Part of the Province the original Grants of the Lands were made with this Conon, that there should be certain Taxes paid out of them, as a Sort of Quit-rent, towards the Maintenance of the Established Ministry: Now the Quakers are in Possession of some of those Lands, and have raifed Estates upon them, yet they deny to pay the Quit-rent, because tis to support a Ministry they don't approve of. and inch

Now if this be a true State of the Cafe, I leave the Reader to judge, whether the Quakers had Reason to raise such a Cry of Perfecution against the New-English Government, or to prefer a Supplication to Queen Anne against them, when they enjoyed the same Privileges with the rest of their

Fellow-Subjects of that Country.

THE Inhabitants of the Town of Boston were now grown fo numerous, that the two Meeting-Houses would not hold them, and therefore in the Month of May this Year, a third Church was gathered out of the first, and the Reverend Mr. Thacher was ordained Paffor of it the 16th of February following. This Mr. Thacker was both a good Divine, and an excellent Physician, and did a great deal of Good in both Capacis ties; he was first Minister of Weymouth, and from thence removed to the New Church of Boston, among whom he fpent the rest of his Days; he died Ottober the 13th, 1678, in the 59th Year of his Age, and was fucceeded by the Reverend Mr. Willard, formetime Vice-Prefident of Harvard College smot ban and of at not

Church at Boston died the Reverend Mr. Richard

O So in ce Pr

1

H

cin exc and fev Ti

T

cul laft wh with

an He Mi Ha

Pre Bro can was

Colland nity

Act Chu gree

167 Spiri

er, able

nd

or

10-

id

he

W

le

ret

to

C

ve

ad

oft

p-

ey

eir

ert

in

ch

nd

ith

ras

an,

CIª

m

OR.

he

ear

nd

ar-

A

CW

ard

er,

Mather, Pastor of the Church at Dorchester: He was born at Lowton in Lancasbire in the Year 1596, and educated at Brazen Nofe College in Oxford; afterwards he became Minister and Schoolmaster at Toxteth Park in Lancashire; but in the Year 1634, he was suspended and silenced for Nonconformity, after he had been a Preacher there for fifteeen Years; in all which Time he never wore a Surplice. Upon this, he resolved to remove with his Family to New-England, and arrived there August 17, 1635. The next Year he settled at Dorchester, and concinued there till he died. He was a Man of an exemplary Life and Conversation, a good Scholar, and a plain, folid, practical Preacher: He writ several Treatises which were well accepted in those Times, and was generally consulted in all Difficulties relating to Church Government; but at laft, as he was attending the Synod at Boston, of which he was chosen Moderator, he was taken with a Fit of the Stone, which caufed a total Suppreffion of Urine, and in four or five Days put an End to his Life, on the 22d of April, 1669. He left behind him four Sons, all educated for the Ministry: Mr. Samuel Mather, first Fellow of Harvard College in New-England, and the first Preacher of the North Church in Boston, where his Brother and Nephew are now his Successors; he came over to England in Cromwell's Time, and was chosen one of the Chaplains in Magdalen-College, Oxon; he afterwards went over to Ireland, and was one of the Senior Fellows of Trinity College in Dublin, Upon the Uniformity Act in 1662, he left all his Preferments in the Church, and became Pastor of a Diffenting Congregation in Dublin, where he died in the Year 1671. He was a good Scholar, and a generous spirited Man. He is the Author of a very valuaable Treatise, of the Figures and Types of the Old Testament VOL. I. Cc

Testament considered and improved, published by his Brother after his Death.

of

by

CL

fu

 $\mathbf{P}\epsilon$ 

wi

m

th

42.5

fee

of

the

the

bu

the

he

tha

wh

hin

but Th

and

pro

Go

to

of .

pro

Eng

date

any Eng

Cor

4

Lo

Mr

bor

Mr. Nathaniel Mather, who succeeded his Brother in Dublin, but about the Time of the Revolution came over to England, and was chosen Paftor of a Diffenting Congregation in London, where he dy'd Anno 1697, in great Effeem among his Brethren for Learning and Piety.

Mr. Eleazar Mather of Northampton in New-England, who dy'd young, and Dr. Increase Mather, Father of Dr. Cotton Mather, Anthor of the

Eccleliaftical History of New-England

THIS Year the Revenend Mr. John Davenport, M. A. and B. D. exchanged this Life for a better : He was born at Coventry in the Year 1597, and educated at Brazen Noje College in Oxford. When he left the University, he came to London, and after some time was chosen Minister of Colemanstreet Parish within the City, where he continued till he began to be obnoxious to his Diocefap for Nonconformity, and then with the Leave of his Parishioners he refigned, and went over to Holland in the Year 1633. He preached occa-fionally to the English Church at Amsterdam for about three Years, but not liking the Country, he came back to England in Disguise, and embarked with several of his Friends and Acquaintance for New-England in the Year 1637. Having refreshed themselves at Boston, they travelled to the Western Parts of the Country, and settled at a Place which they called Newbaven: Here Mr. Davenport continued till the Year 1667, bearing his Part in all the Hardships of the new Plantation, and then removed to Boston to Incceed the Reverend Mr. Wilson, where he died of a Fit of an Apoplexy, March the 15th, 1670, in the 73d Year of his Age. He was a great Scholar, an admirable Preacher, and a Man of exemplary Piery and Virtue; he was entrusted by Dr. Proston THE STREET

in Conjunction with Dr. Sibs, with the Publication of his posthumous Works; but his Notions of Church Discipline were very rigid, as appears by his Book entitled, The Power of Congregational Chunches. He was a Millenarian, being fully perfuaded in his own Mind of the Thousand Years Personal Reign of Christ upon Earth; but notwithstanding this, or any other fingular Notions he might entertain, he was one of the greatest Men

that New-England ever enjoy'd.

4

g

ŗ.

je

4

7,

d.

y, e-

**o**t to

**a**-

or

y,

nt-

pg

to at

Ir.

pg

he of

3 d

an

Ty on

ir

THE Indians having been pretty quiet for the last seven Years, began now to enter into a Confederacy against the English; under the Protection of Philip, Brother of Alexander, late Sachem of the Wompaneags. Philip observ'd with Regret the growing Power of the English, and waited but a convenient Opportunity to break with them. It was observed about this Time, that he kept at a greater Distance from the English than usual, and treated them with Contempt; which made the Magistrates of Plymouth send for him to Taunton. Philip was in doubt what to do: but his Affairs being not yet ripe, he submitted. The Commissioners accus'd him of Persidiousness and Breach of Covenant; which he confess'd, and promised for Time to come, to be subject to the Government of Plymouth; to pay 100 l. Damages to fend five Wolves Heads ever Year, in Token of his Fealty; not to make War without Approbation of the Government; not to attack the English without first endeavouring to accommodate Differences in a peaceable Way; nor to fell any of his Lands without Approbation of the English Government: But how he perform'd this Contract, the next Chapter will declare.

HARVARD-College fultained a very great Loss this Year in the Death of the Reverend Mr. Charles Channey, the President of it: He was born in Hertfordsbire in the Year 1589, bred up

at Westminster-School, and from thence fent to Trinity-College in Cambridge, where he proceeded Batchelor of Divinity, and was chosen Greek Profesior. When he left the University, he was chosen first Minister of Marstow, and afterwards of Ware, his Ministry having been bleffed in both those Places, for the Conversion of many Souls's but refusing to read the Book of Sports, he was suspended by Bishop Laud, and silenced. Mr. Chauncey had been in the High Commission Court feveral Years before, according to Mr. Rufbworth, who in his Collections for the Year 1629, gives this Account of him. "Mr. Charles Chauncey, fays " he, Minister of Ware, using some Expressions " in his Sermon, That Idelatry was admitted into " the Church; That the Preaching of the Gospel " would be suppressed; That there is much Asbeifm. " Popery, Arminianism and Heresy crept into the " Church: And these being look'd upon to raise " a Fear among the People that some Alteration " of Religion would enfue, he was questioned in " the High Commission, and by Order of that "Court the Cause was referr'd to the Bishop of " London, being his Ordinary, who order'd him to make a Submission in Latin;" which he accordingly did, tho' afterwards he repented bitterly of it. Dr. Mather observes, that there were but few that fuffer'd more for Nonconformity than he, by Fines, by Goals, by Necessity to abscond, and at last by an Exile from his Native Country. He arrived at New-England a few Days before the great Earthquake, which happen'd January the 1st, 1638, and fettled at Scituate in Plymouth Colony, where he continued twelve Years, but the Episcopal Power being destroy'd in England, and his People of Ware inviting him to return home, he was come as far as Boston in his Way to England, when the Curstors of Harvard-College, being ve-

IV

de

fta

at

fpe

the

Sc

of

me

CI

fho

Te

out

lik

nat

enc

it a

to

ties

hin

ror

on

16

a l

too

2d

of ·

Co.

dra

giv

Ete

Ma

He

beh

in l

on Lord Lodge asolt and on severa

S

1,

S

15

to

el

7.

be se

n

in

at

of

m

he

r-

re

an

d,

y.

he

he o-

he

nd

re,

id,

re-

ry

ry unwilling the Country should lose so valuable a Person, pres'd his Acceptance of the Presidentship of the College, in the room of Mr. Dunstar, removed for Antipædobaptism. Mr. Chauncey at length yielded to their Importunities, and fpent the rest of his Days in the Education of the Youth of the Country. He was an excellent Scholar, and an hard Student, even in his Old Age. It was his constant Custom to rife at Four of the Clock in the Morning, Winter and Summer, and having spent about an Hour in his Closet, he visited the College Hall, and after a short Prayer expounded a Chapter of the Old Testament, which one of the Students construed out of the Hebrew, and in the Evening he did the like with one out of the New-Testament. His natural Temper was hafty and passionate, but he endeavoured by Watching and Prayer to correct it as much as possible. He continued his Labours to the very last, even when his Years and Infirmia ties required a Recess, When his Friends desired him to spare himself, he replied with the Emperor, Oportet Imperatorem fantem mori. But at last, on the Day of Commencement, in the Year 1671, finding himself almost worn out, he made a Farewel Oration to the College, wherein he took a folemn Leave of his Friends, and on the 2d of Frbruary following he died, in the 82d Year of his Age, after he had been President of the College almost seventeen Years. When he was drawing towards his End, Mr. Urian Oakes, who had been praying by his Bedfide, defired him to give some Sign of his Assurance of entring into Eternal Glory; upon which the speechless old Man lifted up both his Hands as high towards Heaven as he could, and so expired. He left behind him fix Sons, all bred up to the Ministry in Harvard-College, the Eldest of which was the Reverend sell, monguo mi som Slody.

Reverend Mr. Isaac Chauncey, M. D. and late Pastor of a Congregational Church in London,

Toward the latter End of this Year died Mr. Richard Bellingbam, Governor of the Massachufet Colony: He was bred a Lawyer, and was a Gentleman of severe Principles against the Anabaptifts and Quakers, but of uncorrupted Integrity, being noted for his perpetual Hatred of a Bribe. He lived till he was above Eighty Years of Age, and was succeeded in his Govern-

ment by Mr. John Leverett.

Upon the Death of Mr. Chauncey the Curators chose Dr. Leonard Hear President. This Gentleman after his Education in Harvard-College travelled into England, and commenced Doctor of Phylick in the University of Cambridge; but being invited to be Pastor of the South Church in Boston, he returned to New-England with a Defign to fettle with them ; but Mr. Chauncey dying just after his Arrival, Dr. Hear was thought the fittest Person to succeed him in the College, which he accordingly did, and gave up his Pretentions to the Church at Boston: But the the Doctor was an excellent Scholar, and a good Christian, he wanted the Art of Government, which made the Students fo uneafy under him, as at last to desert the College in a Body. Their Complaints being laid before some considerable Persons in the Neighbourhood, they gave their Opinions in favour of the Students, and the Prefident fell under their Displeasure so far as to be obliged to resign his Place in the Year 1675; the Grief of which threw him into a Consumption, and in fix Months put an End to his Life.

In this Time the Number of Students was fo confiderably encreased, that it was judged necessary to enlarge the College, the present Buildings not being sufficient to receive them, and Contribution was accordingly made throughout the

whole

and

VIEL

ons

Aa

16/

to 1

de

tos

who

Shi

and

into

Pro

We

abo

Ma

ford

den

mad

at .

Ha

the

to

ma

the

har

For

who

Ib

whole Colony for this Work, which in the whole amounted to 1895 l. 2 s. 9 d. Eight Hundred of hich was gather'd out of Boston. With this Money, and a few other Affiffances, a new College was built, bearing still the Name of the old one, that the old one is now quite demolish'd week Covered of Present Colbycifes bas

On this Occasion the General Court for Elections held at Bolton, October 8th, 1672, pass'd a new Act for confirming the College Charter, granted 1650, and for encouraging Giffs and Donations to it; a Copy of which I have inferred in the for S Life, but confantly alter his Deathibliogone

d A as

1-

of

y

1

3

|-

- THERE was a remarkable Execution this Summer at Boston of some English Pirates belonging to a Veffel bound from the Streights to London . who having entred into a Confpiracy to feize the Ship, took occasion to quarrel with the Master and some of his Officers, and turn'd them out into the Long-Boat with a small Quantity of Provisions, about an hundred Leagues to the Westward of the Spanish Coast, and then tack'd about with the Ship for New-England. Master and his Company in the Long-Boat were forc'd to drive before the Wind, and the Providence of God fo order'd it, that they likewife made the New-England Shore, and arrived all fafe at Boston, except one Man, who died of the Hardships that he suffer'd in the Way. Both the Master and his Ship's Crew were surprized to fee each others Faces again; but the former making his Application to the Government, got them arrelled, and the Ringleaders of them hang'd. The Chief of these Pirates was one Forest, who, tho' a brave and stout Man, yet, when he came to die, utter'd these Words: I have been among drawn Swords, flying Bullets and roaring

## 392 . The HISTORY, Ba [An. 1673.

rearing Cannons, maning to all which I knew not what Fear meant; but now I have dreadful Apprehenfions of the dreadful Wrath of God in the other World which I am going into; my Soul within me is a made at its

In the Spring of this Year died Mr. Themas Prince, Governor of Plymouth Colony: He was the greatest Patron of Learning that the Colony ever had, and took a great deal of Pains to procure Revenues for the setting up Grammar-Schools in all Parts of the Country: He was sometimes chosen Governor during Mr. Bradford's Life, but constantly after his Death, as long as he liv'd: He was a Man of uncorrupted Honesty and Integrity, greatly beloved by his Country, and universally lamented when he died, which was March the 29th, 1673, about the 73d Year of his Age.

## The End of the First VOLUME.

Stall equilibre Congage to the Locations evere

into the Long Beat with a fittell Quantity di





when the fame to die, army'd hele Works.
I have been among the que Swenth, their Bookh and

n attor

3. Manual Manual

THE FLASH OF THE LOSS with a forest the second of the second of the second From James & The Control of the Cont makethy i and the property of the Book, the larger of the Book 28 18 1 Total Commence of the same of the Colors ever his and took a great day a 129 h. print & Revenues for the national Grammas Remain it all Parts of the County He was to domest one choice Covernor during With Brand field a Life, Surveyed to 1 by after his Mails, as long we he had a ligwin a wan of an approved the tree is not recognize, a mady beloved by his Course of the property of the department of the departmen envision was Advert the right office about the rid Year of his Ago.